



# OMNI-MAGICIAN

BOOK 01

*Fire Cannon*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

**Omni-Magician**

(全能魔法师)

by

**Fire Cannon**

(离火加农炮)

# Synopsis

---

“Magic, can be activated like a computer program in this world!”  
Top hacker Ye Chui astonishingly discovered after being reborn in another world.

Mastering the programming language allows you to develop all sorts of programs and so mastering the magic language allows you to release all sorts of spells!

With his experience and intuition as the top hacker, he shall be omnipotent!

Specialist Realm? Divine Realm? Profound Realm?

These are nothing!

Water, Fire, Lightning, Wind, Earth, Spatial, Dark, Light. With all kinds of magic elements at his disposal, he is the Omni-Magician unprecedented in history!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by MadSnail @ [WuxiaNation](#)

English Translations by Mirausean, Silavin @ [Silavin Translations](#)

Edited by Icicle, Rosyprimrose, theunfetteredsalmon @ [Silavin Translations](#)

Proofread by Skoll @ [Silavin Translations](#)

Translation Edits by Neko of [Alyschu&Co](#) @ [Moon Bunny Cafe](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are

used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Prologue

---

“Tap tap tap.” The tapping sound of the keyboard resounded continuously.

It was a small rented house that was dark and dim. The cycle of day and night, as well as the flow of time were all obscured by the thick and heavy curtains that were blocking in front of the windows, preventing any light from shining in. The man that was sitting in front of his computer had long forgotten how long he had sat there.

The inside of his house was in a state of mess, takeaway boxes that were leftover, dirty clothes and soda cans were scattered all over the ground. His computer table was filled with cans and cans of coffee. As the air had remained stagnant for too long, it started to have a humid and moldy smell. Even the man himself was in a mess with ungroomed signs all over his body. His hair was dishevelled, his beard stubbly.

“Tap tap tap tap...”

“Tap tap...”

“Tap tap tap...”

Somewhere in an instant, the tapping sound of the keyboard suddenly stopped. The man’s bloodshot eyes stared at the screen, the corner of lips revealing a gratified smile.

His phone's ringtone suddenly rang out, causing him to blank out for a short while before reacting and finally finding his phone from a pile from of coffee cans. Looking at the number flashing on the screen, the man hesitated for a moment before answering the call.

"Ye Chui." A clear and attractive female voice came from the other side of the phone, "Are you still trying to stop us? Stopping the own virus that you had created yourself?"

"No..." The man, who was also Ye Chui replied while smiling, and before the woman could let off a sigh of relief, he continued, "As a matter of fact, I was just done, I have already developed a program to counter the Heaven's Hammer virus, I just need to upload it online and it would completely wipe out the Heaven's Hammer virus that had almost paralyzed the entire network for the past month."

Ye Chui's words caused the woman to panic. "Ye Chui, I warn you not to do that! I can give you money, any amount you want..."

"This is the painful consequence I had planted and I should be the one to end it." An unexplainable sense of guilt was suddenly heard in his voice, "Lin Xue, you and the power that you represent behind you had already profited from this network disaster that my virus had caused, I will not let this continue any further, which is why, it's time to end this."

"Ye Chui, I beg you, if... if the Heaven's Hammer Virus is wiped out, they will definitely kill me..."

“You deserved all of that, I’ve once trusted you so much, but you...” Ye Chui’s voice paused for a moment, was it due to disappointment or anger? He did not know, he gave a sigh, “Lin Xue, take care.”

He hung up.

The phone immediately rang again but Ye Chui did not bother to take another look at it and just threw it aside.

Ye Chui, a name that very little people knew, but those who knew this name all knew that this was the name that represented the number one in the field of hackers.

He wasn’t very old, but from the day he started hacking, he had already accomplished what many of his seniors couldn’t.

He was dubbed as the “Magician” in the Dark Web, because the virus he developed were always ever changing and filled with magical quirks. As for the best work he had created in his hacker career, it was the Heaven’s Hammer virus.

The explosiveness and harmfulness of this virus was way too powerful, that was why Ye Chui had never took it out.

However Lin Xue’s appearance changed all of this. He loved her, trusted her, and was willing to share his everything with her. During that half a year with her, Ye Chui was very happy, but in



the end Lin Xue secretly took the virus and left instead.

Three days later, a network disaster broke out around the world, a bunch of international terrorist groups made use of the Heaven's Hammer virus to rob all the big banks, corporations and even the governments around the world.

From that moment onwards, everyone was in danger. This was when Ye Chui knew Lin Xue's motive for coming close to him in the first place, she was a "thief" hired by that criminal organisation.

He was a hacker, but he had always adhered to his principles of truth and right. The disaster caused by the Heaven's Hammer virus finally made him decide to challenge his own apex.

And so, after a month of nearly no sleep and rest, he did it.

He understood that this program that countered the Heaven's Hammer virus meant that he had gone another step further in his field of hacking, surpassing his previous apex.

"It's all ending..."

Ye Chui's hand shifted towards the Enter key on the keyboard, he just needed to press it and the counter program would be uploaded to the web. In addition, it would automatically recognise the Heaven's Hammer virus and proceed with elimination, ending the network disaster that had lasted for a month.

His finger pressed down on it.

Looking at the progress bar slowly reaching one hundred percent on the screen, Ye Chui suddenly felt a wave of severe exhaustion taking over him. He swayed as he stood up from his chair, only to feel that his body was unable to keep its balance. Staggering a few steps forwards, he finally collapsed on the floor.

The ringtone of Lin Xue's call was still resounding beside his ears but an endless darkness was slowly enveloping him in front of his eyes.

He was too exhausted, perhaps, this was the end?

That's not bad, at least, he stood on the pinnacle at the end, on the field of hacking that he passionately loved.

His Heaven's Hammer virus remained uncrackable by anyone for a month, only to still end under his hands in the end, that was enough.

He already had no regrets left.

# Chapter 1 – Anthony’s Magic Cottage

---

“If you guys want to seize my family’s shop today, you must first step over my great sword!”

“Hehe, little Debbie, why bother doing this, you were the one that borrowed a large sum of money from me to help manage your father’s funeral arrangements after he had passed away from being severely ill. According to the contract, if you still can’t return your debt, you are to hand over Anthony’s Magic Cottage to me. We had clearly written it down in black and white on this piece of contract, are you going back on your words now?”

“Busca, you clearly knew that I could have paid back the money in the first place, however these few days, you illegally chased away my customers disrupting my business here, making me unable to gather enough money. Who doesn’t know you’ve already been eyeing Anthony’s Magic Cottage since long ago!”

“Hehehe, no matter what you say, the contract is right here, there’s nothing you can do even if you don’t want to hand over this Magic Cottage. Little Debbie, I would advise you not to do anything foolish.”

---

Just as he regained consciousness, Ye Chui suddenly heard this piece of conversation.

What is this and that? Could it be someone was watching a movie beside me? A scenario where a shameless bully is humiliating a

poor little girl, where has the civility even gone to?

As he opened his eyes and subconsciously wanted to sit upright, he couldn't help but cry out in pain before collapsing on the floor again. He could only feel a wave of soreness and indescribable pain throughout his entire body.

But what made Ye Chui even more surprised was... Where was this place?

He found out that he was lying in a small cottage that was filled with all kinds of strange objects, the types that brimming with a certain style... a magical aura and in the middle of this convenience store like cottage, stood two groups of people that were confronting each other.

At one side, there was three men, the leader being a short, fat man with a chubby face and huge ears. Under his red curly hair, he had a high nose and some comical looking goatee that had been left on his chin. On his body, he wore a yellow golden robe. He was probably the Busca mentioned in the conversation.

The other two men on his side were all tall and well built, their face looking fierce and malevolent. They gave a sinister smile as they wielded their long swords and slowly walked over.

And Debbie, who was confronting the three of them, was actually only a little young girl that looked not more than fifteen to sixteen years old. She had black and vibrant short hair and a petite body. However, what made Ye Chui felt inconceivable was that in her

hands, she was currently wielding a gigantic great sword that was in no way smaller than her. Looking at that sword, it must at least weigh a hundred kilograms and yet the thin wrists of the young girl could actually lift it up into the air and wield it at her eye level.....

The scene was so discordant that only those who would see it would know.

“Jeezus! What exactly is going on? Where exactly am I? Who are these people? They... look like people from the west? And the way they are dressed doesn’t look modern...” Ye Chui only felt dumbfounded, “I clearly remember being in my rented apartment, how did I get here? Could it be... I had already died at that time, and have crossed into another world?”

Being a hacker that had to deal with the web for half his lifetime, it is natural Ye Chui had read web novels before.

At this moment, a severe pain suddenly swept across his brain.

It was waves and waves of memories, the memories that came from the original owner of this body.

Ye Chui only felt dizziness for a short period of time and instantly, he understood a lot of things.

This was a magical world totally different from the world Ye Chui was originally in. It was a world that was dictated by magic,

also known as the Aigen-Dazs Continent —— This name made Ye Chui subconsciously felt a cooling sensation of summertime..... The owner of this body was called “Hammer”, an orphan that the boss of Anthony’s Magic Cottage, George Anthony had adopted, and since he was an orphan, there wasn’t really an official name.

And because Hammer displayed a talent for magic when he was little, Old George treated him as his own successor. Old George also had a daughter, which is that short hair, great sword wielding little Debbie. In Old George’s plans, he also wished that Hammer would marry Debbie as his wife in the future...

However Old George’s body wasn’t always very good, and he had just recently passed away from an illness.

To seek treatment for Old George, Hammer and Debbie had spent all their savings, but in the end, Old George still did not make it. To settle Old George’s funeral and the outstanding medical fees, Hammer and Debbie could only borrow a sum of money from Busca, the wealthiest man on street, using their magic store as a deposit.

Busca, having many businesses, also has a magic store on this big street. Even though the store was very big, their business could never be compared to Anthony’s Magic Cottage, thus he kept harassing Old George in the past as he coveted Anthony’s Magic Cottage. With such a great opportunity now, he purposely used underhand tactics in the dark to chase away the customers that were going to shop at Anthony’s Magic Cottage, causing Hammer and Debbie to have no way to raise enough money for the debt they owed Busca.

Bringing over his men to find trouble today, what Busca wanted precisely was to drive out Hammer and Debbie, taking over the Magic Cottage by force.

After they had came, Hammer tried to stop them but instead knocked his head hard on the floor as they pushed him onto the ground, his young life thus faded away —— Hammer followed the path of magic ever since he was little, thus his body was weak and fragile and lost his life just like that, letting Ye Chui occupy his body for some unknown reason, benefiting him.

“So in that case, my current identity is a Magician?”

“Going through the memories on his brain, Ye Chui was unable to express how surprised he was. Being named as the Magician Hacker in his previous life, he actually became a real magician now after reincarnating! At this moment, sounds of metals clashing resounded out. Apparently the two burly guys that Boss Busca brought had already started clashing with Debbie.

Despite having a thin and slender body, seeing Debbie easily swinging the great sword sword that weighed a hundred kilograms, Ye Chui was secretly intrigued. However, after inheriting Hammer’s memories, Ye Chui understood that this wasn’t an uncommon sight in this Aigen-Dazs Continent.

In this continent, other than magicians, there are also other professions one can choose from, such as a swordsman.

The so called swordsman could also be split into other branches. Debbie had no talent in magic perception but instead displayed an extremely good talent as a first class swordsman. Her dream was to become the strongest great swordsman in the swordsman branch.....

However Debbie was only a rank two elementary swordsman now. The two men that Boss Busca had brought were both swordsman as well. Even though they aren't the most overpowering great swordsman among the swordsman classes, but they were also rank two elementary swordsman as well. With the two of them attacking Debbie who was alone, how could Debbie fight back against them?

Looking at the great sword swinging little girl getting slowly pushed back little by little, Ye Chui, knew that at this moment, he could not stay silent any longer.



## Chapter 2 – Magic Can Be Regarded As A Program In This World

---

Ye Chui grabbed his magic wand that had fallen to the floor, leaped up, and swung his magic wand in a beautiful arc across the air. Aiming the wand at the head of one of the brutes, he shouted loudly: “Lightning!”

Basic Offensive Magic 【Lightning】.

Hammer, the owner of Ye Chui’s current body, was originally a rank two elementary magician, and could only use the simple first level spells. However, because Hammer has a docile and kind personality, he loved to use simple lifestyle spells such as 【Breeze】 【Dustless】 【Kindle】, thus being very unfamiliar in offensive magic.

As a result, when Ye Chui shouted lightning and swung his magic wand, although he thought he could use the spell 【Lightning】 according to the memories he inherited from Hammer, instead..... Aside from having a few sparks come out from the other end of the magic wand, nothing else happened.

“The f\*ck?” Ye Chui stared blankly.

Everyone in the house looked towards him with a dumbfounded expression.

A hint of gladness flashed across Debbie’s face, obviously happy knowing that Ye Chui had woken up. She then vigorously waved

her hand: “Go and hide properly Hammer, leave this to me!”

“Don’t let that brat off too, Quinn, go and get that brat!” Busca immediately shouted, “We are escorting them off according to the contract, since they are rudely resisting us, we won’t get into trouble with the law even if you kill them!”

Among the two brutes, the one named Quinn immediately walked towards Ye Chui with a sinister smile.

Upon seeing this, Debbie got shocked and immediately swung her great sword to attack Quinn and instead was stopped by the other brute. Turning pale with fright, she anxiously yelled at Ye Chui: “Hammer, hide faster, faster!”

---

However Ye Chui did not move and just looked blankly at the magic wand in his hand. Just a moment ago, he realised something very interesting.

Magic, in simpler terms, occurs when someone use their own spiritual power and magic power, to construct a magic template in his memory. A magic array could then be consolidated with the help of the magic template, which would be used through magic wands and other enchantment tools. When the magic array is constructed differently, different effects can be brought out. Afterwards, by absorbing the magic elements from nature, all sorts of magic effects could be exhibited.

For example the spell 【Lightning】, when a magician wants to use this magic, they must first construct a magic template of 【Lightning】 in their mind and instantly use magic power to activate this magic template, consolidating the magic array of the spell【Lightning】 and transferring this array onto the magic wand in their hand. The magic wand will then absorb the “lightning element” in the air to form a lightning attack.

It seemed like it was the same logic as using program codes to bring about a software.

The reason why Ye Chui could not release the spell 【Lightning】 was because Hammer himself was unfamiliar to this spell. Even though he had constructed the magic template for this spell in his mind, this template had some problems. Out of ten tries, there were at least nine times the lightning element could not be absorbed.....

In addition, Ye Chui felt an unexplainable wonder that the foundation of releasing spell, the magic template, was basically made up of thirty two magic symbols. A magician must be able to master the thirty two magic symbols to be able to construct magic templates and use them to release spells. Previously, with Hammer being a rank two magician, he had already comprehended the first five of the thirty two magic symbols. Using these five magic symbols, he was able to construct all kinds of magic templates of those simple spells. Inheriting his memories, Ye Chui also inherited the comprehension of these five magic symbols.

And in Ye Chui's eyes ——

“What is called magic, can totally been seen as a software program written using these thirty two magic symbols! Magic template is the program and releasing magic equals to activating the program! And the most important part is, the things one can do using these thirty two magic symbols are way more than what the programming language can do.....”

Programming language could come out with many capabilities, but all these capabilities still needed the computer and the web as a basis, whereas the basis for the capabilities of magic is the entire world, having limitless functions..... Magic is so much more fun than programming!

At this instant, Ye Chui suddenly got excited. In his previous life, he had been messing around with programming his entire life and eventually ended up standing at the pinnacle in the field of hacking. And in this world, magic could be treated as programs to be used!

“This world was practically prepared for me, in here I shall be omnipotent, I.....”

Just as Ye Chui was getting excited deep down, he suddenly felt his body flying up into the air —— Quinn had already grabbed hold of his collar and easily lifted Ye Chui about one foot high of the floor with his strong arm strength. Quinn’s rough and barbaric face was currently giving of a cruel sinister smile: “Hehe, Mr. Magician, seems like your magic isn’t really effective heh.”

“Crap!”

Ye Chui felt a bone-chilling cold from Quinn's body. On the other side, Debbie kept yelling loudly, trying to come over to rescue Ye Chui but was instead firmly tangled with the other swordsman, leaving Ye Chui with only himself to rely on. Powerlessly swinging his magic wand, he wanted to continuously release the spell 【Lightning】 but the other end of the wand only sent out some sparks two to three times in a row, not even a fraction of the lightning could be seen.....

Apparently Quinn had lost his patience as his other hand wielding the long sword had already been lifted up.

“Where exactly did it go wrong..... The magic template! There must be some mistake in the magic template!”

As his end drew nearer, Ye Chui could only place all his hopes on magic.

Unable to successfully use an offensive magic could only mean that there was an error in the magic template.

The magic template was a group of magic symbols assembled and engraved in the magician's memories. Engraving a magic template and imprinting it in one's memories required spiritual power, only having spiritual power could one be able to engrave the magic symbols into their own memories, therefore the spiritual power test is one of the most basic criterion for a magician.

And so Ye Chui could retrieve his magic template to take a look.

The magic template for the basic offensive magic 【Lightning】 was simple, requiring only the five basic magic symbols. Furthermore the magic template only had around ten lines. Ye Chui quickly scanned through the template he had engraved..... Because he had inherited Hammer's memories, Ye Chui had long mastered the five basic magic symbol, allowing him to completely understand the meaning of every line in this magic template!

As a top hacker, he had no difficulty in finding out the incorrect code in the program line.

Even though magic was different from the programming language he had learned, with Hammer's understanding of the five basic magic symbols and his rich experience in programming..... It can be said that he still had a natural sense for the layout of the magic template.

“Right here! This magic symbol is wrong! It will cause the lightning element to accumulate and become redundant, breaking the node that releases the lightning, thus causing this spell to be released unsuccessfully. I just have to modify this magic symbol and this magic would be completely amended!”

If a magician was to be compared to a programmer, a basic spell is just like a basic program a programmer had practiced during his basic programming course. And with the eyes of a top hacker looking at this basic spell, Ye Chui was able to quickly figure out the mistake in this program.

“Hammer!” Debbie’s heart-breaking scream caused Ye Chui to snap back.

The long sword in Quinn’s hand was already aimed at his chest. On his face plastered a cruel and sinister smile, making clear what he was going to do next.....

At this critical moment, a smile faintly appeared on Ye Chui’s face instead. With a great deal of effort, he once again aimed his magic wand at Quinn’s chest.

“Lightning.”

Zaaap ——

A bolt of white lightning burst out from the other end of the magic wand, bombarding directly onto Quinn’s chest.

Hearing only Quinn’s scream, his massive body immediately got blasted backwards, pushing over the rows of shelves with a crashing sound.

Whereas the young man wearing a black magic robe, fell to the ground lightly and gently swung his magic wand beside him. At this moment, there was only one feeling in his heart.

“Damn, that was too cool~~~”

# Chapter 3 – The Little Girl Swinging The Great Sword

---

After getting hit by Ye Chui's 【Lightning】 spell, Quinn collided with the shelves at the side with a crashing sound. The various gadgets clattered onto the floor as the shelves fell over. The long sword was also deflected away, piercing the wall at the side. Lying in the pile of wreckage, Quinn twitched continuously. The cloth armor on his chest had been burned into pieces and gave off thick smoke flirtatiously. He did not seem to suffer any lethal injuries but he definitely would not be getting up again anytime soon..

The others inside Anthony's Magic Cottage, were once again dumbfounded.

【Lightning】 was only the most basic level one magic with limited destructive power and yet Ye Chui could use this spell to blow away Quinn who was a rank two elementary swordsman..... This could only mean that Ye Chui had already reached the point where he had completely mastered the spell 【Lightning】.

It was general knowledge that only when the magic template did not have a single mistake could it unleash the spell's fullest power. However..... Ye Chui clearly couldn't even use 【Lightning】 just now!

“A fluke..... It's definitely a fluke.....” Busca suddenly reacted after staring blankly. He then pointed his finger at Ye Chui and shouted loudly: “The spell he just used was only a fluke, I've already done my investigation on him. Even though this brat is a magician, he isn't good with offensive magic. Quickly attack him



Locke, there's no way he can continue to use spells.....”

“Lightning!” Ye Chui gently swung his magic wand as he aimed it at Busca.

Zaaap ——

Ye Chui did not give any mercy as a bolt of white lightning flew directly at Busca. He had unspeakable loathe towards Busca and was determined to teach this short, fat and greedy merchant a lesson.

However when the lightning reached to the front of Busca, a white light suddenly flashed and a glass like light wall appeared in front of him. With a cracking sound, the light wall immediately shattered into pieces.

At that same moment, the crystal pendant in front of Busca's chest shattered too.

Obviously, some kind of defense mechanism had been activated, thus warding off Ye Chui's attack. However, some of the scattered lightning still managed to hit Busca, causing his curly red hair to explode. There were even a few burnt and black patches on his face. Cries of pain could also be heard coming from his mouth for quite some time.

He revealed a terrified expression: “This..... Your attack could actually shatter the ‘Crystal Guard’ charm that I spent thirty silver

coins on..... And you could also skillfully release this spell..... This..... This.....”

Ye Chui frowned as his body unnoticeably swayed slightly. Then while smiling, he shifted his line of sight from Busca and looked at the long sword wielding brute, who was currently engaging Debbie. It was now known that his name was Locke.

Coming into contact with Ye Chui’s gaze, Locke trembled and instinctively grabbed hold of his long sword with both his hands. He raised it in front of him with a face full of terror: “As a swordsman, I’m definitely not afraid of your magic.....”

“If you want to speak, stop trembling.” Ye Chui coldly laughed. Tapping Quinn who was currently lying on the floor with his magic wand, “I’ll give you a chance. Take your partner and scram from here, or else... heh!”

When Locke saw that Ye Chui did not want to fight, he was immediately elated. Ye Chui was a rank two magician while he was a rank two swordsman, even though their profession level were similar, the way a magician attacked was ever changing. Most importantly, magicians could carry out far ranged attacks. Therefore as long as they mastered a few offensive spells, they were basically invincible in the early phases among all the professions. Locke was merely a small rank two swordsman that was not afraid of Ye Chui previously because he knew Ye Chui did not master any of the offensive spells and knew only harmless lifestyle spells. However, now that he knew Ye Chui had completely mastered the spell 【Lightning】, he had no way of defending himself against the attack of this spell.

Locke looked at Ye Chui and Debbie cautiously as he helped his partner, Quinn, who was lying on the ground with his upper body numbed and limbed.

Then, he looked at Busca.

At this moment, Busca had a very comical look. With his messy hair and black patches on his face, he looked at Ye Chui and coldly declared: “I will not take this lying down. My son will be coming back from the Lord’s Manor in another three days. He is a rank four intermediate swordsman. When that time comes, I will bring him over to raze your magic cottage to the ground!”

“Do you believe I will zap you into ashes now?” Ye Chui coldly smiled at Busca as he waved the magic wand in his hand.

Busca jumped in shocked and hurriedly ran out of the shop.

Carrying Quinn, Locke quickly followed and left.

Debbie unhappily swung her great sword and wanted to chase after them: “Hammer, don’t let them go, I still haven’t use my ultimate move yet, take a look at my Giant.....”

“Wait a moment first.” Ye Chui immediately grabbed Debbie’s shoulder, “Just let it go this time.....”

“No way, your great aunt I can’t take this lying down!” Debbie said with a face of intrepid, holding up the great sword that was taller than her.

Ye Chui revealed a weak smile on his face before his body tilted and collapsed: “Offensive spells sure use up a lot of magic power.....”

In Ye Chui’s current condition, he could at most completely release two 【Lightning】 spells. After Ye Chui had finished releasing them, all of his magic power would be depleted. The reason why Ye Chui had acted pretentiously towards Busca earlier and not carry on with his attacks was exactly because he realised he had reached his limit and could lose consciousness any moment.

In normal circumstances, Ye Chui could have released the 【Lightning】 spell three times and not faint even after releasing them. However, it was the first time that he was in that body and needed to get used to it. Furthermore, although the four spells he had used initially failed to release, it still used up spiritual energy. His spiritual energy had now been completely depleted, thus causing him to lose consciousness.

Using the last of his consciousness as he fainted, Ye Chui collapsed straight into the great sword maiden Debbie without second thoughts.

Even if I faint, I must faint on the body of a young maiden.

Those were the last thoughts in his heart.

Ugh..... Too bad it's a washing board.

---

When he finally woke up, Ye Chui realised he was currently lying on a bed. His head was still swelling up but the dizziness that occurred when the spiritual energy had been depleted had vanished. Staring blankly at the wooden roof of the house, he recalled the bizarre things that had happened to him. His sudden death as a hacker and becoming a magician after reincarnating into the body of Hammer in this world, plus a great sword wielding little junior sister.....

All's would be good if this was a dream, but when Ye Chui turned his head and saw the sleeping Debbie, who was leaning on the side on the sickbed, he knew that this was not a dream and everything was real.

After he had depleted his spiritual energy and fainted, it seems like Debbie had carried him up the bed — Seeing how this young lady had swung a proper greatsword, Ye Chui had not a slightest doubt about what had happened.

Although he carefully sat up from the bed, he still woke up Debbie who was leaning forward and sleeping.

“Hammer, are you awake?” Debbie was pleasantly surprised as she rubbed her eyes. Honestly speaking, if this young lady was not carrying a great sword that was bigger than hers, she was still pretty cute and adorable.

“Yep, my spiritual energy has all recovered.” Ye Chui said while smiling.

“Are you completely fine?” Debbie continued asking with a look of concern.

Ye Chui smilingly said: “That’s right, I have completely recovered.”

“Do you need to rest a while more?” Debbie continued to ask concernedly.

“There’s no need, I have already completely recovered.” Ye Chui continued to say while thinking how much little junior sister cared for him.

Just as he felt full of bliss, he saw Debbie forcefully sucking a deep breath and continued saying with a flowery smile: “ Since you are already completely fine, what are you still lying down for? Go and make lunch now! My tummy is going to die of hunger soon.”

Ye Chui: “.....”

# Chapter 4 – Your Mission Is To Stay Alive Properly

---

“A few lines of magic symbols were engraved onto this slab of stone, forming a simple magic array, the use of this magic array is to absorb the fire element in the air to form flames..... How intriguing.”

In the kitchen, Ye Chui looked at the stove that was giving off scarlet flames as he uncontrollably sighed.

Though it's called a stove, it was actually just a stone slab placed on a platform. Engraved on the stone slab were lines of magic symbols which formed a simple magic array, that continuously absorbed the fire element in the air, just like a program.

Of course, a magic array couldn't be used by just carving it out. Magic energy was still needed to activate it.

Magic power was also another crucial factor in becoming a magician. It was a kind of mystical power. From Ye Chui's understanding, if a stone slab that was engraved with magic array was a machine, then the magic array would be the program or circuit board. And so magic power was the electricity which could activate this machine only after it was switched on.

The side of the stove was embedded with a small blue crystal. The magic energy residing in this crystal could allow the flame to burn for a good few months. By controlling the output of magic energy, the size of the flame can be controlled. Using it was just as

convenient as using an induction stove.

Magic Power was a strange energy that could appear in the body of anyone. According to different physiques, the quantity could differ as well. This power was also named differently according to the different profession —— Magicians called this energy Magic Power which was also the more commonly used term. Swordsmen called this power Sword Aura. Followers called this power the Power of Faith while the knights called it The Oath.

In this world, people also discover various types of stones, using it by extracting the magic power inside.

“This world has already come to the point where magic application is extremely common and almost all the daily appliances are driven by magic..... No wonder this is a world where magic is dominant.”

Ye Chui's line of sight shifted from the stove to the other appliances in the kitchen. The hanging light above his head was constructed by fusing some glassware with a flame magic array. At the side of the kitchen was an installation that used a wind magic array to create slight breeze, which functioned like a fan. There was even a simple food storage box which relied on an ice magic array inside of it to keep things cool, which was completely the same as a refrigerator.

And the main business of Anthony's Magic Cottage, was selling all these types of magical lifestyle appliances.



Ye Chui was surprised but felt even more excitement as when he inspected the magic arrays in these appliances, he could actually rely on his programming knowledge and infused it with the thirty two magic symbols for further comprehension — Of course, this was only limited to simple magic arrays. From Ye Chui's experience as a top hacker, he possessed some kind of godly analyzing ability that was close to intuition towards the various strings of symbols.

“Never had I thought that my hacking abilities could be used on magic.....”

Looking at the various surprising installations, Ye Chui could not help giving off a deep sigh, his face revealing yet another expression of expectation.

“According to the memories from that Hammer, the more complex spells in this world all rely on the programming of the thirty two magic symbols together. The only difference was that the magic template would be shorter for simple spells whereas the template for higher level spells would be much more complex. One of the important test to determine the rank of a magician was the level of spiritual energy, the higher the spiritual energy, the complexity of magic templates that could be constructed in one's memory would become more extreme, thereby releasing extremely powerful spells.

The 【Lightning】 spell that Ye Chui had used previously only required twelve lines of magic symbols for its magic template.

However, high level magic template was known to need over a

few thousands, even up to a billion lines of magic symbols —— Those kind of spells held extremely destructive power that could destroy the world.

Let's not talk about magic power, with so many magic symbols to be completely imprinted in one's memory, it was not something an ordinary person could accomplish. That was why magicians, who were born with super powerful spiritual energy, could handle it.

“Furthermore, these magic symbols are much more profound than the programming language I had learned in my previous life and using these magic symbols for programming can create many different types of interesting effects.....”

As Ye Chui continued to ponder quietly, his eyes started to get brighter and brighter.

He has already developed a great interest towards this world of magic.

Of course, the current predicament still required Ye Chui to raise his ability. He was only a rank two magician. The ranks of magicians could be roughly divided as elementary magician, intermediate magician and advanced magician. Elementary was from rank one to rank three, intermediate from rank four to rank six, whereas advanced was from rank seven to rank nine.

However it was not the end for a magician after reaching advanced level.

It could even be said that it was only the beginning.

At that time, magicians would have to go into their own specialist realm, delving into even more profound magic elements.....

According to hearsay, there was even a greater Divine Realm that was above the Specialized Realm.

Of course, these were not what Ye Chui needed to worry about for now.

Inside Stan City where Ye Chui was located, the high class magicians were merely just rank seven.

Even within the Matan Empire which Stan City belong to, there were merely just 8 specialist magician above rank nine.

---

As, Ye Chui used the magic stove to cook a pot of noodles, he experienced the beauty of this world of magic. After the noodles were cooked, Ye Chui went out of the kitchen to call Debbie only to find her standing in the courtyard swinging her great sword continuously. Practising move by move, she swung the great sword that was much bigger and heavier than herself.

Swinging the great sword causes people to have misconception that Debbie could just get flung off the next moment. However Debbie's tiny little body was instead as stable as a mountain, which caused people gasp in amazement.

On Aigen-Dazs Continent, people could choose between four profession which were magician, swordsman, follower and knight.

Among them, magicians required strong spiritual and magical power in order to be qualified. Therefore, because of the harsh requirements, people who were able to become magicians were extremely little despite this being a world dictated by magic. As for the other three professions, the requirement were much more relaxed, for example swordsmen only had one requirement and that was to arouse the sword aura inside their body — As stated earlier, almost everyone has this kind of power within their body which was similar to magic. However it varies according to the different physique of the person. As for Debbie, her sword aura was more inclined to strength therefore her most suitable path as a swordsman was a great swordsman.....

The reason why Debbie could easily swing the great sword that was much heavier than herself was because she had sword aura.

“Take a break Debbie, it’s time for lunch.” Ye Chui shouted.

As the little girl ended her practice with a downwards splitting move, she casually leaned her great sword against the magic water pump at side of the well in the courtyard. Wiping the sweats on her face, she walked into the kitchen and started wolfing down the huge bowl of noodles she had scooped herself.

Looking at the great sword lying beside the well, Ye Chui got curious and went over to try to see if he could pick it up.

And the result confirmed that he as a man, could not even move this thing.

In the end he resentfully gave up and consoled himself that the fight a manly man takes was wisdom, was wisdom.....

Looking at Debbie who was leaning on the table and eating her noodles inside the kitchen, Ye Chui turned around and looked at the big door on the other side of the courtyard. After reincarnating into this world, he still did not know how the outside world looked like, why not take this chance to go for a walk and have a look now?

As he thought about it, Ye Chui decided to go out of the courtyard to take a walk.

However, a human figured flashed in front of his eyes and there stood Debbie blocking his path with her slim body. She looked at Ye Chui with a strand of noodle still at the corner of her mouth: “Hammer, what are you going to do?” After saying, she sucked the strand of noodle into her mouth with a slurping sound.

“I want to go out and take a walk.....”

“No way!”

Debbie placed both her hands on her hips: “Busca is ruthless and extremely shameless. You just used magic to scare him away in the

afternoon, if he sees you outside alone he might sneakily attack you. Therefore from now on, you aren't allow to go out!"

"That can't be, why should I be scared of him when I can already use offensive spells?" Ye Chui helplessly grumbled.

"Do you think I don't know that your offensive spells fail and succeed inconsistently?" Debbie looked at Ye Chui with a face of disdain, "You were only purely lucky this afternoon, it might not work if you meet him again so it's better if you stay here, leave the matters to me. Don't worry, if he dares to come again, I will teach them a harsh lesson —— I still have an ultimate move that I have not used because I was scared of making a mess in the shop, I am definitely not scared of them if they come again!"

"Then isn't there anything I can do?" Ye Chui felt that he could be of help.

"There is." Debbie nodded her head as expected.

"What is it?" Ye Chui suddenly cheered up.

"Just stay alive properly." Debbie replied with a serious expression.

"....."

Following that, Debbie still gave a "I will take care of you" look and patted Ye Chui on the shoulder. She simply did not believe

that Ye Chui could use the spell 【Lightning】 as and when he liked.

Even though Ye Chui's current body was older than Debbie by two years, the weak physique of a magician caused Debbie to initiatively take up the role as his guardian in their daily life..... As a matter of fact, Ye Chui seems to still require this little junior sister to look after him now.

Even though magician were very powerful, their weak body was still a shortcoming, and the limited number of times that they could release their spells was a huge disadvantage.

“Alright then, I will stay alive properly these few days.....” Ye Chui could only nod his head while in his heart he was thinking, “That Busca declared that he will be coming back three days later, even though Debbie is very confident, but it's impossible to just rely on her. Should I make some preparations within these few days?”

# Chapter 5 – Enough Of Your Nonsense, Let's Fight Before We Talk

---

Three days passed in the blink of an eye.

Busca had his driver prepare his horse carriage early in the morning. Taking the carriage, he crossed two districts before arriving in the most important street in Stan City, Stardust Avenue.

The manor of the Stan City's lord lies on Stardust Avenue, therefore normal horse carriages were all prohibited from entering this street. Only carriages that belong to the nobles could have unobstructed passage here. Also, the most bustling area in the whole of Stan City was none other than Stardust Avenue. Busca ordered his driver to stop the carriage at one side of the avenue, as he tiptoed to look at all the fancy and expensive houses and various shops. Looking at all this filled his heart with envy.

“When will I, Busca, be able to own my own residence here ..... Heh, now that my son Carrey is a guard at the lord's manor and a rank four swordsman, his potential will be limitless in the future. He might even become a rank seven advanced swordsman. When that time comes, he can attain a noble title according to the law of Stan City. Managing my business here will no longer be a dream.....”

Under the early morning breeze, Busca had his sweet daydream.

After that, Busca thought of Anthony's Magic Cottage and gave a



cold hmph.

“That little shop is nothing, now my son is working in the lord’s manor and it just so happens that today is his rest day. With Debbie that little brat’s handwritten conveyancing contract, the law will be unable to do anything to us even if we bring the whole magic store down. Let me see what they can do today!”

At this moment, Busca suddenly saw a big and tall figure walking towards him from Stardust Avenue. Wearing a full bodied black iron armor that was also marked with magic veins, if that wasn’t his son Carrey then who was? This set of black iron armor was the trademark of the guards working in the lord’s manor and it also had a defensive spell carved by a magician on it. If this set of armor was put out in the market, one could forget about buying it without a few dozens silver coins. However even if one had the money, it could not be bought as it wasn’t sold anywhere.

“Carrey!” Busca beamed as he went to him.

“Father!”

Carrey was a well built twenty year old man that looked quite fierce and malicious. With a puzzled face, he walked to Busca: “Why have you came? Did something happen?”

“Get in, we’ll talk about it in the carriage.”

Busca pulled his son up the horse carriage and ordered the driver

to return and head straight towards Anthony's Magic Cottage.

On the carriage, Busca went through what had happened the past two days before telling Carrey: "Locke and Quinn those two idiots, not only were they unable to get rid of the two children, they were even injured by that trash magician. It's up to you now Carrey. Teach them a good lesson for me. Since the contract is in my hands, it's alright even if you destroy their entire shop.

"It's a piece of cake dealing with those two brats." Carrey gave a cold smirk before asking in doubt, "However, according to what I remember, wasn't that magician brat only a rank two magician. I heard that he wasn't really interested in offensive magic and only knew some lifestyle spell, how could he had injured Quinn?

"Hmph, I too only understood what happened after that, that brat must have released the offensive spells by chance at that moment. Pity my Crystal Guard charm that I bought with thirty silver coins!" Busca said while fuming.

"So that's it, this will be easy to settle." Carrey replied with a vicious face, "This matter is a piece of cake for a rank four swordsman like me. See how I am going to teach them a lesson, Father!"

---

At that exact moment, Debbie was sitting on the steps in front of the door of Anthony's Magic Cottage with a serious face.

Her cute little face had an aura of unexplainable determination. She wore a simple armor that Old George had given her as a present on her fourteenth birthday. The armor did not have a high defense and looked more like a cosplay prop to Ye Chui..... And now that Debbie is fifteen, her body had grown bigger and the armor was not as fitting, causing her body to look even slimmer when she wore it. With her great sword that was even much more bigger than her build at one side, reinforcing how unexplainably small her figure was.

The entire scene was extremely discordant in Ye Chui's eyes.

The appearance of the young lady sternly standing her ground attracted the curious stares of the passerbys that walked past the store early in the morning, causing them to crowd around.

Ye Chui frowned as he carried a bag in his hand and went beside Debbie. He was still nervous about what was going to happen today and asked Debbie softly: "Can't we think of other ways to settle this problem? For example asking the lord's manor side for help?"

"We are only a small shop, the lord's manor couldn't care less about the situation of our small shop. Furthermore....." Debbie bit her lips, "According to the law, the magic cottage should already belong to Busca, even if the lord's manor are willing to settle this matter, they would still stand on his side, unless we can destroy that contract.

Saying that, Debbie turned around and looked at Ye Chui, her eyes filled with concern: "Hammer, the wind is strong outside, get back into the house okay?"

Ye Chui: “.....”

His physique might be delicate but it couldn't be so delicate that he was unable stand up to the wind right?

Ye Chui shook his head as he stepped out of the shop. However, a gust of cold wind swept by and caused him to give a sneeze uncontrollably. Ye Chui was immediately speechless, this body of his was really delicate to the extreme.....

Looks like some working out was needed in the future.

He rubbed his nose and sat down beside the great sword maiden: “This magic cottage belongs to the two of us, both of us have to assume responsibility, let's face them together later.”

Debbie could not help but reveal an expression of warmth on her originally grim face, however suspicion immediately flashed across her eyes “Hammer, why do I feel that you are not the same as usual recently. You used to always cower behind me over everything so why are you suddenly so manly now?”

Hearing Debbie's words, Ye Chui was speechless. Deep down, he felt that it must have been quite difficult for the previous Hammer to find his manliness while staying at the side of this great sword maiden..... After some thought, he replied: “Boss have already passed away and before he left, he had entrusted me with you. As a man, I can't always let you take care of me. There are some things I must do. Don't forget Old George's entrustment, you are my

fiancee too.”

“Pfft, who wants to be your wife!” Debbie quickly retorted as her faced turned red. Following that, she suddenly saw the horse carriage that was speeding its way towards them. Raising her eyebrows and grabbing the hilt of the great sword with one hand, she lifted the great sword that weighed a few hundred pounds, “Here they come. Hammer, be careful when hiding behind me later. Don’t you worry, great swordsman is the strongest among all the swordsmen so I still have a chance even against a rank four swordsman.”

“.....” Looking at the maiden’s determined face, Ye Chui shook his head. Maybe the previous Hammer would really had hidden behind Debbie but Ye Chui was different. He was a man and a man got to do what a man got to do at times like this.

Busca’s horse carriage had already came to a halt on the street in front of the small shop.

As the carriage door opened, Carrey, who wore his black armor, jumped down. When he saw Ye Chui and Debbie who were standing their ground, he gave off a look of extreme despise and looked down on the both of them: “Isolent fools!”

“Little sister Debbie, let me ask you one last time!” Busca jumped down from his horse carriage as he declared. However because he was oversized, he accidentally stumbled and almost fell down. Holding onto the horse carriage, he straighten his body and continued: “Hand over the magic shop obediently and I can consider letting both of you off. Otherwise, heh, the blade of my

son will show no mercy.”

Swoosh——

Debbie’s tiny arms lifted up and swung the great sword, pointing the sword tip towards Carrey: “Enough of your nonsense, let’s fight before we talk!”

# Chapter 6 – The Great Sword Maiden’s Ultimate Move: Giant Spinning Top

---

“Hmph, how cocky!” Carrey immediately gave a look of despise as he looked at Debbie’s tiny figure who was currently pointing her great sword at him and wanting to fight before talking.

Busca too gave a cold laugh: “My son is different from the two idiots, Locke and Quinn. He is an intermediate swordsman and even you Debbie will not last a round against him!”

“First you’ll have to ask the great sword in my hands whether or not I can last!” Debbie heroically shouted.

The surrounding crowd finally realised what was happening at that moment. These old timers here long knew that Busca was harboring devious thoughts towards Anthony’s Magic Cottage. Looks like after Old George’s death, Busca had finally started to make his move. This time, he even brought his son over!

“Busca is simply too despicable, to actually bully a young lady like her.”

“Isn’t there another magic apprentice in Antony’s Magic Cottage?

“That hammer? I heard that the blur head only knew some magic like **[Dustless]** and **[Breeze]**, what use can that be in this situation?”

“Busca is too much, don’t tell me the people over at the lord’s manor are not going to do anything about him?”

“What can they do? I heard that Debbie had loaned five silver coins from Busca to pay for Old George’s medical and funeral fees. They even put up the magic cottage as collateral. If they couldn’t pay back on time, the magic cottage will then belong to Busca..... Hmph, a while ago, Busca even hired people to guard outside the magic cottage to chase away customers just so Debbie would be unable to pay back on time. This way magic cottage would naturally go to him. He’s simply despicable to the max!”

“With a contract, it’s also reasonable for Busca to seize the magic cottage..... I’m afraid that even the lord’s manor would have no say in this matter!”

“Damn it, if Busca seized this magic cottage, I would definitely not visit his shop even if I have to walk two districts to get my stuff!”

Even though the surrounding spectators were wagging non-stop, they were still normal residents in the end. They couldn’t help even if they want to, there was simply no way for them to interfere in this matter especially since Busca invited his rank four swordsman son over!

And it was very common to have duels between magician and swordsman. Death and injuries were inevitable. As long as there



were enough reasons for a duel, even the city lord had no right to interfere.

Among the sounds of discussions, Busca coldly gave Carrey a few words before Carrey unsheathed the long sword on his waist

A swordsman's sword can be divided into short sword, long sword, rapier, sabre, broad sword, great sword these few categories. According to the different swords one use, when one become an advanced swordsman, one will have to assume different profession branches. For example, Debbie uses a great sword. Thus she would become a great swordsman when she reaches the stage of an advanced swordsman.

Carrey uses a long sword and would thus become a long swordsman in the future.

Carrey's longsword was no ordinary item. The shiny, silver blade that was polished smooth and sharp gave off a cold threatening pressure. This sword, similar to the armor on Carrey, was also the standard issued equipments for the city lord's guards.

Carrey smiled cruelly as he pointed his long sword at Debbie: "Come on young lady, come play with me. It's still the first time I'm fighting a swordsman that uses great sword!"

"Hmph!"

Debbie gave a cold snort and charged towards Carrey, swinging

her great sword with her little tiny figure.

“Clank——”

The great sword clashed together with the long sword, shooting sparks in all directions while the clashing sound continued to ring.

Debbie's tiny figure couldn't help but stumble a few steps back.

On the other hand, the long sword that Carrey was swinging remained unaffected as he continued to strike at Debbie.

Debbie quickly used her great sword to block and yet she still could not help but retreat once again.

Carrey's long sword was extremely agile. Under the continuous slashes, Debbie could only fumble as she tried to block, leaving her no room to counter attack. She appeared to be struggling to keep up against the attacks that were beyond her ability.

The advantages of the great sword lies in the powerful inertia between its swings. The destructive power of a great swordsman's swings were the strongest however the disadvantages was that it lacked maneuverability. The attacks were strong but it was not easy to defend attacks too.

Long sword attacks were more flexible and extremely fast, making it difficult to defend effectively.

Seeing Debbie being forced back by Carrey shortly after they started crossing blades, Ye Chui couldn't help but get worried. Stretching his hands into the bag that he was carrying, he was ready to throw a few scrolls over regardless of the consequences the moment Debbie was in danger.

“Carrey, show no mercy, finish her off!” Busca shouted with his face red from excitement.

Ye Chui quickly said as well: “Debbie, if you can't handle just give up, let me go at him!”

“Rank four swordsman are very agile, your magic simply won't hit him!” In this situation, the great sword maiden still had the mood to rub salt on Ye Chui... Suddenly she moved back and landed on the steps of the magic cottage. Looking cautiously at Carrey who was continuing to attack, she told Ye Chui: “Don't you worry, I still have an ultimate move!”

“Ultimate move?” Ye Chui stared blankly, “What ultimate move?”

“The previous time Busca was here, I was scared that I destroyed the items in the shop which was why I did not use it. However we are on the street now, there's no reason for me to worry anymore.” Debbie replied with a face full of confidence. Still panting heavily, she gripped the hilt of the great sword with both her hands and took a deep breath, “Have a taste of my ultimate move, Giant Spinning Top!”

Ye Chui: “Giant..... giant what in the world?”

Puzzled, Debbie gripped onto the great sword and started to spin rapidly. At this moment, the blade of the great sword became one around her body, turning the maiden into a giant spinning top, a top that carries a razor sharp blade!

With his eyes wide open, two drops of sweat trickled down Ye Chui’s forehead: “So that’s the giant spinning top..... However, it seems to have some effect?”

Carrey whose attacks were originally at an advantage, suddenly fell apart. Trying to cut down the great sword maiden as he swung his sword at her but only a “woom” sound was heard and the long sword was immediately deflected among the spewing sparks. The surrounding crowd all retreated in shock, afraid that they might get caught up in the attacks.

As Carrey started to fall back continuously, his face which was originally carefree started to show hints of seriousness. Apparently he had no idea on how to handle Debbie’s giant spinning top move.

Looking at all of this, Ye Chui suddenly remembered that while he was engraving scrolls for the past few days, he went to take a look at Debbie’s training in the backyard during his free time. Most of the time, all he saw was Debbie swinging her great sword in circles.....

At that time, Ye Chui was still quite puzzled. Only now did he

know that Debbie had purposely done that. Using the advantages of her great sword, the principle of centrifugal force and swinging the great sword into a spinning top, the weakness of the slow movements of a great swordsman were made up for. With the great sword swinging like this, it was literally impenetrable while being able to both attack and defend at the same time. The most important fact was by making use of the centrifugal force, this move only requires minimum strength, thus being completely perfect.

“Looks like I won’t have to use my magic scrolls at this rate.....” Ye Chui couldn’t help but heave a sigh of relief. This great spinning top move by the great sword maiden was simply too despicable.

“Carrey, go on and attack quickly, quickly!” Busca who was beside the horse carriage, hurriedly shouted.

With a face of helplessness, Carrey replied: “How..... How am I supposed to attack.....”

Gritting his teeth, he fancily swung his long sword and recklessly charged forward, ready to use his speed to defeat his enemy. In an extremely short time, he stabbed three times towards Debbie.

However, only three “Clank” “Clank” “Clank” sounds rang out.

These three strikes were actually deflected off by the great sword!

What's worse was that the movement speed of the great sword maiden while in spinning top mode was unusually fast. At the instant Carrey's long sword was deflected, she had followed closely and had rushed right to the front of Carrey.

“Szzh——”

The blade of the great sword slashed onto Carrey's armor without any resistance.

The magic symbols on the armor lighted up, activating the defense abilities of the armor which helped to block most of the damage. However a magnificent blaze still unavoidably burst forth on the armor.

The great impact caused Carrey to get thrown backwards, crashing heavily onto Busca's horse carriage.

With a crashing sound, the horse carriage shattered into pieces.

The driver who was enjoying the show beside the carriage immediately jump aside with a scream whereas the horses that were harnessed to the carriage galloped away in shock.

Rank two swordsman Debbie actually used this giant spinning top move to cut down the rank four swordsman Carrey.

Debbie who was previously spinning rapidly had stopped. With her slightly red face and heavy panting, she used her great sword to support her while she unwavering stared at Carrey who was among the wreckage of the horse carriage.

“Debbie, he was only knocked down and not injured!” Ye Chui noticed something and said as he quickly rush to the front of Debbie.

“I know, have a taste of my Giant Spinning Top..... Euergh!”

Halfway through Debbie’s sentence, she supported herself with her great sword and started puking uncontrollably.

It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that even the noodles that Ye Chui had cooked yesterday afternoon had came out.....

——Anyone would become like this after spinning round and round for a few minutes.

The surrounding people: “.....”

Debbie puked for a while before wiping the corners of her mouth and continued to wield her great sword: “Take a look at how my Great Spinning Top will finish him off!”

“..... I think you should take a break.” Slightly speechless, Ye

Chui patted Debbie's shoulder, "Leave the rest to me."



# Chapter 7 – Defeat Him Even If I Have To Use Up All My Scrolls

---

“Leave it to you? How are you going to fight with him when you can’t even release your offensive magic skillfully. You should still leave..... Euergh!” After puking for a while, Debbie continued, “Just leave it to me.”

“How can I leave it to you when you are already in such a state?” Ye Chui speechlessly replied.

“It’s okay, I will get used to it after puking a few more times.” Debbie determinedly replied. She had noticed Carrey getting up from the carriage wreckage with a face full of rage. Grabbing the great sword hilt with both her hands once again, Debbie was ready to unleash her ultimate move once more.

Ye Chui quickly grabbed hold of her shoulder and pulled her behind him: “Take a break, I will handle him. You can take over if you see that I’m unable to hold him back, alright?”

“Can you really do it?” Debbie look at Ye Chui with a face full of doubt.

“Don’t worry, I’m a hundred percent sure.” In the midst of their conversation, Carrey had already rushed forward in rage. The black iron armor on his body had a deep cut at the chest area which was obviously the result of Debbie’s attack. Reaching out to touch the cut on his chest, his eyes was close to splitting apart from his anger.

Busca stood aside and worriedly asked: “Carrey, are..... are you alright?”

“I’m fine, however they..... They can forget about leaving here alive today!” The long sword in Carrey’s hands also started to tremble from his fury. This armor on his body was a certified and authorised good which could not be bought even if one wanted to. Only by becoming the city lord’s guards could one be issued with a set. In addition, over at the city lord side, they do not offer repair services. Now after one slash, the crystal insides were even revealed.....

Ye Chui felt a fatal threat and gently pushed Debbie away. Putting a hand deep into the bag he was carrying, his eyes looked at Carrey with no ounce of fear: “Your next opponent is me!”

Woah, this pose was simply too cool.....

“The result will be the same no matter who is it, I have not been so angry for quite a long time!” Carrey viciously barked as he walked forward step by step.

The surrounding crowd could also feel the suffocating aura coming out from Carrey. He was fully enraged. The crowd subconsciously felt worried for Ye Chui. Who knew how this young magician was going to fight against this raging rank four swordsman.

As they looked at Ye Chui, they saw him opened the bag in his

hands calmly and took something that was about the size of a ballpoint pen. As he pulled it open with a tch sound, he casually threw it towards Carrey.

Carrey only felt a shadow flash before his eyes and with extremely agile movements, he stretched out his hand, caught the item with a swoop and grinned: “Thinking of a sneak attack? Not so.....”

“Bang!”

What Ye Chui had thrown was a flame scroll.

At this instant, the flame scroll directly exploded and turned into a ball of flame causing Carrey’s words to turn into miserable howls. Even though the armor on his body had a very high defense and had only received a cut from Debbie’s giant spinning top, his armor did not cover his arms at all.....

The blazing flames caused by the explosion from the flame scroll instantly engulfed his palms. Only after jumping up and down and swinging his hands while continuously screaming, did Carrey finally extinguish the flames on his hands.

“Magic Scroll!” Busca shockingly exclaimed.

The surrounding crowd also gave gasp of shock as well. This was something a normal household wouldn’t be able to use and only some households would buy one of this to hide at home for the

safety of their families, protecting them when they encountered any sort of incidents. The scroll itself would have cost fifty copper coins, therefore no one would have expected Ye Chui to actually use magic scrolls to attack Carrey.

As Carrey finally extinguished the flames on his hands, one of his hands had already swelled up and been burned black. With the hands full of blisters, the sight was too horrible to endure. The anger of Carrey's face was even more indescribable as he screamed at Ye Chui: "You actually went as far as to use a magic scroll"

"Nobody said it wasn't allowed?" Seeing his scrolls could hurt Carrey, he gave a sigh of relief and replied with a smug grin.

Rewind the time back to three days ago.

"So this is a magic scroll? It seems to be quite simple to make."

In front of a workbench in Anthony's Magic Cottage, Ye Chui referred to the scroll template on the scroll manufacturing template book and carefully used a goose feather pen to inscribe lines and lines of magic symbols on the parchment. The ink that was used to write these magic symbols had undergone special treatment, being imbued with magic energy. The magic symbols that was inscribed only required a simple activation to release the formidable power of the spell—This kind of parchments were called magic scrolls.

Of course Ye Chui would not put all hopes on Debbie when Busca came crashing in rage three days later, he himself had to do

something.

After some thoughts, Ye Chui decided to place his hopes on the magic scrolls.

The essence of a magic scroll was to use the magic ink to inscribe the magic array on the scroll. At the same time, the amounts of magic symbols required to make a magic scroll with spell of similar power was much much more. For example, for Ye Chui to release the spell 【Lightning】, the magic array only requires thirty lines of magic symbols, whereas for a lightning magic scroll with similar power, over a hundred lines of magic symbols were needed to be inscribed. This process was extremely complex and easy to make mistakes. Just a mistake would render the entire parchment useless.

After the magic scrolls were finished, they were only the size of a ballpoint pen. Of course these were only the most simple rank one scrolls which were not very powerful. However in the past, Hammer would need to spend at least two hours to make a magic scroll.

The parchments used to make the magic scrolls were not cheap, even though the magic cottage gets their parchment at a wholesale price, every piece still requires five copper coins.

Therefore Old George had taught Hammer to be extremely careful and focused when inscribing magic scrolls.

However Ye Chui quickly discovered that all of these no longer

posed a problem to him. In his previous life, he could easily type in ten over thousands of characters just to compile a virus. Thus his focus had long been honed.

Not comparing Ye Chui's current spiritual and magic power, just by comparing the accuracy he had towards the sequences of the magic symbols, probably even the greatest magicians in this world could not be on par with him.

And because of his talent, inscribing a magic scroll only took him less than twenty minutes!

“I wonder how powerful is this scroll?”

Ye Chui wiped the sweat off his forehead and turned around to look at the backyard which was connected to the cottage. Great sword maiden little girl Debbie was still practicing swinging her great sword and probably would not notice his activity here. Thus Ye Chui rolled up the scroll in his hands and then pull it open with a tch sound——Within the magic symbols inside the scrolls, there was a design similar to a fuse, activating the symbols on the scroll once it was opened.

Then Ye Chui casually tossed the scroll right in the middle of the floor in the magic cottage.

This was a flame magic scroll.

Boom——

A ball of milky white flames suddenly exploded out from the scroll, scattering sparks in all direction, looking considerably powerful.

At this time, the magic cottage had naturally ceased their business, thus with the door closed, Ye Chui was not afraid that other people could see it.

Ye Chui nodded his head in satisfaction: “It seems like the power is still not bad, as expected, a flame scroll like this sure is useful to be able to sell for fifty copper coins.

In this world, the currency were measured using copper coins, silvers coins and gold coins. A hundred copper coins is equivalent to a silver coin and a hundred silver coins is equivalent to a gold coin.

Making a magic scroll only cost seven to eight copper coins and yet it could be sold for fifty copper coins, resulting in a impressive profit. However it’s a shame that not many normal household used magic scrolls, only mercenaries and adventurers would require it therefore there were not much stocks kept in Anthony’s Magic Cottage.

A magic scroll was like a portable magic spell.

“In twenty minutes I am able to make a magic scroll and making a magic scroll doesn’t consume too much spiritual energy. With sufficient materials in the magic cottage, I could probably make

quite an amount in three days time.” Ye Chui nodded his head in satisfaction. Taking another piece of new parchment, Ye Chui once again dipped the goose feather pen into the magic ink and started inscribing.

There were five types of scrolls sold in Anthony’s magic cottage. Flame magic scroll, dust magic scroll, lightning magic scroll, gale magic scroll, stream magic scroll. Ye Chui was prepared to make all of these magic scrolls so that he could use them against Busca. He did not hope that one scroll could take his life but hope that with so many scrolls made, he would be able to defeat him.



## Chapter 8 – Is He Treating The Scrolls As If They Were Bricks For Smashing?

---

Scrolls were very valuable items, especially to commoners. Even if Busca was the magnate of this street, in terms of his social status, he was still nonetheless a commoner, who was slightly more well off compared to the normal commoners.

And this was not enough for Busca or his son to casually use a magic scroll which costs fifty copper coins for battle. These items were normally used in times of emergency and in the midst of an official battle. For example, the situation now, the effectiveness of the magic scrolls were very limited. Thinking logically, there was no way magic scrolls would be used in these kinds of battle between commoners. Therefore, even after seeing Ye Chui throw a flame scroll at Carrey and had managed to burn his hands, Busca was not worried at all.

And of course, Carrey was similarly not worried.

“Let me see how many scrolls you can bring out!” Carrey swung his longsword with his other hand, “Don’t hesitate and just throw as much scrolls as you have!”

“Alright!”

Ye Chui gave a agreeable look, since you asked for it then you shall have it. He immediately took out another scroll from his bag and casually tossed it at Carrey after opening it. Without stopping, he then took out another scroll followed by another.....

In a blink of an eye, Ye Chui had already tossed five scrolls over.

Among them were two fire scrolls, two lightning scrolls and a dust scroll.

Lightning scrolls was similar to flame scrolls. After activating it, bolts of lightning would be released to attack nearby enemies and its power was equivalent to the elementary offensive spell **【Lightning】**. On the other hand, dust scrolls were used to confuse enemies by releasing a cloud of dust to hinder the enemy's sight.

There were five types of scrolls being sold in Anthony's Magic Cottage, among them, only the flame scroll and the lightning scroll possessed a strong offensive power, whereas the others belong to support type, therefore the scrolls Ye Chui had made the most was mainly the flame scroll and the lightning scroll.

Throwing these scrolls towards Carrey, the flames and lightning were released simultaneously and with the a cloud of dust hindering their line of sight, the surrounding crowd was instantly stumped. Throwing six scrolls in an instant, the cost of these six scrolls was three silver coins.....

That was three silver coins!

Carrey was already prepared thus the few scrolls did not hurt him, however he still looked quite pathetic as he dodged from the scrolls.

Looking at his son whose face was covered in dust as he made his way out from the dust cloud, Busca loudly shouted: “Carrey, the scrolls aren’t cheap, he definitely doesn’t have much more left in his hands, quickly attack him!”

Hearing his father’s words, Carrey immediately charged towards Ye Chui, gritting his teeth and he swung his sword.

With a calm expression, Ye Chui reach into his bag and grabbed another bunch of scrolls out. Using both of his hands, he continuously opened them with a tch sound and threw them forward without looking, one bunch after another.....

He could easily grab five to six scrolls in a bunch, which was equivalent to casually throwing three silver coins. Even the monthly expenses of a normal household was also not more than one or two silver coins , looking at how Ye Chui conveniently threw the scrolls, it was simply just casually throwing money away.

Even a wastrel doesn’t squander like this.....

The most important point was among the scrolls Ye Chui had casually threw out, there were clearly some that he did not even open and had dropped straight on the floor after hitting Carrey.

Is he treating the scrolls as bricks to smash him?

Is he directly trying to smash him to death with money?

The surrounding was shrouded in silence, silence because they were all stunned. They were stunned by the bare display of Ye Chui's conduct in flaunting his wealth and squandering.

And thanks to Ye Chui's attacking method of not treating money as money, Carrey actually had trouble getting near to Ye Chui for now. In this span of time, he had been burnt by the flames quite a few times, electrocuted by the lightning a few times, doused by a blast of water in the face by a stream scroll, followed by a dust scroll which caked his face in a layer of dirt. Just as he reached out to wipe his face, he stumbled as he got blasted by a gale scroll.....

Carrey could be said to have experienced many different types of large and small scale battles, but he swear he had never faced an opponent who could just casually throw dozens of scrolls.

Ye Chui threw dozens of scrolls in an instant. To be accurate, it was thirty nine scrolls——Busca who was standing at the side had been counting, thirty nine magic scrolls which cost fifty copper coins each, that's nearly twenty silver coins!

And after throwing dozens of scrolls, Ye Chui finally stopped and gasped for breath as he looked at Carrey's sorry figure.

Carrey gave another bellow to the sky and charged toward Ye Chui once again: "Now that your scrolls are finished, I'm going to murder you, brat!"

As he said that, he raised his long sword high up with one of his hand in an imposing manner, as if he was going to start a massacre.....

After that, Ye Chui just placed the bag which was on his hand down on the floor and started to grab bunches of scrolls out with both of his hands, with ten or more scrolls in each bunch. This time he didn't even bother to open the scrolls and just threw them straight at Carrey.

One bunch followed by one bunch, one bunch after another.....

At this moment, everyone was petrified. They must have thought they were dreaming.

To waste the scrolls like this, to not even activate it before throwing, is he completely treating the scrolls as bricks and most importantly..... How many scrolls are there exactly in that bag of Ye Chui's? Looking at that bulging bag..... Could it be they are all scrolls?

Even though the scrolls that were thrown at him wasn't activated, Carrey still did not dare to take it head on and instead kept jumping up and down to dodge. In a blink of an eye, at least fifty and more scrolls had been threw by Ye Chui and at this moment, he had finally stopped.

In the eyes of the many people there, all they could see was money as they looked at the floor which was covered in scrolls.

“Huff..... I guess you have no means left..... What a fool..... To just throw the scrolls over like this.....” Carrey shouted as he panted heavily, tired out from dodging the scrolls. He raised his long sword once again and prepared to attack Ye Chui.

However Ye Chui gave a smirk on his face and drew his magic wand from his waist and pointed forward as he swung in an arc: “Breeze!”

The lifestyle magic 【Breeze】 which brings a cooling breeze to people.

Once this spell had be mastered, one could cause light objects to float in the air and those that are even more skillful could use this spell to control paper dolls to dance in the air..... And the original Hammer, was the latter——Just how bored was he to be so proficient in this kind of magic? However it had brought great convenience to Ye Chui as he had completely inherited the precise control of this magic.

Under the control of Ye Chui’s spell 【Breeze】, the scrolls under Carrey’s feet suddenly opened with a tch sound, and with a “Boom!” sound, a ball of flame exploded out.

Carrey gave a yelp and he quickly jumped backwards.

All one could see was the scrolls which were originally scattered on the floor had started to slightly wiggle non stop and flew one by one from the ground towards Carrey.....

## Chapter 9 – Damn, He Had Gone All In!?

---

The original Hammer was not interested in offensive magic and only intrigued by lifestyle spells which at most could be used to fetch items or provide a cooling breeze, which was also the spell he was best at.

Previously when throwing the scrolls out casually, Ye Chui had wanted to wait for a moment to use the spell 【Breeze】 to control the scrolls and use them to attack Carrey.

This was a method of attacking which he had brilliantly thought of. The amount of offensive magic he could release was limited, but he could easily release lifestyle spells such as 【Breeze】 and 【Dustless】 as and when he wanted to and could even maintain these spells for quite a long period of time. Therefore, he decided to use the scrolls to make up for the numbers of offensive spells which he was lacking and turn these lifestyle spells into offensive spells.

Under his control, all the scrolls flew towards Carrey and were activated once they reached in front of him.

Flame, lightning, dust, stream, gale.....

Because the scrolls were remotely controlled by Ye Chui who was using his wand, he could control four to five scrolls to attack Carrey in one go. In addition, attacking at unexpected angles also caused Carrey to be unable to guard against these attacks. Try guarding against a scroll that was flying to your face and suddenly

tunnels into the crotch area of your pants?

In Ye Chui's eyes, it was as if he was playing a videogame which had motion sensors..... And in his previous life, as a top hacker, Ye Chui was also world class in gaming!

When Ye Chui had thrown the scrolls at Carrey previously, he could still rely on his sharp reactions to dodge, but now he was completely passive and swinging his sword around blindly and forcefully. Despite that, he was still getting continuously hit by the scrolls.

His hair had been completely burned away by the flames and his face was charred. With the mud on his body, the previously dazzling armor could no longer be seen.

Looking at Carrey who was continuously jumping and screaming among the scrolls explosions, the surrounding crowd had no idea how they should react anymore. It completely did not occur to them that Ye Chui would actually use this method to attack Carrey. Isn't this just plainly using money to overwhelm the opponent?

In that short period of time, Ye Chui had probably threw over a hundred scrolls in an instant. Just what was the value of over a hundred scrolls? It was fifty silver coins!

They were not shocked that Ye Chui, a rank two magician could completely overwhelm Carrey, a rank four swordsman. They were shocked by the offensive method of the wealthy wastrel Ye



Chui.....

Each and every one of the scrolls was continuously activated.

Soon, there was no more sound from Carrey who was being surrounded by the scrolls and because of the dust scroll, Carrey's surrounding was completely shrouded in dust and only a black figure could be vaguely seen standing upright.

Ye Chui controlled the scrolls and threw it at that black figure, with flames and lightnings flashing from time to time.

And that figure did not move at all, as if it was dead.

“Carrey.....” Busca had an unspeakable uneasiness on his face as he loudly shouted, but there was completely no reply.

The surrounding crowd all thought of something——

Did Carrey just get played to death by Ye Chui like this?

Bang!

The last flame scroll was set ablaze among the dust and the figure in the dust still did not have any response.

At this moment, Ye Chui was also tired and out of breath. He

kept his motionless gaze and pointed the wand in his hand at the figure in the dust, afraid to even shift one millimetre.

The surroundings were silent and only the sound of Busca calling for Carrey continuously rang in the air.

Debbie grabbed her great sword and walked over to Ye Chui with her indescribable shocked face: “Hammer, you actually used this kind of method to defeat him, how..... how.....”

Ye Chui gave her a smug grin and just as he had wanted to tell her that she did not need to praise him, Debbie continued with this: “How much did this cost!? Where did you get so many scrolls from?”

“..... I had inscribed them these few days.” Ye Chui explained.

“Impossible, only seven scrolls were left in our shop, you had inscribed a hundred scrolls in just these few days?” Debbie was filled with astonishment.

“That’s right.....” Ye Chui explained with resent, “Might be because of the imminent catastrophe, I had surpassed my standards and therefore the speed was much faster.....”

Debbie fell silent, unsure if she was excited, she then sighed: “If all these scrolls were sold, how much money could I earn.....”

“.....” Ye Chui was speechless. Couldn’t this young lady just pay

attention to the other details?

Debbie turned her gaze to look at Carrey who was in the dust and worriedly asked: “Staying motionlessly like that, could he have already died?”

“It’s hard to say, but it was definitely unpleasant to be bombed indiscriminately.” Ye Chui hesitantly replied. He too was uncertain of Carrey’s situation. After some thought, he pointed his magic wand straight ahead: “Dustless!”

Lifestyle spell 【Dustless】

The effect was to clear the air of all dust, allowing the air to be purified.....

Following the magic that Ye Chui cast, a slight breeze swept past. The breeze was so gentle that it could not be felt and the clouds of dust in the air fell to the ground one after another as if it was affected by some kind of power and this caused a layer of dust to pile up on the ground. As the vision suddenly cleared up, Carrey could be seen half kneeling on the ground in the middle of the road. With both of his hands on the long sword that was stabbed into the ground, it was still quite a cool pose looking at it.....

“Don’t tell me this guy still has to pose before dying?” Ye Chui could not help and complained.

However Debbie’s expression suddenly changed: “This is bad, I

recognise this pose. This is the defensive move that only an intermediate swordsman can learn, Protection of the War God!”

“Damn, he had gone all in!?” Ye Chui stared blankly.

Just as Ye Chui had said those words, Carrey who had been motionless suddenly moved. His pitch black face revealed an extremely furious expression as he raised his head and let out a bellow. Getting up from the ground, a faint glow flowed through his body.

Debbie had already raised the great sword in her hands: “Protection of the War God is a type of extremely powerful life risking move that can only be activated by exhausting one’s sword aura and will wear out one’s realm..... However by using this move, it allows the user to enter the War God mode in an extremely short time, directly doubling one’s strength and speed.....

Carrey speed had indeed become quicker, rushing to the front of Ye Chui and Debbie in a blink of an eye.

“Watch out for my Giant Spinning Top.....” Debbie had already finished preparing as she was talking to Ye Chui. Raising her great sword, she started spinning towards Carrey.

However as Carrey swung his sword, a “ding” sound could be heard. As his long sword clashed on Debbie’s great sword, the force of this slash caused Debbie to spin away to the side and fall on her butt even before her spinning top could completely start whirling.

Carrey who was in War God mode already had his strength doubled!

Ye Chui gave a cry of surprise and immediately rushed to Debbie. However Carrey had already swiftly rushed to the front of Ye Chui and grabbed him by the neck. Lifting up Ye Chui's entire body, he said with a hoarse voice: "Kill you, I want to kill you....."

Ye Chui's four limbs dangled in the air and he felt that his life was in imminent peril as he had difficulty in breathing.

However at this moment, Ye Chui's flushed face suddenly revealed a smile instead.

Actually, he still had one last move he had not used.

Aiming his magic wand at Carrey's armor——

Carrey's armor had already been heavily mottled and was in a terrible sight. However other than the damages caused by all the flames and lightnings that was all over the armor, some strange black vein marks could be seen if one had looked attentively.

Those vein marks were secretly hidden among the scrolls by Ye Chui and inscribed onto Carrey using the magic 【Breeze】 in the midst of the chaotic attacks earlier.

The black colour was magic ink.

The vein marks was a simple magic array which was the most practical and simplest magic array——The stove array that was used on the magic stove.

As Ye Chui's magic wand touched Carrey's armor, he inputted his magic power in.

The power switch of the magic stove array was activated.

The next moment, Carrey was entirely set ablaze.....

## Chapter 10 – Taking Advantage To Rob

---

Making use of the magic ink to inscribe a stove magic array on Carrey was a method Ye Chui had thought of on a whim.

Magic ink was a type of material that could materialise a magic array and by inscribing a magic array on a parchment using magic ink, a scroll was formed.

Of course, a magic array wouldn't be created just by inscribing magic ink on any surface, there was a strict requirement on the quality of the material but luckily, the armor on Carrey was a magic-imbued armor, thus meeting this requirement.

Among the magic scrolls Ye Chui had released, some of them were mixed with additional magic ink. These magic ink were stored inside cotton balls and wrapped with oil paper. The lifestyle spell 【Breeze】 that Ye Chui had mastered could be used to control these cotton balls filled with magic ink. Between the intervals of the indiscriminate attacks on Carrey earlier, Ye Chui had already used 【Breeze】 to control the cotton balls to inscribe a complete stove magic array on Carrey's body.

This kind of magic array had a simple structure, thus it was not difficult to complete it. Of course, it wouldn't be easy for an ordinary elementary magician to accomplish such an advanced manipulation——Which was why Ye Chui would like to express his heartfelt gratitude here to that Hammer's boredom.

And this array activated when Ye Chui inputted magic powers

into it, causing it to immediately start burning.

Even when Ye Chui's wand had left Carrey's body, the flame still would not extinguish. The magic-imbued armor on Carrey originally contained a magic powered crystal which could continuously provide magic power. Furthermore, Debbie's previous slash had broken open the armor, causing the magic power to leak out from the armor, providing a continuous supply allowing the stove magic array to keep on burning—This situation just couldn't get any better.

“What is this magic.....Ahhhhhh.....”

Carrey let out cries of fear and frantically slapped his body, trying to extinguish the flames. With his body suddenly on fire, he had completely fallen into panic, entirely becoming a flaming man. If it was the flame spell, it would not burn for a long period of time, however the flame on his body kept on burning and showed no signs of extinguishing in spite of everything.

“This.....” The surrounding people were all stunned. They had originally thought that Ye Chui and Debbie definitely could not fight against Carrey who had activated the war god mode, however to their surprise, Ye Chui still had such a move up his sleeve.

Could this flame be the legendary advanced levelled spell 【Will-o'-wisp from Hell】? The inextinguishable flame that won't stop until the target is burned to ashes?

“Carrey..... Carrey.....”



Looking at his son who had become a flaming man, Busca was even more anxious and jumpy. He hurriedly rushed in front of Ye Chui: “Hammer, what exactly have you done, quickly put out the flame that’s on my son!”

“Alright.” Ye Chui gave an easy to negotiate look. The earlier situation also worried him out. Even though he was panting heavily, looking at how smooth his plan had went, he naturally was in a good mood. He gave a smile as he stretched out his hand towards Busca, “Boss Busca, please hand the contract over to me.”

“Contract, what contract.....” Busca acted blur as he looked at his son who was jumping up and down among the flames.

“Even though your son is a rank four swordsman, but from the looks of it, I guess that he could probably just last for at most another two to three minutes?” Ye Chui coldly smiled.

Busca’s forehead was full of sweat, he gritted his teeth as he quickly grabbed a piece of rolled up yellow paper and threw it to Ye Chui. Opening it, Ye Chui saw that a loan contract was written on it as well as Debbie’s crooked signature. Using both hands, he tore the contract up ripping it into pieces.

“I have passed you the contract, now quickly extinguish the fire on my son!” Busca continued to shout anxiously.

“Not so fast, there’s still another debt I have not settled with you.” Ye Chui composedly continued, “These few days because of

you, the business of Anthony's Magic Cottage had been severely disrupted and three days ago, you destroyed quite a few items when you came over to find trouble, don't you think you should pay for our losses?"

"You.....You are trying to take advantage of me!" Busca resentfully exclaimed.

Ye Chui pointed his finger at Carrey who was still crying out loud: "Looks like your son could probably last at most another minute."

"....."

Busca gave Ye Chui a death stare, as though his eyes were about to pop out, his look indescribably sinister. However as Carrey's continuous screaming sounded in his ears, he was still ready to make a compromise: "How..... How much do you want me to pay?"

"A hundred gold coins." Ye Chui gave some thought and replied.

"A hundred gold coins!?" Busca jumped in anger, "Why..... Why don't you go rob instead."

"What do you think I'm doing now?" Ye Chui replied with a smile. He then gave a slight cough: "There's not much time left."

"....."

Busca was so angry that he started to shake uncontrollably. A hundred gold coins, that was almost a third of his entire asset. This time, Ye Chui was like a lion with its mouth wide open, demanding a hundred gold coins just like that.....

However looking at the flames continuously burning on Carrey and listening to his cries which seems to be getting weaker, he eventually gritted his teeth and took out a brass coloured card, throwing it to Ye Chui, giving off a painful look: “This is the gold coin card by Gnome Bank, one of this brass cards represent a hundred gold coins, something you should know!”

The Gnome Bank was a large scale bank that was commonly used among the entire Aigen-Dazs continent. Because it was set up by the honest or in other words inflexible gnomes, it had quite a trustworthy reputation. The card that Busca had handed over to Ye Chui was a convenient card issued by the Gnome Bank. A brass card represented a hundred gold coins and on it had traces of magic, as long as one possessed magic power or sword aura, they could sense how much was deposited inside.

Ye Chui nodded his head in satisfaction and threw the gold coin card into his pocket.

Debbie became completely stunned as she saw the card going into Ye Chui’s pocket: Despite her age this young lady has never seen such a huge amount of money before.....

“Now you can undo the spell on my son’s body!” Busca coldly

demanded with his trembling voice.

“With pleasure.”

Ye Chui nodded his head while smiling and aimed his magic wand at Carrey: “Stream!”

Basic lifestyle spell 【Stream】

The stream, which was like fine spring rain, continuously condensed on the air and poured over on Carrey’s body. As the tss noises sounded out, clouds of white steam appeared and the flames on Carrey’s body was extinguished. Under the impact of the stream, the magic array on Carrey’s body was also washed off.

Carrey laid on the ground as steam emitted from his body as he panted continuously for breath. He was in a sorry state with his face burned black and his bright armor being reduced to scraps, looking like a tramp.

And Busca was stupefied: “Just like that?”

Ye Chui nodded his head: “That’s right, as simple as that.”

“But..... But.....” Busca was stumped for words. He had originally thought that Ye Chui had used some profound spell, after all the flame spell would only burned temporarily before it extinguished. However the flames on Carrey continued to burn non stop, never had he thought a shower of rainwater could

extinguished the fire..... If he had known earlier, he wouldn't need Ye Chui's help, he himself could help his son extinguish the fire.

“You..... You.....” Realising that he was scammed by Ye Chui, Busca was so mad that he wanted to rush forward and give Ye Chui a few bites.

“How could I possibly use such profound magic when I'm only a rank two magician.” Ye Chui gave a despicable look and teased, “Oh, I forgot to tell you this, your son was in no danger from the start. No matter what, he is still a rank four swordsman. He came out unscathed even after suffering from dozens of attacks from the flame scrolls so this insignificant stove fire that was used for cooking had no way of hurting him. Even if he was burned an entire day, his life will still not be in danger..... He was purely scared out of his wits when he was screaming.”

Busca: “..... Grrrrrrr”

——This was the teeth grinding sound of hatred.

# Chapter 11 – Isn't She Your Dream Lover?

---

As Busca hurriedly left with his son, who was already unrecognisable from all the torture, the surrounding crowd did not disperse. Instead, they gathered around Ye Chui while exclaiming in awe. Magicians were originally a respectable profession, and the numbers were already scarce. Watching them battle was a sight to see for the crowd. Much like Ye Chui's performance, Hammer's was astonishing as well. No one would have expected him, a person who chose trashy Magician skills, to be able to beat the Swordsman. He was truly worthy of praise.

“Hammer, since when did your magic skills improve so drastically? I was so worried for you just now.”

“Hammer's scheming tactics were definitely as impressive as I thought. With his brains and bravery, a level 2 Magician managed to actually defeat a level 4 Swordsman. What's more, he still conveniently took 100 gold coins. Such skills and talent will definitely bring him far. All is within my expectations.”

“Busca simply got what he deserved. Finally, from all the crimes he had committed, he got his retribution.”

“Although he enjoys talking big and showing off, all of his actions are only possible due to the support from his son. Let's see how he is going to recover from this!”

“In order to hold a position at the City Lord's Manor, one must be at least a level 4 Swordsman. Since Carrey took tonic pills to raise

his level, his level was extremely unstable. After using Warrior's Secret Technique: Protection of the War God, he dropped by a level. Now, without his place in the City Lord's Manor, he can consider himself finished!"

The crowd continued to insult Busca, taking the opportunity to kick a man that was already down – his reputation in the streets was horrendous in the first place, and they were just taking the opportunity to vent their anger.

Debbie, given her petite stature, took some effort to squeeze through the crowd to suddenly appear at Ye Chui's side. She displayed a smile, as bright and as pretty as a magical sunflower, indicating her excitement.

Looking at her smile gave Ye Chui a sense of joy. He was waiting for the little girl to praise him. Even with his fragile looking stature, he managed to emerge victorious due to his intelligence!

"As for the Platinum Coin Card, I shall keep it!" Debbie extended her small hand towards Ye Chui with sparkling eyes.

"..." Ye Chui did not speak. [Can't Debbie just focus on something else? Like my wise and brilliant plan?]

Ye Chui passed the Platinum Coin Card into Debbie's hands, trying not to be so calculative with her.

Debbie immediately examined the cherished card in her hands,

then carefully stuffed the card under the chest piece of her armour suit and gently patted her flat chest with a delighted smile plastered onto her face.

After the crowd in the street dispersed, Debbie went back to Anthony's Magic Cottage, pulling Ye Chui along with her. As she stretched her body, she heaved a sigh of relief after surviving the battle. Not only did she survive the battle, she even managed to obtain a great sum of money. Nothing in this world could compare with what she had just received. Nothing could be more dream-like than now.

Indulging in her own euphoric world to be only broken as Debbie suddenly got reminded of something. She took her hand and placed it on her belly, rubbing it, "Hammer, I'm hungry... After vomiting so much, I feel really hungry now. Let's eat alright?"

"What do you wish to eat?" Ye Chui asked.

"Hehe, of course we are going to eat in a grandiose restaurant!" Debbie pats her chest, "We are rich now!"

Coming from another world, Ye Chui had no clue how significant 100 gold coins was in this world. When he casually demanded 100 gold coins from Busca, Ye Chui didn't think much of the amount... until, he saw the anxious look on Busca's face.

Debbie was forced to borrow 10 silver coins from Busca to pay for her father's medical bills and funeral arrangements; she even had to put up Anthony's Magic Cottage as collateral to repay Busca. In



that case, 100 gold coins would definitely not be a small amount.

Ever since Ye Chui had reincarnated into Hammer's body, he had been stuck in Anthony's Magic Cottage for the whole of three days. Right now, he could not help but wish to explore the place, taking a stroll outside to experience more of what this fantasy world had to offer.

Ye Chui nodded with a smile on his face, "That sounds good."

After half an hour, Ye Chui was sitting next to Debbie in Stan City's biggest restaurant, "Moran Flower Restaurant." They sat at a table by the window, filled with luxurious food that Debbie had only dreamt of having a taste of. The food was emitting out a fragrant smell, Debbie could not help but feel her mouth water.

Debbie had a white dress on with her hair tied into two ponytails. Accompanied by her small ruddy face, she looked like a small loli. However, if one were to look at her whole figure, they would surely notice the gigantic great sword on her waist. If any sane person were to see a childlike person carry a 50kg great sword, they would definitely be too shocked for words.

Although Ye Chui had been accustomed to such strange sights, he still couldn't accept such an ironic scene.

"No matter where Swordsmen go, they will never forget to take along their sword. Like a wand to a Magician, it must remain by your side at all times." Debbie answered with a dignified voice after Ye Chui asked her about the sword she brought along with

her. However, when she sized up Ye Chui, her expression changed, “Where is your magic wand?”

Ye Chui started to perspire, “I left it back at home...”

“...” Debbie was left speechless. Whenever she ran around with her great sword, no one would look at her in surprise. It was as though such a scene was already ordinary.

On the way to Moran Flower Restaurant, Ye Chui totally immersed himself in this world of fantasy, which to him, was a somewhat more glamorous version of a medieval style setting. Magical sights and smells could be experienced everywhere, similar to those special effects seen in movies.

Magic was commonly used in daily conveniences. For example, flame magic could be used to light up an advertisement board; wind magic could be used to move carriages without the need of horses, while magic puppets could be used as shopkeepers. Although the human race was the majority in the streets, there were still other races, such as the brutish Beastmen, the beautiful and aloof Elves; and the healthy, vigorous Dwarves.

From Hammer’s memory, 5000 years ago, Beastmen, Elves, Dwarves and Giants all formed an alliance with the human race. Till now, this alliance was still in effect even though all the races had some kind of conflict with the Human race. Beastmen tribes tended to be completely inharmonious when they were with the Human Race. Similarly, relations between the Dwarf race and the Elven race with Humans had been fraught with friction. Even the Giants had not been seen for the last thousand years on the Aigen-

Dazs Continent. However, such tension between the races did not hinder their coexistence within Stan City, where Humans and the other races could live harmoniously.

Each of these experiences and bits of knowledge were a novel thing to Ye Chui.

Fortunately, Debbie had a thick skin despite her petite stature. She made no reaction towards Ye Chui's constant astonished look. In her heart, Hammer would always be Hammer. Even though he was unscrupulous in the battle previously by using magic scrolls to defeat a level 4 Swordsman, he was still the only one that Debbie would marry.

The chef of Moran Flower Restaurant, which was located in Stardust Avenue of Stan City and worthy of the reputation of the best restaurant in town, cooked several delicious dishes. Although those dishes looked unfamiliar to Debbie and Ye Chui, their appetites were not reduced and they ate the meal happily.

Suddenly, something caught Ye Chui's attention, as his gaze quickly turned to the interesting situation outside the window. He was so engrossed, that this vision did not shift away for a single second.

"Hammer, what are you looking at? This meal cost a few silver coins so hurry up and eat. Don't let it go to waste." Debbie mumbled but as her gaze also turned to the curious matter that caught Ye Chui's attention, her eyes shone with a brilliant light. "It's Miss Alfea! She must be heading out of town to temper herself!"

“You know her?” Ye Chui looked at Debbie with a strange expression.

Out of the window on Stardust Avenue, a beautiful horse was seen slowly trotting. Cars, horses and other animals were prohibited from travelling along this avenue; however, this horse didn't seem to have any problems passing through the avenue. Even the pedestrians on the street made way for the horse to travel through; indicating the person on the horse was of respectable status.

On top of the white horse was an extremely pretty girl with wavy burgundy hair. Her whole body was clad with silvery armour, but even the thick metal could not hide her slender and perfectly symmetrical body. She looked to be around 15 – 16 years old, with fair skin, emitting some kind of mystical charm. Even though she seemed aloof, she gave off a strong heroic aura.

Ye Chui acknowledged that he was charmed by the pretty girl, or maybe it was Hammer who was attracted to her, thus affecting Ye Chui as well.

There were four Swordsmen in full body armour following the girl, three of which were of the Human race, and one muscular green-skinned Beastman Warrior.

“Of course I would know. She is the Stan City's City Lord's daughter; Alfea, a genius Swordsman who is the same age as us. However, we cannot hope to compare with her... right now, she is

a level 5 Swordsman and will eventually become an Advanced Swordsman.” Debbie looked at Ye Chui with a strange look, “Hammer, aren’t you acting a little strange? Isn’t Miss Alfea the sweetheart of your dreams? I even found a portrait of her underneath your bed.”

“...” Ye Chui could not think of a suitable explanation. However, at least he now knew why he thought of this girl as charming.

## Chapter 12 – The Magic Store

---

Since Ye Chui's reincarnation into Hammer's body three days ago, he comprehended all the magic knowledge that Hammer left behind. He even reviewed all the information of this world. However, he didn't bother with the useless information, like how Hammer hid a portrait of his dream lover, City Lord's Young Lady Alfea under his bed.

There were also some other dirty-minded things that Ye Chui wasn't interested in...

Debbie wasn't bothered by the fact that Ye Chui did not recognise his dream lover. As mentioned previously, this girl had plenty of self-confidence, despite her petite stature, which was very compatible with her "rush in and attack" style as a Great Swordsman.

With regards to the matter where Hammer hid the portrait of Alfea under the bed, Debbie let the matter slide with a smile: Alfea was looked up to as an idol by most men and even women in Stan City. Hence, Alfea's popularity in the city did not invoke any jealous thoughts among the common girls. Moreover, Debbie worshipped Alfea subconsciously as she was a genius level 5 Swordsman.

It was understandable that her future husband admired the other party secretly.

Actually, several of Alfea's portraits were also hidden under Debbie's bed...

As Ye Chui saw Alfea with her heroic aura from his window seat slowly travelling by, he reigned in his unusual thoughts – Alfea was unattainable for him due to his status. More importantly, after the previous incident, he had grown more immune to pretty girls. Disregarding Hammer’s influence on him, Alfea was, to him, nothing more than an idol most men obscenely fantasised about.

[Hmm, could I manage to find all the portraits hidden by Hammer?]

After spending 8 silver coins feasting at the Moran Flower Restaurant, Debbie and Ye Chui went back to the Magic Cottage, feeling satisfied.

On the road back, Debbie chattered endlessly about the wonderful future with Ye Chui, while carrying her greatsword, “Hammer, did you really carve those magic scrolls? You’re smarter than my father! With your speed in making magic scrolls, we would definitely make a fortune – one scroll can be sold for 40 copper coins, 10 for 4 silver coins, 100 for 40 silver coins and 1000 for four gold coins!”

“Sales for the magic scrolls hasn’t been good. Even if I am able to carve that many, we might not be able to sell them.” Ye Chui perspired while explaining.

“Everything is up to us to obtain. If we didn’t do anything, would we have the 100 gold coins we have right now?” Debbie gave a nonchalant expression. Being in a good mood, she said, “By the

way, do you have anything that you want? I shall make an exception and buy you something good, in acknowledgement of your accomplishments today!”

“...” Ye Chui was speechless. [Girl, the 100 gold coins in your hands were gained through unscrupulous means... No, although you could argue that you earned it through hard work, don't you feel shameless about it?]

However, Ye Chui did not give much thought, not knowing whether it was the fact that he and Debbie spent three days of hardship or the fact that the influence of Hammer's remaining memories made his subconscious mind regard the girl as his own sister. Being with her gave him a feeling of comfort and warmth.

As he sized up the shops on both sides of Stardust Avenue, he noticed a particular shop and his eyes lit up, “Debbie, buy me some magic books.”

[Magic in this world is simply too engrossing!]

Until now, Ye Chui had successfully grasped five magic symbols, out of 32, and was eager to learn the remaining magic symbols. This feeling was similar to the time when he first started programming – eager to learn all the languages at once.

Using his ability as a hacker, he believed he could grasp all the magic symbols and could cast any spell. He even trusted that he could create his very own spells.



Ye Chui expressed his impatience to Debbie.

“You want the magic books? All right, I shall buy any number you want!” Debbie proclaimed arrogantly.

Ye Chui was momentarily surprised as Debbie was usually very stingy. [Why is she being so generous today? Is this the same girl who wouldn't even spare an extra drop of sesame oil for her noodle soup?]

“Hehehe...” Debbie gave an evil smile, “Hammer, seems like you have the talent in carving magic scrolls, huh? We shall buy a few magic books, go back to research the carving techniques for other magic scrolls, but let's not make the business of the Magic Cottage get too prosperous...”

Ye Chui, “...”

[Alright... this is the Debbie I know who goes all out to not waste even an extra piece of a noodle.]

The bookstore name that Ye Chui saw was called Cara's Magic Bookstore. In Hammer's memory, Ye Chui knew that this bookstore was the largest one in Stan City, and was also the only shop where one could purchase magic books.

After entering the bookstore with Debbie, he was immediately attracted to the rows of bookshelves. It was noon and the bookstore was practically empty – no patrons or even shopkeepers

were around. It seemed as if the boss of the bookstore wasn't fearful that people would steal his stuff, but in reality, as the only magic bookstore on Stardust Avenue (and in Stan City), the power and aura of the owner acted as a deterrent for robbers.

Ye Chui scanned the books on the rows of the bookshelves, which were very diversified and varied. Several bookshelves, namely 'Swordsman Biography' and 'Ancient History' were used to categorise the books. As Ye Chui looked through every single book, he set his eyes on a book with its name intricately and lavishly decorated on its spine, which read 'Aigen-Dazs Continent Encyclopaedia', under 'Ancient History'.

Without much hesitation, he took out from amongst the dozens other books. This one weighed at least a kilo.

Wrapped in a bronzed leather cover, the thousands of pages described all there was to know about the Aigen-Dazs Continent – its history, culture, races, geography, species, etc.

With this book, Ye Chui could gain a better understanding of this world that he reincarnated into.

"Encyclopaedia?" Seeing Ye Chui choose such a thick book, she was shocked. "I thought you weren't interested in such things?"

[If Hammer was interested in these, I wouldn't need to buy these books to read myself.]

Ye Chui explained smilingly, “I am now a little interested, let’s just bring it back.”

“Ohhh... Alright.” Debbie muttered.

Feeling wealthier than ever before, Debbie merely took a quick glance at the price tag at the back of the encyclopaedia and agreed to it. In the past, she would never have agreed to a purchase so readily. “Hammer, do you want any other books?”

“I’ll take a look at that bookshelf,” Ye Chui pointed at a small bookshelf. Despite its size, the magic books that filled it made it the most valuable corner within the shop.

“All right, I’ll take a look at some books under the ‘Swordsmen Biography’ category,” Debbie said as she took the encyclopaedia from Ye Chui. Her kind gesture to help Ye Chui with the heavy book accentuated her kindness towards others...

Seeing the little girl walk away with the 50 kg greatsword in her hands and a 1 kg book under her arm, Ye Chui sighed. The females in this world were much stronger. He turned around to move to the innermost bookshelf.

The bookshelf was closely located near the innermost wall and a staircase that leads to the second storey. It was not known if there were different sorts of books stocked up there.

‘Analysis of Magic Principles’

‘Talks about Wind Elements’

‘Mysterious Link Between Basic Magic Elements’

‘Origin of Magic’

‘Basic Offensive Spell Compilation’

---

Seeing book after book related to magic was dazzling, but as he scanned through them seriously, two books at the bottom of the shelf caught his eyes.

‘Intermediate Magic Language’

‘Advanced Magic Language’

“These two books are what I was looking for!” Ye Chui joyfully pulled out the two books from the shelf. While he was cleaning off the layer of dust on the books which had been untouched for a long period of time, he suddenly heard footsteps coming down the staircase.

Turning his head, Ye Chui was greeted by a pair of slender legs navigating the steep steps.

Those legs were firm yet bouncy. It was as if a beautiful slim woman strutted in a graceful and poised manner, however...

Those legs were green.

It was a female Beastman.

## Chapter 13 – Sister, Is The 10 Percent Discount You Gave Still Valid?

---

Just moments ago outside, he had seen several Beastmen. All of them were males with the build of a muscular warrior – they were all at least two meters tall, had protruding fangs and fierce looks. However, this did not dampen the anticipation Ye Chui had towards the model-like figure of the female Beastman. At least, that pair of slender legs emerging from the stairs was rather attractive. If only they weren't green in colour...

As the female Beastman walked down the stairs, her silhouette gradually became more obvious – her slim legs, small waist... and a ridiculously full chest.

Sweat droplets appeared on Ye Chui's face. Beastmen were born into a race focused on being warriors, and they had a wild style that could even be called simple, like how the female Beastman was wearing plain clothes.

Her skirt was considered to be rather short. It was clearly made especially for battles. Though he could not see her face, he assumed her to be a stunningly beautiful Beastman.

As a matter of fact, Hammer had definitely seen this female Beastman, who could possibly be the female boss or the staff of the bookshop. As long as Ye Chui put his mind to it, he would be able to imagine her appearance. However, he did not do so as he wanted to enjoy the pleasure of uncovering her beauty.

He deeply regretted making this decision; a face with fangs slowly appeared before Ye Chui's eyes. She was chewing on a chicken drumstick in her mouth. The creaking sound produced made one subconsciously wonder if she was chewing the bone as well. With her long, blood-red hair resting on her shoulder, the present society would view it as unkempt but beautiful. Of course, Ye Chui thought of her hair as messy. [Did she forget to comb her hair in the morning... or do all Beastmen have a habit of keeping it messy?]

“Humph, there is a guest.” As the female Beastman saw Ye Chui carrying two books, she reached out her hand to pinch the chicken drumstick out from her mouth like how she would pinch a cigarette. As expected, the top part of the drumstick was left meatless, with even a segment of the bone missing. The female Beastman laughed as she approached Ye Chui, “Little Magician, are you here to buy magic books? Welcome, welcome.”

“Err, hi there...” As Ye Chui seemingly woke up from a dream, Hammer's memory gradually resurfaced. This female Beastman was the lady owner of Cara's Magic Bookstore. It goes without saying that her name is Cara. She was a female Beastman from the Tusk Tribe, one of the five major Beastmen Tribes. Beastmen from the Tusk Tribe were characterised by fangs stronger than those of other Beastmen from other tribes, and they linked their fangs to their standard of beauty. Cara, the female Beastman before his eyes, was rumoured to be the most beautiful of them all...

Cara obviously knew Hammer. Since Magicians would naturally visit the only Magic Bookstore in Stan City (and Magicians were few in number), it was impossible for her not to know him.

“Which book are you buying this time? I heard that you used magic scrolls to defeat a level four Swordsman this morning. Since you’re so interested, how about I give you a 10% discount for any book you buy?” Cara smiled flirtatiously.

She was most likely being flirtatious instinctively, but to Ye Chui, her blood-stained fangs were too scary to seem in any way enticing – goosebumps started to form at the thought of her bite. Ye Chui decided to not take her words seriously and refuse any little advantage he could gain from her!

Meanwhile, what made Ye Chui even more astonished was the time gap between defeating Carrey this morning and now. It has barely been two hours, and she has already heard of it? Uncertain if this was a good thing or not, he acted bashfully and brought two magic books to Cara, “I want these two books.”

“Ehh?” Glancing at the books Ye Chui chose, Cara frowned and looked at Ye Chui in an unusual gaze, “Are you sure?”

Ye Chui remained silent.

Cara then warned, “You have to confirm your decision now. As long as you take the books off the bookshelf, it is the same as you having decided to buy them. Both books cost 10 gold coins. No exchanges or refunds allowed.”

“10 gold coins?” Ye Chui was dumbfounded.



A meal at Stan City's best restaurant, Moran Flower Restaurant merely costs eight silver coins, while Anthony's Magic Cottage could only be mortgaged for 10 gold coins... but these two magic books actually cost 10 gold coins?

And what else did Cara say? There is no exchange or refund allowed once the books were taken!

Ye Chui suddenly realised that he might have made a mistake.

It is indeed a mistake, a very big one in fact.

“Hammer, what... what do you want the magic language books for?” Debbie's sharp voice with a hint of breathlessness could suddenly be heard from the side, “Don't you know the rules of the bookshop? The magic books can only be seen, not touched. Once you touch it, you have to purchase it, and it will definitely cost a tonne. Most importantly, these books are of no use to you in any way. If you wish to learn the magic language, you will need guidance from a true master!”

Debbie's words made Ye Chui realise that he had neglected a very important matter, which made his heart skip a beat.

Due to its special characteristics, magic books were very costly. Not to mention, magic language books, magic spells, and other magic related teaching materials were considered to be more valuable than regular magic books.

Although the bookstore sold magic language books, comprehending the magic symbols they contain is far too complex for ordinary Magicians to understand. They can look at the symbols, but they would not truly understand the encompassing and concise meaning of the symbols because every symbol is said to have a profound imprint of special feelings and thoughts, which can only be studied properly through a master's guidance and instructions.

Just like the matter between men and women, watching videos and not practising would never make one an expert...

Of course, such things were not absolute. Those blessed with special talents could use their observation and comprehension skills to master various techniques, but such people were rare. At least, Debbie didn't feel that the stupid Hammer had such talent. She carefully licked her lips and pleaded Cara with a pair of sorrowful eyes, "Lady boss, can we not buy this book?"

Cara smiled mildly – of course, the mild feeling was subjected to her only. In Debbie and Ye Chui's eyes, she was giving a sly smile, "Of course...not. Oh, do you still want to buy the encyclopaedia? On the account that you have bought two magic language books, I'll give the encyclopaedia to you for free."

Ye Chui, "..."

Debbie, "..."

Cara shoved the half-eaten chicken drumstick back into her

mouth and chewed onto the chicken with a creaking sound, put both her hands on her waist and her fangs protruding from her green smiling face, she muttered with little clarity, “My two little friends, do you still have anything to say?”

“Yes...” Ye Chui stammered, “Sis, did you say something about giving me a 10% discount?”

---

Cara’s Magic Bookstore was infamous for its bluntness. The rules state that once the magic books have been touched, the person must buy it no matter what! Cara’s authority allowed her to implement, or maintain such ‘honesty’ of the store, so much so that even the hot-tempered Debbie had no choice but to compromise.

When Debbie and Ye Chui left Cara’s Magic Bookstore with an encyclopaedia and two magic language books for nine gold coins, Debbie’s face turned pale. The joy of having 100 gold coins two hours ago had disappeared. Her rage only made the great sword on her shoulder seemed more dangerous than ever...

Carrying the pile of books in one hand, a forced smile was plastered on his face as he felt cheated. However, he did not regret the purchase of these two expensive books. In fact, he wanted to buy several more books regarding the magic language, so as to gain a more detailed understanding of the theory of magic, although Debbie’s angry face was a powerful deterrent.

Recalling Hammer’s memory, Ye Chui knew that a master’s

guidance would be needed to learn magic. After all, magic language was a type of complex magic symbol, and only by master and disciple interaction would one be able to accurately grasp the meaning of every magic symbol. Finding a master who could teach intermediate magic language and advanced magic language was immensely difficult. Even when that obstacle is surpassed, the cost of learning would easily exceed 10 gold coins. In fact, old George had the prerequisites for learning intermediate language being a level three peak Magician, but he could not find a teacher. Thus, he died as a mere level three Magician.

It wasn't impossible for a Magician to learn the magic language from the magic books, but it was an uphill task and only a handful of people have managed to do it successfully.

The few successful cases did not represent his own inability to do it. When Ye Chui was a hacker, he also did it step by step. To him, it was an interesting challenge as he took on the challenge in a mindset of a [Father of Studies](#)...

A great man who stands at the apex of education. With his finely honed skills, he scored full marks on all his tests. A genius in short, but also a bit of a narcissist.

As Debbie stomped in rage in front of him, he couldn't help but think, [How can I pacify this girl?]

Soon after leaving Stardust Avenue, he saw a group of seven to eight-year-old beggars idling by the roadside. His eyes lit up immediately.

“Debbie, I have an idea to further improve the business in our shop...”

# Chapter 14 – The Price Of Magic Scrolls Falls To 48 Copper Coins!

---

The Stan City Mercenary Guild Hall was the most beautiful building in Stan City besides the City Lord's Manor.

It was said that the original builder based its construction on the magnificent Dome Hall of the Snow Region Empire Mercenary General Trade Union. For countless years, the Stan City Western Region Employment Hall was regarded as the landmark of Stan City for trading merchants and touring poets. It wasn't until a few years ago when an experienced architectural professional told everyone that the Stan City Mercenary Hall didn't have the imposing style of the General Guild. In fact, he proclaimed that it was comparable to the brothel that stood beside it. It could be that the original builder misunderstood the magnificence of the Dome Hall...

Hence, the Mercenary Guild Hall was no longer the pride of Stan City.

Although it's popularity and fame fell, the Mercenary Guild Hall still held a lofty status for a simple reason – it was the foothold for the Aigen-Dazs Mercenary Guild. Every Swordsman, Magician, and Follower who joined the Mercenary Guild would report to the hall regularly to receive missions and claim rewards for accomplishing said missions. A large proportion of Stan City's tax revenue was for the Mercenary operations.

---

~At dawn

Level four Swordsman Damon walked out of the Mercenary Guild Hall with a mission file in his hand. Being partially illiterate, reading the information from the file was very challenging for him. However, there were two words in the file were particularly clear and understandable, 'Dark Forest'. Having been in the Mercenary profession for up to 20 years, he definitely knew what these words represented.

“Hunt for a level two Blood Shadow Cat in the Dark Forest, for its Magic Beast fur, as well as its intact flesh and blood to complete the mission...”

Damon's thick, black eyebrows wrinkled.

The Dark Forest was humongous and stretched across the Aigen-Dazs Continent endlessly, and was the habitat for Magic Beasts. Although the Dark Forest constituted only a small portion of the huge forest in Stan City, the risks it harbours are not something an ordinary person could expect. This wasn't even considering the fact that level two Blood Shadow Cats had a reputation of being sly, and so the mission was very difficult and risky.

“I really have no idea what secret potion the Magician is researching that requires the use of a level two Blood Shadow Cat as an ingredient!”

As Damon complained, he used one hand to stroke the long sword extending from his waist and pondered quietly. [Seems like I

have to stock up on my equipment, purchase a few magic scrolls for self-defence and maintain my armour suit...]

While he was deep in thought, a young beggar whose head was covered in ash, walked up to him carefully.

Damon was in a foul mood after receiving the dangerous mission. He wished to vent his frustrations on the beggar, but just as Damon opened his mouth, the young beggar fearfully passed him a piece of paper.

“Hmm?”

Being curious, Damon took the piece of paper.

It was a flier that had never been seen before in this world.

“For a Respectable Mercenary such as yourself, what is most practical and economical when you are about to embark on a dangerous adventure in fearsome jungles and ruins?

Magic scrolls! That’s right, magic scrolls!

I have good news for you. Anthony’s Magic Cottage is now having a promotion – authentic and practical magic scrolls are now selling for 48 copper coins each! You read it right, only 48 copper coins!

Flame magic scrolls, lightning magic scrolls, stream magic scrolls, dust magic scrolls and gale magic scrolls, all kinds of magic scrolls yours for just 48 copper coins each!

In addition, for every ten scrolls you purchase, you will get 1 for free! That's right, a magic scroll worth 48 copper coins for free! Such things are hard to come by, and you do not want to miss this! Don't pass up the chance or you'll regret when the promotion ends, so visit Anthony's Magic Cottage now!"

The seemingly inspiring and captivating text on the flier made Damon really excited. Although he was used to purchasing magic scrolls from the biggest magic shop in Stan City called Morgan's Magic Store, he decided to try something else for a change.

"Other shops sell magic scrolls at 50 copper coins, but they are selling at 48 copper coins each! What's more, there is a promotion of buy 10 get 1 free! How could I possibly miss this fabulous offer?" As a Mercenary, Damon wouldn't usually bother himself with the slightest difference in price, but he subconsciously knew that he had found a huge advantage.

Written on the other side of the flier was the address for the Magic store. Despite having felt moody in the morning, his spirits were lifted and the young beggar was seemingly more pleasing to his eyes now. He then magnanimously tossed a copper coin to him and began to walk towards Anthony's Magic Cottage.

Although fearful and apprehensive at first, the young beggar's eyes lit up when he caught the copper coin that Damon tossed at him. He carefully polished it before dropping it into his pocket.



Then, he rushed towards another Mercenary walking out of the hall with his stack of fliers.

Similarly, there were other groups of young beggars around Stan City waiting at certain places; the Hunter Guild's, the Swordsmen's Guild and the Vegetable Markets. The goal of the once idle young beggars was now to distribute the inspiring fliers and hopefully convince the people through them to patronise Anthony's Magic Cottage.

A few days ago, en route to their house from Cara's Magic Bookstore, Ye Chui thought of a method to pacify Debbie since she was unhappy that he splurged nine gold coins on two magic language books that were useless to them for now. He came up with the idea when he saw the idling young beggars on the streets. He believed that they could help his cottage distribute fliers to boost his business. Of course, this was a concept adapted from his previous life... [Alright, giving promotions was probably not considered a new tactic, but it is definitely novel in this new world.]

Magic scrolls were the most profitable sales items in Anthony's Magic cottage, and they were the only items that Ye Chui could mass-produce. Selling magic scrolls was definitely the fastest way to improve business.

With Ye Chui writing inspiring and passionate words for the fliers and hiring a special magic printing store to produce copies, the fliers were considered easy to make too. The young beggars would be more than happy to earn one copper coin daily just from distributing the fliers.

Ye Chui's advertisement strategy proved to be a resounding success.

"Hammer, there was someone who came and bought 10 magic scrolls at one go. Business can't get any better than this," Debbie entered the room and chirped happily.

Reading the 'Intermediate Magic Language' book while sitting on the bed, Ye Chui looked up with a smile, "See that? As long as you follow my instructions, our business will improve very quickly."

"Hehe." Debbie smiled innocently, but as she noticed the book in his hands, her expression changed slightly, "Hammer, as dad had said before, there's no way you could learn intermediate magic language without the guidance of a master. Furthermore, you are a mere level two Magician, what's the hurry? Wait until we earn lots of money, I'll bring you to find a good magic teacher."

"There's no harm in perusing the book. I was just interested in it." Ye Chui did not think much of what Debbie said.

Debbie shook her head. Just then, a bell rang, indicating another enthusiastic customer entering the cottage. She rushed out to attend to the customer with a joyful expression and her voice echoed back, "Hammer, don't be too engrossed in reading. Spare some time to carve more magic scrolls. There aren't many of them left."

Ye Chui smiled to himself as his eyes returned to the book in his

hands. After flipping a few pages, his exhaustion became obvious through his expression.

“This thing... is actually really hard to understand...”

Silavin: Hey guys, anyone interested in translating this Omni-Magician or Martial Peak along with us ?

# Chapter 15 – The Seven Great Races On Aigen-Dazs Continent

---

The Intermediate Magic Language encompassed 10 of the 32 magic symbols, while the Advanced Magic Language covered another 17. The last 5 are Beginner Magic Language.

Each symbol had a unique meaning, which was incomprehensible in words – one could only grasp the main concept of the meaning without understanding it literally. Of course, the existence of magic language books showed that there was a possibility of comprehending the actual meaning behind the magic symbols, but only those with exceptional intelligence and comprehension abilities would be able to do so.

However, this proved to be an uphill task – despite having read the two magic language books from cover to cover since he bought them two weeks ago, Ye Chui’s understanding did not progress one bit.

Each symbol had a form, which was only external. Not knowing the essence of the symbols greatly hindered one from carving the magic template in one’s mind. Nothing can be accomplished with only the shape and form of the symbols.

“Do I really have to get a magic language teacher? If that’s the case, I’ll have to spend an arm and a leg and then still wait a really long time for a teacher to appear! Furthermore, the 80 gold coins Debbie and I have wouldn’t be enough for that!” Feeling depressed, Ye Chui rested his head against the headboard of his bed and his hands reached out for a thick book at the side of his pillow. It was

the “Aigen-Dazs Continent Encyclopaedia”.

Ye Chui read this encyclopaedia during his leisure time. As he laid on his bed, he turned to the page where his bookmark sat and continued reading from where he stopped the previous night.

During these few days of reading, Ye Chui had gathered a systematic understanding of the history of the Aigen-Dazs Continent.

The Aigen-Dazs Continent was the only continent to ever be discovered in the world and its history could be traced as far back as 15000 years ago.

In the beginning, various races in huge numbers were found on this continent, including the Beastman, Giant, Dwarf and some other races which are already extinct, such as the formidable Great Dragons. Of them all, the Human race was in an awkward and inferior position. Although it had the greatest numbers, Humans were born physically weaker than the rest, causing them to become slaves.

Around 13000 years ago, a genius among the humans, through certain methods, mastered the ability to control nature, which turned the tables on the power food chain for the Humans. They even formed an alliance with the most powerful race in the Aigen-Dazs Continent, the Great Dragons.

The skill that the Human race mastered was later known as magic.

Ever since the formation of the alliance, the Aigen-Dazs Continent became under the rule of the Humans. This reign lasted 7000 years.

The Humans from that period were known as the Former Civilisation.

The command of the Former Civilisation was considered peaceful in the beginning, but as years passed, their Royal Family became increasingly cruel, most probably due to an evil spell. They even used black magic to create Orcs, an evil race that was violent and had no conscience to help them maintain their rule.

Mass anger arose from the creation of Orcs.

The Beastmen, Giants, Dwarves, Gnomes, as well as a fraction of the Humans then formed an alliance and ignited a war in rebellion, lasting 200 years.

This war was coined as the War of the Former Civilisation.

In this War, the three remaining Great Dragons in the world were killed by the Dragon Slayer Swordsmen of the Humans. The Monarchs and Aristocrats of the Former Civilisation were slaughtered as well.

A remaining fraction of the Former Civilisation was expelled to the northern Frozen Sky Snow Land. It was like they had gotten a

prediction that they were going to be expelled to the north. The victorious alliance built a 5 km long impassable Great Wall to act as a powerful barrier, preventing the Former Civilisation from ever returning to the Middle Earth. Even now, the bloodlines from the Former Civilisation still flows in those savages wandering about the Impassable Great Wall.

The War of the Former Civilisation had been going on for the past 5000 years.

Using the gift of magic talent, the Human race eventually split up into different professions, namely Swordsman, Magician, Knight and Follower. Despite that, they were still in control of Aigen-Dazs Continent.

The next in control were the strong Beastmen and the Dwarves. Each race did not have many tribes, but each of them had inborn formidable warriors.

Even today, these two races still engage in occasional wars with the Human race empire, but peace is maintained for the most part.

Due to their unique characteristics, the Gnomes had become an indispensable resource of the continent. The Continent Bank, for example, is managed by the Gnome race.

Since 500 years ago, the Giants disappeared from the land for an unknown reason. It was rumoured that all Giants had gone into hiding.

The Elf race was the only immortal race living on the continent. They were scarce in number and rarely interfered with matters regarding other races. Their empire is concealed deep within the forests and only a select few fortunate families from other races could visit.

As evil creations of the Former Civilisation, the Orcs managed to survive until today, even after the War, by relying on their tenacious will. They also travelled to all corners of the Aigen-Dazs, bringing fearful disaster to wherever they went, just like locust plagues.

As for the undead wandering in the west of the continent in Tombstone Town, they are believed by some researchers to one day become a great race.

As of today, the Seven Great Races that walk the continent are Humans, Beastmen, Elves, Dwarves, Gnomes, Undead and Orcs.

As for the savages wandering north of the impassable Great Wall... Even the most conscientious researcher would subconsciously neglect their presence.

Above was the introduction to the Aigen-Dazs Continent history and its races, which could be found in the first volume of the encyclopaedias. In the next volume, the details of every race, empire, culture, species and so on would be introduced and explained.

Ye Chui happened to scan the introduction of the Undead.



“This is a splendid world – it is unexpected that a country filled with the Undead can actually be found in the centre of the continent...” After reading most of the introduction of the Undead race, Ye Chui closed the encyclopaedia and rubbed his sore eyes. His heart was filled with indescribable passion, “Although this world is interesting, only capable people can explore the splendour of this world! So, I have to learn Intermediate and Advanced Magic Language as soon as possible!”

Ye Chui had lightened up by now. He carefully replaced his bookmark in the page he stopped at and once again opened the ‘Intermediate Magic Language’ book to try again. Not everyone had the ability of a great scholar...

Just as Ye Chui opened the book, Debbie’s shouting once again echoed to his room from outside, “I’m so hungry, when are you going to prepare lunch?!”

Ye Chui, “Coming...”

[Is this what a happy, cool and dazzling great scholar should be? A cook?] Ye Chui wondered.

Recently, Anthony’s Magic Cottage was flooded with a joyous atmosphere – business was good and the stream of customers was never ending. Since Ye Chui’s victory against the level four Swordsman a few days ago, the cottage had become more famous than ever. Moreover, Ye Chui’s advertising tactic drastically increased the sale of magic scrolls and the increasing trend was

showing no signs of slowing down.

Seeing that the thirty magic scrolls Ye Chui carved daily was unable to meet the demand, Debbie started to get worried about the prosperous business dropping off, though she was more than happy that it had become so good.

On the other hand, Busca's Magic Store, which was on the same street as Anthony's Magic Cottage, had a dreary and pathetic atmosphere.

Due to Carrey's severe injuries, Busca did not have the mood to continue doing business and thus he suspended the operations of the shop for the time being.

"Dr Basgen, my son... Is there really no way to restore his strength?" Using a handkerchief to wipe the sweat off his forehead, he questioned the old doctor who walked out of the room.

The old doctor is a level five Magician who had superb magic skills. He was also the best magic doctor in Stan City. If everything goes smooth sailing for him, he would eventually become a Light Priest.

Basgen shook his head, "The use of the Swordsman forbidden technique, 'Protection of the War God' during the battle crippled more than half of his meridians. If he actually levelled up by virtue of his own hard work and capability, I might still have a method, but now... Mmm, I'm afraid that even if he were to recover from

his injuries, he would stagnate as a level three Swordsman. In the worst case scenario, he could even fall by a level or two. There is nothing I can do.”

After explaining Carrey’s condition to Busca, Basgen gestured him to move out of his way.

Out in the streets, Basgen stopped momentarily and glanced at Anthony’s Magic Cottage briefly. He muttered softly, “It is such a joke that a level two Magician managed to defeat a level four Swordsman in such a humiliating manner. Hehe...”

Basgen left shortly after.

Busca stood at the door with a dull expression. Originally, he wanted to send the high levelled respectable Magician off, but his comments only boiled his blood and made him fly into a rage.

“I will make you pay for all of this! I swear!”

# Chapter 16 – Stay Alert Even In The Face Of A Beautiful Woman

---

Busca's slightly plump face glanced at Anthony's Magic Cottage in a cold manner. Just as he was about to return to his shop, he noticed a muscular and healthy man walking along the street from the corner of his eye.

The man donned shiny, metal armour with a polished sword hanging on his waist quietly sitting in its scabbard and a travel bag on his back. With all that equipment, he seemed to be going on an adventure. As their eyes made contact, the man stopped momentarily and nodded with a smile.

“Ayton.” Since the muscular man was a regular customer of his magic shop, Busca knew that he was a Mercenary Hunter. Busca smiled asking, “Are you going on another mission? Have you prepared all your equipment? Although my shop is temporarily closed due to a minor incident, I'll still give you special discounts on account of our friendship.”

Despite not having the mood to open for business, Busca had no reason to reject this opportunity to earn some money.

In his words, Busca implied that he was doing Ayton a favour. Unlike ordinary equipment, magic scrolls were a necessity for Hunters like him. Any ordinary magic store wouldn't have many magic scrolls in their stock, and the only store which can produce enough magic scrolls to meet the demand of the Mercenaries is Busca's Magic Store.

However, Ayton shook his head, “I won’t be troubling you, thank you. I’ve prepared adequate equipment.”

“Adequately prepared? Including magic scrolls?” Busca was stunned.

Ayton patted his backpack, “I have just bought 11 of those. It could last me for several missions.”

“Don’t tell me that you bought those magic scrolls from Morgan’s Magic Store in Stardust Avenue?” Busca questioned him. [11 magic scrolls costs 50 silver coins. Damn! If I hadn’t closed my shop, he would have definitely bought them from me!]

“Why would I travel so far?” Ayton chuckled. His face revealed an expression of ridicule as he pointed in the direction of Anthony’s Magic Cottage, “Now, Anthony’s Magic Cottage is able to supply sufficient magic scrolls daily. Furthermore, they are selling it at the low price of 48 copper coins each and are giving one free for every 10 purchased. From now on, I have decided to purchase magic scrolls from Anthony’s Magic Cottage.”

“What?” Busca couldn’t contain his astonishment, “How is it possible for that small shop to produce so many magic scrolls?”

“Apparently, the level two Magician from the shop mastered the technique of carving magic scrolls. Thus, they are able to produce 30 magic scrolls daily, which is more than enough to meet the demand.” A hint of condescension could be detected in Ayton’s

voice. It is known on the streets that the level two Magician used dozens of magic scrolls to defeat Busca's son, Carrey. This incident only acted as free advertisement for Ye Chui's magic scrolls. It made many people believe in its quality. In addition, the current promotion only gave people more reason to buy from them.

Noticing Busca's surprised look on his face, Ayton scoffed softly and left shortly after.

Busca couldn't believe the entire situation as he frowned. When Ye Chui took out the 100 magic scrolls during the battle, Busca thought that he bought them from somewhere else at a high price. But now, he believes that he crafted those scrolls, but in only three days? 30 magic scrolls daily... The talent he possessed was simply unbelievable. With their current sale going on, the entire thing will be so lucrative for their shop!

Suddenly, Busca's small eyes lit up with a callous glimmer. He had thought of a brilliant idea. As the thought slowly engulfed his mind, an evil grin surfaced.

---

A few days later

"Debbie, I'm going out for a short while." Ye Chui shouted as he walked into the shop through the backyard. He was wearing a black robe with a special sharp hat perched on the top of his head. This attire was known to be the standard dressing for a Magician.

Debbie was discussing a business deal with two women who live nearby. They planned to pool their money together to purchase 10 magic scrolls since the promotion was still ongoing. However, Debbie did not find the arrangement agreeable and told them that they couldn't pool their money together to purchase 10 magic scrolls and that they can only make the purchases individually. She also mentioned that pooling their money would only make the promotion invalid.

Just as she was bargaining with the middle-aged women, she paused on hearing Ye Chui's words. Debbie then beckoned to the aunties and said to Ye Chui, "Hammer, where do you plan to go?"

"I am going out to buy some more magic ink and parchment. We also need more goose feather pens." Ye Chui explained. These things were considered magic equipment and were only sold at the Magic Guild. Since the Magic Guild only sells magic equipment to Magicians, Ye Chui put on the Magician's robe and hat to display his profession.

Debbie got a little worried and added on, "I'll accompany you."

"It's okay, Busca wouldn't dare to do anything funny to me in broad daylight," Ye Chui replied in a relaxed tone. From memory, Busca wasn't easy to get along with. Although Ye Chui had offended him in the past, he hadn't done anything harmful to Ye Chui in the past fortnight. Having the sun up only reinforces Ye Chui's confidence that there was no threat.

Debbie pondered and shared the same sentiment with Ye Chui, "All right then, but make it quick."

Debbie turns around to continue bargaining with the impatient customers but quickly realises something wasn't right. She turned back to Ye Chui, "Why haven't you left?"

Ye Chui reached his hand out to Debbie and muttered shyly, "I have no money."

Even though it's just magic ink and parchment, it's still better to get extra money just in case.

Debbie pulled out a purse from her pocket and dug out 20 silver coins to pass to Ye Chui. Parchment and magic ink were frequently used magic equipment in Anthony's Magic Cottage. When Old George stocked up on magic equipment in the past, 20 silver coins was just enough for 400 parchments, 2 bottles of magic ink and a goose feather pen.

Ye Chui was perspiring. He asked, "Can I get a little more? I would like to take a look at other places. Maybe I will come across something useful."

"Where do you intend to go?" Debbie stared at Ye Chui with her big round eyes, with a faint suspicion that he wanted to drink with girls.

The two women teased her with wide grins on their faces, "Debbie, don't be so petty with Hammer. Be careful that you might chase him away. He may look for another girl.."



“Exactly. Girls should be magnanimous, right Hammer?”

Debbie grumbled some inaudible words and then reluctantly took another silver coin out of her purse and passed it to Ye Chui, “Don’t spend all of it. I will check how much is left after you come back.”

Since his reincarnation, he estimated based on the price of goods from his world that one silver coin was equivalent to \$100. [Isn’t bringing \$100 out for shopping a little too pathetic? Didn’t we just extort... I mean, earn 100 gold coins? What’s more, what we took isn’t a small amount! It’s a million dollars! So, why does she still have to be so stingy?]

[But the most important thing right now is...]

Beads of sweat started to form on Ye Chui’s forehead as he looked at Debbie. “You expect there to be remaining change? How much?”

“99 copper coins,” Debbie replied with a straight face.

Ye Chui retorted, “...Why don’t you just give me a copper coin instead then?”

Debbie’s expression then became more serious and growled, “Then there wouldn’t be any change.”

“ ... ”

Ye Chui was speechless as to how stingy Debbie was. It seems like he has to prepare a strongbox in the future to save his own share of money. As he left Anthony's Magic Cottage with the 21 silver coins in his hands, the two aunties started laughing loudly. Their laughter agitated Debbie and she slammed the table and warned, “If you want the promotion to apply, you have to purchase the magic scrolls individually! Otherwise, I'll refuse the transaction!”

As he heard the loud roar from his little junior sister vibrate through the air, Ye Chui shook his head. Remembering Old George's instructions, he couldn't help but feel worried. [I can't imagine what I would have to go through if I married her...]

Of course, marriage was still far for Ye Chui. Both Ye Chui and Debbie were only 15 years old. It's far too early for them to get married.

As he walked through the streets, the beautiful sunshine of the magic world improved Ye Chui's mood. After having studied both Intermediate and Advanced Magic Language painstakingly to no avail, after having flipped through both books countless times only to try again, it was no surprise that he was in a foul mood. He felt more relaxed walking outside – perhaps he should take his time instead of being too anxious about learning the Magic Languages.

Although this world was far more dangerous than the previous, a blissful and beautiful life is still worth the wait, isn't it?

Ye Chui remembered the two-storey building he saw at the side of the second road intersection. He was pleasantly surprised by it, and would always subconsciously stop in his tracks to admire it.

The building was called the Spring Arrival Institute.

The spring flower has a very special meaning – sex. So it means that Spring Arrival Institute was a brothel...

Feminine, alluring giggles could always be heard on the second storey. Near one of the windows on that floor, there was an unconstrained woman kissing around. What Ye Chui saw was against his moral values. He couldn't help but think to himself, [I shall just stay here and see how unrestrained those prostitutes can be.]

As Ye Chui was too engrossed in criticising those girls who had no sense of shame to the extent of being oblivious of the surroundings, he didn't notice that the carriage which had been following him from the avenue, pulled up behind him.

The shadow of the car jolted Ye Chui from his thoughts. As he turned around, he reached for the magic wand at his waist, but unfortunately, he was not as swift as that of a muscular Swordsman. Quinn, a level two Swordsman struck by Ye Chui's 'Lightning' magic spell previously, covered his mouth at an incredible speed. Quinn also quickly restrained both his hands and pulled him into the carriage.

From this incident, we must learn the importance of taking

preventive measures when looking at pretty women...

# Chapter 17 – I Will Show You What It Means To Be The Father Of Studies

---

Ye Chui was dragged onto the carriage. He did not have time to react or retaliate as the pain around his neck caused him to lose his consciousness.

It was obvious that Quinn was the culprit.

After some time, Ye Chui woke up, feeling dizzy and dazed. A splash of wet and cold poured over him as a bucket of ice water was emptied on his head. His body was alerted and he jumped up. In his previous life, he was one of the best hackers and always worked in darkness – thus he had always been vigilant.

The moment after he jumped to his feet he was greeted with a long sword to his neck.

Quinn was the one wielding the sword, while Locke held an empty bucket in his hands. Unsurprisingly, Busca stood behind the two of them.

“Where am I?” Ye Chui asked as he reached out his hand to his waist.

“You’re in a place where no one can find you.” Busca chuckled maniacally. He glanced at Ye Chui’s moving hand, “Don’t bother trying to find your magic wand, I’ve already burned it in the fire pit. I’ve also confiscated the 21 silver coins from you as the first

instalment of the debt you owe.”

Ye Chui grasped the more important piece of information – the 21 coins being only the ‘first instalment’. He turned his head and fixed his sight on a table and chair, as well as a stack of parchment and a bottle of ink that sat atop the table, all in the corner of the dark room. Of course, there was also the goose feather pen.

“You want to confine me to help you carve magic scrolls?” Ye Chui immediately guessed Busca’s intention. At the same time, he heaved a sigh of relief. [Seems like Busca isn’t planning to kill me out of hatred. There is still hope as long as I’m alive.]

“You are actually intelligent, unlike what most people say. No wonder you are able to carve more than 100 magic scrolls in just three days.” Busca spoke in a cold voice. “If that’s the case, I won’t beat around the bush. I will guarantee you and your little sister’s life as long as you carve 30 magic scrolls every day for me. You know that Debbie is a mere level two Swordsman and it would be a piece of cake to harm her.”

Ye Chui was inexplicably angry at Busca and warned, “If you hurt her, you can expect an unpayable consequence.”

“Hehe.” Since a Magician without a magic wand posed no threat to him, Busca continued to threaten Ye Chui indifferently. Even if Ye Chui had his magic wand with him, he was no match for the two level two Swordsmen in the cramped room. Busca gave an evil smile and resumed, “Here is the deal: as long as you follow our instructions, everything will be fine. Once you have paid off all your debt, I will let you go.”

Ye Chui knew for sure that there won't come a day when the debt will be paid off, but he still questioned Busca, "When will I finish paying off the debt?"

"One year, two years, or maybe even three... when I'm satisfied." Busca replied greedily while he smirked. He beckoned to Locke and Quinn before walking out of the room with both of them following closely behind, slamming the door on their way out.

Outside the room was a dim corridor. Expressing his satisfaction on his plump face, he assigns the two level two Swordsmen with an important task, "Guard him carefully. Make sure he submits 30 magic scrolls every day and be on your guard, he is bound to try something funny." Busca thought of how his son was attacked with magic scrolls while he ordered. His voice turned lower, "This little fella is extremely cunning."

"Mr Busca, I don't get it. This boy is a mere level two Magician. Why don't we just kill him now? Why bother taking the trouble to confine him? A magic scroll can at most be sold for around 50 copper coins," Quinn complained. His hatred for Ye Chui runs as deep as the scar he left on his face with the 'lightning' magic spell he cast some time ago.

"What do you know?" Busca stared at Quinn, "This little boy has exceptional talent in carving magic scrolls and his speed is comparable to that of Intermediate and Advanced Magicians. When a Magician reaches the intermediate or advanced stage, why would they bother themselves with carving them? So, this little boy is considered a treasure. By confining him and forcing him to

carve magic scrolls for us, we would be rich. If we confine him for a year, he would be able to carve 10000 magic scrolls and that would be 50 gold coins – more than both your lives added together!”

Busca’s explanation lit Quinn and Locke’s eyes up. An ordinary Magician in the elementary stage could at most carve 10 magic scrolls daily, while Ye Chui was indeed extremely unusual, his output triple of that.

Busca then snorted, “As for the 100 gold coins Debbie conned off of me, I will make sure Debbie returns it all. But for now, let us focus on Ye Chui.”

“Mr Busca, you can trust us. We will ensure that the little boy will have no chance to escape.” Locke and Quinn assured Busca hurriedly.

A stale atmosphere lingered in the small black room, which was probably less than 20 square metres in size. In the room was a bed with linen that stank, a bedside table with the necessary magic equipment to carve magic scrolls and a magic lamp which lit up the room with a pale yellow light. On the other side of the room, there was other worthless junk: a worn-out wooden crate infested with healthy, fat termites, a vase filled home to spiders and webs and finally an old black iron suit rusted to uselessness.

He was clearly in a storeroom. The worthless copper and iron junk pieces littered in the corners were not cleared when Busca decided to confine Ye Chui to this room.



In reality, those pieces of junk were not useful to Ye Chui who is only a weak Magician with trashy skills.

Ye Chui quickly looked around the room and came up with a conclusion. [There's no way I can escape this room with my current skills.]

Two level two Swordsmen guarded the door of the room; a tiny window located on one of the walls in a high position was only used for ventilation. The four surrounding walls and the ceiling of the room were made with strong granite – there was no other way out.

He came to settle with reality and turned and looked at the bedside table.

He is a Magician but is unable to cast any spells without a wand. The strongest weapon he could use right now was the magic scrolls.

From his understanding, the might of the five basic magic scrolls would not deal much damage to the small room and would definitely not guarantee him a successful escape. Unlike previously when he threw dozens of magic scrolls at Carrey to ensure a victory, they can only do so much in such a small space. The only way was to research and carve stronger magic scrolls than the basic ones.

The logic behind this was simple.

However, in order to research stronger magic scrolls, he first has to accurately grasp Intermediate and Advanced Magic Language.

Learning Magic Language was indeed difficult and no one would think that Ye Chui could learn the remaining 27 magic symbols without a master. As such, Busca could confine him to the room without worries, all the while providing him with the magic equipment needed for carving scrolls.

If it was some other level two Magician, they would be in despair and with no hope in sight.

However, Ye Chui wasn't desperate. His eyes even held a hint of excitement.

Although he was one of the best hackers in his previous life, it cannot be said that he had exceptional computer skills. In actuality, he was mostly forced to slowly improve his skills one step at a time due to certain circumstances.

In order to survive after being expelled from college due to his addiction to computer games, Ye Chui was forced to hone his hacking skills. He managed to join a hacking group after accomplishing something.

To make sure that he could put food on his own plate, he had to start a small hacking career. After gaining some recognition, he was noticed and thereby recruited by a hacking organisation. Unfortunately, after only two months of, the organisation was

raided and only Ye Chui managed to escape. With the organisation data in the hands of law enforcement, he became widely known throughout the internet as the world's most wanted terrorist. Being in such a precarious situation pushed him to focus on improving his skills even further. Although he evaded the authorities time after time, his fame warranted him more unnecessary attention from hostile hacking organisations. These organisations issued endless challenges, making him improve his hacking skills even more.

Just like that, one step at a time, he eventually became one of the best hackers.

If he was said to possess some kind of 'gift', it definitely wouldn't be his hacking talent, but it would be his tenacity since he was forced to compete with others to survive.

Now he was turning desperate again.

“Damn all of you. I will show you what it means to be the Father of Studies.”

# Chapter 18 – The Technique Of Comprehending Magic Symbols

---

Boom!

A half-completed magic scroll on the bedside table exploded and the smoke from the explosion blackened Ye Chui's face. He tried to dodge reactively, but he fell on his hind pathetically. As he recovered from the fall, he scratched his head doubtfully.

[Why didn't it work? By doubling the element absorption array of the flame scroll, the charm should have worked, but why did both magic scrolls explode halfway through carving? Even the part of the magic scroll that exploded was symmetrical... what exactly went wrong?]

Ye Chui was still carving magic scrolls.

Instead of carving the array characters that were on a magic scroll template, he carved the magic matrix of the scroll, which he edited. This was the magic matrix used to create flame magic scrolls that had double the might – in other words, Ye Chui was creating his very own spell.

A spell that's self-created by a mere level two Magician?

If others were to learn about this, they would treat it as a joke – because it was impossible. Self-created magic spells could only be made by advanced level magicians. Elementary and intermediate

level Magicians dared not even dream of creating a magic spell of their own.

However, Ye Chui wouldn't think that way. Soon after learning a programming language, he tried cracking a bank's security system. To him, nothing was impossible in this world, as long as he was willing to try. Although most of his attempts would fail, he would slowly and patiently learn from it.

Dum, Dum!

Heavy, deep thuds knocked on the door. Quinn's loud and angry voice vibrated through, "You better watch out! You have already wasted more than 10 pieces of parchment. Do you think that parchments are cheap? I'll come in and punch you if waste another piece!"

"Do you think that carving 30 magic scrolls in a day is child's play? There will always be waste parchment if I have to carve fast. If you are unhappy about it, you can go and complain to Busca!" Ye Chui was not intimidated by Quinn in the least and shouted back at him.

For Ye Chui, carving magic scrolls was indeed a simple feat, just like programming. With his expertise, he could achieve a 100% success rate. However, he was trying to research a new flame magic scroll, a stronger form. Wastage of the parchments was inevitable for such activity.

Quinn was disgruntled at Ye Chui's insubordination, but he shut

up after hearing the frustration in his voice.

Ye Chui shook his head and smiled. He leafed for a new parchment to continue carving the charm he was looking for. Expectedly, another loud 'boom' soon came.

Ye Chui has been confined in the small, black room for three days now. He carved 30 magic scrolls daily accordingly to Busca's demands.

Initially, the time he used to carve one magic scroll was 20 minutes, so it would be 10 hours for 30 scrolls a day, but due to the pressure laid on him in the past two days, his speed increased – he could carve one magic scroll in just 15 minutes. The extra time he had, he used for researching other stronger scrolls.

Even then, the effect was only minimal.

Although he firmly believed that the magic matrix that he researched had no flaw, accidents would always occur during the carving process. [What in the world is wrong?]

Another failed attempt left his face in another layer of black ash. Ye Chui sighed as he walked over to the basin and used a wet towel to clean his powdered face.

Ye Chui had to cherish every drop of water as Quinn would only deliver a full pail once every three days. The heat and dampness of his little prison made him feel painfully uncomfortable, but he had

to endure it. He never took a bath, only wiping his body with the wet towel before returning it to the basin.

Just then, he glanced at his reflection in the water. The droplets that fell from the wet towel created ripples on his reflection in the basin.

Soon after, a ray of inspiration suddenly flashed in his mind.

[I have doubled the element absorption array in the magic scrolls, yet the magic matrix still isn't able to deliver the result that I want. The fault seems to stem from the imperfect integration of the elements from the two element arrays. The absence of a catalyst to make both elements integrate was the reason for the explosions. Just like me and my reflection in the basin, two entities cannot integrate to form one unified subject!]

That being said, the magic matrix which he researched from the start had no hope of success?

[No!] Ye Chui's eyes lit up suddenly. [In theory, my magic matrix had no mistake. The absence of a catalyst to integrate the two different elements was the reason for the failures. If I remember correctly, there is a magic symbol in Intermediate Magic Language that is able to act as a catalyst...]

Having read through the teaching materials for Intermediate Magic Language and Advanced Magic Language many times, Ye Chui was already familiar with all the magic symbols. However, he was familiar with only their forms, not their meanings. Although a

long introductory write-up was given for each magic symbol, they were too complicated and disorganised for anyone to be able to understand.

The form and meaning of each symbol are two different entities, thus it's impossible to grasp the use of the magic symbols – when carving the magic scrolls, it is possible to carve the form of the magic symbol, but the magic scroll will be totally useless if one doesn't fully comprehend the accurate meaning of each symbol.

However, Ye Chui suddenly mastered the technique of comprehending magic symbols.

As he pondered momentarily, he took a parchment and continued carving the flame magic scroll.

Ye Chui added a magic symbol which would act as a catalyst in between the two element absorption arrays. If his understanding of the magic symbol matched the true meaning of it, the magic array in the scroll will not fail.

The number of magic symbols on the parchment gradually increased.

Soon, Ye Chui was able to pass the point where his scrolls would explode.

The magic symbol he added was effective!



In other words, Ye Chui has fully grasped the meaning of this magic symbol!

However, his excitement didn't last long. Suddenly, a loud 'boom' could be heard as the parchment once again exploded in his hands. The fire that erupted from the explosion seemed to be mightier than before. Although Ye Chui managed to dodge the explosion out of caution, he was still seriously burned. Waves of painful burning sensations could be felt on his face, but he was not discouraged. Instead, his face broke into a wide grin. His once again blackened face coupled with his sparkling white teeth made him look somewhat comical.

The failure this time proved that his array still had room for improvement.

Adopting his former thought process, he knew that some other magic symbols needed to be added to the magic scroll to coordinate it.

"I shall learn magic symbols through practising. Sooner or later, I'll understand every single symbol."

Ye Chui found a shortcut that allowed him to study all the magic symbols in a short time frame, and the best thing is that he didn't need to worry about the amount of parchment and magic ink that will go to waste in the process.

As Ye Chui casually wiped his blackened face, he saw that the stack of parchment had dwindled in numbers. Feeling excited, he

yelled in the direction of the door, “Oi, tell Busca that there isn’t much parchment left. Get him to bring more of it over. Also, get me two more bottles of magic ink.”

Quinn was left speechless, “...”

# Chapter 19 – Iron Man, We Shall See If You Are Afraid

---

Ye Chui mastered the technique of comprehending magic symbols, which could only be used by him.

Magic spells and programming, although they seemed to be two entirely different entities, are actually linked in some ways – at least in Ye Chui's perspective. Without taking into account the true meaning of each magic symbol, the logical relationship between magic symbols was identical to the relationship between programming and viruses, which he was very familiar with in his previous life.

Ye Chui's comprehension of the five magic symbols enabled him to create many magic spells. However, the magic spells created using these five magic symbols were elementary. In order to create advanced magic spells, Ye Chui would have to comprehend intermediate and advanced magic symbols. Without the supplement of intermediate and advanced magic symbols, there would be problems with the magic spells.

The only downside was that his method of trial and error would inevitably result in wastage. Fortunately, such wastage was currently the least of Ye Chui's worries. Despite the parchment costing a few copper coins per piece, Ye Chui was able to use as many as he wanted. Busca, at the same time also didn't mind the wastage, as long as there is an overall benefit for him.

[Any comments? If you can't bear to spend a few more copper coins, go ahead and kill me. I'm your hostage anyway.]

Of course, Busca couldn't bear to kill his hostage – the production of 30 magic scrolls daily would earn him a substantial amount of income. Even when Quinn complained to Busca that he discovered Ye Chui using the parchment as toilet paper when he cleaned the toilet in the morning, Busca chose to remain silent and brought a few rolls of superior toilet paper from the big firm...

After being confined for one week, Busca spoke to Ye Chui again.

“It seems like your little sister Debbie misses you a lot. She came to my magic store thrice in the past week to create trouble. If this goes on, I can't assure you that I wouldn't lay my hands on her. You know, the business at my store has already reduced because of her,” Busca stared sinisterly at Ye Chui through the ventilation gap of the metal door while threatening him. “So, I want to let you know how bad my mood is currently!”

Ye Chui stared back at the plump face on the other side of the metal door. Suddenly, he thought of something and walked to the table. He used the magic ink and wrote something on the parchment before passing it to Busca through the gap of the door, “Pass this to Debbie. I assure you that she will stop harassing you after reading it.”

Busca froze for a moment, and then carefully took the parchment from him, before opening it. Written on the parchment was Ye Chui's letter to Debbie.

“Debbie, I met a beggar recently and gave him a copper coin out

of sympathy, only to realise that he was a great wandering Magician. He said that my skeletal structure was an interesting and rare find, and accepted me as his disciple to inherit his mantle, so as to maintain world peace. Due to his tight schedule, he demanded that I leave with him immediately. Since I didn't have the time to notify you then, I am now taking a bit of my time to write you this letter. Trust me, I will be fine. I will return as a great Magician – your yet-to-be husband, Hammer.”

Busca flipped the parchment several times and repeatedly read the concise but humorous letter which he could not understand. After being convinced that the letter didn't contain any hidden messages from Ye Chui, Busca folded the parchment and slipped it into his pocket while sneering, “I guess you know your limits. Don't worry, as long as the girl does not create trouble at my shop, I will let her live peacefully.” After his comments, he turned around and started complaining about Ye Chui's frivolous behaviour, ‘It's just a letter, why must you use parchment? Do you think parchment is cheap? ...’

Bang, the ventilation gap of the metal door was shut.

Ye Chui clenched his fist and walked around the small black room restlessly. He imagined how anxious and angry Debbie would be when she found out that he was missing – she would carry the 50kg great sword angrily to confront Busca but to no desirable outcome. Old George was gone, so Ye Chui and Debbie were left all alone. Although the way Debbie carries her great sword often left him speechless and made him understand what it truly means to be a strong lady who can protect herself, she was just a lonely girl. [Did Debbie cry due to my disappearance, or go berserk because of the same reason, or will she be hungry since I'm not there to cook

noodles for her?...]

Debbie was Ye Chui's only kin ever since he reincarnated into this world. At the start, the affection he had towards Debbie was probably part of Hammer's memory, but after interacting with her for a period of time, Ye Chui has already regarded her as his own blood sister.

Hence, Ye Chui was furious.

For the past few days, Ye Chui had been wondering if Debbie was fine, but after Busca's news about Debbie only caused Ye Chui's anger to rocket to the top. Soon after, he managed to calm himself down as he knew that he needed to be level-headed at this point in time.

"I have already comprehended three magic symbols over the past few days, but it is still far from sufficient. Even if I could spare some parchment to produce intermediate and advanced magic scrolls, I might not be able to deal with the two level two Swordsmen, Quinn and Locke, in such a cramped space. And... I only have one chance."

Ye Chui started to think deeply about his predicament and tried to find hope in an escape. He simply sat on the floor and continued his brainstorming.

It was probably the letter that Debbie wrote which gave him a head start – he shifted his thoughts to the movies he watched in his previous life. Movies were not real, of course, but who could deny

the intelligence of the characters in the movies? If the lead character in a movie was imprisoned like Ye Chui, what would he do?

Following this thought process, all sorts of nonsensical movies flashed through his mind.

Just then, a faint glow, just like fireflies in the darkness, suddenly lit up his eyes. Following that, his eyes turned to the pile of scrap at the corner of this dilapidated storehouse: porcelain vases, broken boxes and a set of rusty battle armour. Having rummaged through those boxes the past few days, he knew that several insect-eaten animal skins were in there. Instantly, a flash of inspiration came into his mind. It was one of the coolest movies from his previous life; a movie called 'Iron Man'.

The leading character in the movie was imprisoned by terrorists when he developed a set of super battle armour using a pile of scrap before escaping. The plot was so dynamic that it gave Ye Chui some inspiration to work on. [It was impossible to develop a real-life Iron Man battle armour. Even if it was plausible, it was merely an interesting but unrealistic concept.] His expertise is writing programmes, but the development of the Iron Man battle armour requires the flawless coordination of computer controls and mechanical power. No matter how good is he at writing programmes, the lack of machinery would prevent him from producing the Iron Man battle armour.

In this fantasy world, magic spells are linked to programming in some way or another, but magic spells can affect almost everything.

So, this interesting concept could become a reality.

As Ye Chui's eyes fixated on the pile of scrap at the corner of the storehouse, a slight smile could be seen at the corners of his mouth.

“Let's see what you'll think of Iron Man.”



## Chapter 20 – The Battle Armour That Suddenly Stood Up

---

In recent times, the pedestrians walking past Anthony's Magic Cottage would often notice little Debbie sitting alone on the steps leading to the shop. The sight of a 15-year-old girl with a petite body carrying a 50 kg greatsword made her seem even more miserable and lonely than she already was.

She would often daydream and the small face of hers would occasionally reveal a pathetic look, with her eyes staring at the other side of the street as if she was wishing for a certain person to emerge from there.

“Why isn't Hammer back yet? It's just so sad to see how much weight Debbie lost over this period of time. This is heart-wrenching. How can Hammer leave just like that?” Two aunties discussed softly as they looked at Debbie's silhouette from afar while they walked. They seemed to feel contempt against Hammer for having left without a word.

“What do you mean by ‘Hammer leaving like that’? Don't you already understand the whole story?” They tugged and pulled as their discussion went on. “Hammer was definitely captured. We all know that the boy is honest. How can we believe that some Magician accepted him as a disciple? It was obviously the doing of Busca, that cunning fox.”

“That makes sense. I recently heard that Busca's Magic Store has had a large influx of magic scrolls to sell. There's definitely something fishy here,” Another woman clearly suspected

something. “Poor Debbie, it isn’t a solution for her to continue waiting... It has been three months since Hammer has gone missing, right?”

“It has been exactly three months. Busca is so cruel. If he really did kidnap Hammer, how will Debbie get on with her life? Moreover, the City Lord’s Manor wouldn’t bother with such trivial matters. Maybe after a little more time, everything will be back to normal and Busca will release Hammer.”

The aunties ended their conversation with simultaneous sighs and walked away. They both guessed that Hammer was kidnapped by Busca and he probably had a low chance of returning.

With the great sword in her embrace, she remained in a daze.

A moment later, she fished a piece of paper from her arms; it was a parchment. It has been some time, so creases have already left their mark on the parchment, but it was generally well-kept. It was the letter which Ye Chui sent to Debbie through Busca three months ago. Of course, she didn’t know it was Busca who delivered the letter as she discovered it on the counter of Anthony’s Magic Cottage. The handwriting on the letter was familiar and she read the paragraph several times.

Debbie was furious when she first saw the letter, but her anger slowly turned into doubt, then worry, and then it gradually became the only source of hope for her. Deep within her, she did not fully believe what Ye Chui meant. [Hammer is such a dull boy, how can it be that a great Magician would treat him with regard? And what’s that about maintaining world peace? It would be good

if he no longer requires protection... But what can he do at this point?]

She could only place her hopes on this letter.

“Hammer, where are you? Can you come back quickly?”

Ye Chui had made all the preparations.

Around noon, Busca and his son, Carrey, departed the city in a carriage to Mt. Inta of Stan City’s suburbs.

Mt. Inta is a small hill; those magic beasts with astonishing destructive power would not appear there, and there are at most a few barbaric beasts that rest in the hill. However, in this era, beasts such as wild boars and bears do not pose any threat to Swordsmen. In short, Mt. Inta was a very safe hill.

A few years ago, Busca engaged in hunting, so he had a warehouse in the mountain which he uses as his secret residence.

During this period of time, Ye Chui guessed once that he was confined in Busca’s secret residence – the warehouse only had a ventilation gap the size of a fist, and he could occasionally hear birds chirping and see leaves fall from above. He deduced that he was confined in a manor surrounded by trees, but was unaware that the warehouse was located atop a hill.

The carriage stopped before a dense forest at the foot of the hill.

Busca jumped off the carriage and scanned the surroundings for any suspicious characters before entering the challenging, dense forest.

Carrey alighted soon after and tied the reins of the carriage to a thick tree, before following behind his father closely.

Compared to three months ago, Carrey looked much more dispirited. He had only just recovered from the wounds caused by Ye Chui's magic scrolls. Even the parts of his body and face which were burnt had completely healed after being treated by the infamous Light Priest. However, he did not have the energetic vigour which he possessed before. Due to the fact that he used the Protection of the War God, his rank of a level four Swordsman dropped to that of a level three Swordsman, and it was impossible for him to restore to his previous rank.

The worst thing was that the incident where he was humiliatingly defeated by a level two magician had spread around Stan City and he was now a laughing stock. His promising future as a guard of the City Lord's Manor went up in smoke. He was still donning the armour suit of the guards of City Lord's Manor, but it was badly damaged and no longer as shiny.

Carrey's father, who used to be proud of him now only berates him. It only made him more depressed.

The thought of the sly and evil Magician imprisoned in this place would summon an uncontrollable ball of fiery emotion within him whenever his father brought him along. He would grip his long sword tightly, with fantasies of teaching Ye Chui the harshest

lessons.

[If I were to battle him again, I definitely wouldn't lose...] Carrey adopted this mindset since losing the battle with Ye Chui.

What Carrey didn't know was that his opportunity was arriving soon.

"Boss, you're here," Deep within the dense forest was a piece of flattened land with a wooden cabin constructed atop it. Hearing footsteps, Locke quickly came out of the cabin. Busca would regularly make a trip to the cabin to collect the magic scrolls Ye Chui carved.

"How was the little boy for the past two days?" Busca wiped the sweat off his face. Although it was the start of autumn, the weather was still hot and dry.

"He hasn't been tricky these past two days and has managed to submit 30 magic scrolls punctually every day," Locke laughed. "It's just that he still wastes a few pieces of parchment."

"I wouldn't bother myself with the few pieces of parchment he wasted. Bring over those completed magic scrolls," Busca demanded. After taking a glance at the cramped and humid cabin, he decided not to enter. Locke then turned around and shouted to Quinn to pass the magic scrolls over to him.

Only simple furnishings were featured in the cabin. At a corner

was a staircase that leads to the basement, followed by a long corridor that ends at the room which Ye Chui was imprisoned in. Whilst he stood guard, Quinn drank alcohol to drown his sorrows. Hearing Locke shout, he muttered and kicked the metal door twice bam, bam violently. “Boss is here, pass me all the completed magic scrolls!”

As Locke shouted, Quinn stood up and tidied a box beside him. Ye Chui would deposit all the completed magic scrolls every night into the box through the ventilation gap. Just by estimation, there were at least 100 magic scrolls in the box. Quinn picked up the box and looked at the metal door suspiciously. There wasn't any response from the other side.

Feeling irritated, he kicked the door twice again and yelled, “Didn't you hear me?! Pass those completed scrolls to me!”

However, there was still no response.

Quinn, who was attacked before by Ye Chui's <Lightning> spell had a disfigured face. Filled with fury, he put down the wooden crate and opened the air vent and peeked inside, yelling angrily once more, “Don't act dumb! Pass all the scrolls to me, I will not repeat myself a fourth time!”

Once again, no reply came forth, as though the warehouse had no living thing within. In this small and narrow space, a clear yellow light shone the space. The magic lamp that illuminated the room displayed the clear sight of furniture next to the worn-out trash. But even with such a clear view, Quinn could not see Ye Chui at all.

[I delivered breakfast through the air vent this morning and he was still here. How could he have possibly disappeared?] Quinn's face was smeared with shock. The whole place was in a mountainous region, underground. The rocks around this warehouse were all hard; not something a Level 2 Magician can break through. So, how was it possible for him to escape?

After a short moment of hesitation, Quinn finally made the decision. He unsheathed the long sword on his waist and pulled out the key to open the iron door, cautiously walking in.

Three months of imprisoning Ye Chui in the room has infused the air with a foul odour. Tightly clenching onto his long sword, Quinn took a quick glance around the warehouse.

“Brat, where are you? Stop hiding!” Quinn roared as he moved towards the bed. [In this room, the only place a person can hide is under the bed.]

However, there was no one under the bed.

Quinn then thought of the pile of worn-out rubbish. He turned around to have a look.

His face was filled with astonishment as a rusty, broken and old, worn-out suit of armour that even Quinn would not bother himself with suddenly stood up!

## Chapter 21 – Killed By The Iron Swordsman's Flame

---

The set of battle armour that was dumped at the corner of the room used to be Carrey's many years ago. Made using the most ordinary black iron, the battle armour weighed at 10 kilogrammes and could protect all parts of the body. Back then, though he only owned it for a few months, Carrey begged his father for a new set of tin battle armour which was lighter and prettier.

Even if this clumsy battle armour could be sold, it would be worth at most a few copper coins – not much more than the price of scrap metal. Hence, Busca left the battle armour in the room, where it slowly rusted and truly became a pile of scrap metal. It was so worthless to him that he did not bother touching it even after spring cleaning.

[The rusty joint areas of the battle armour could render it useless. Even if it was usable, how can a weak Magician like Ye Chui unleash such strength while wearing it?]

But now, the battle armour has suddenly stood up right in front of Quinn's astonished eyes. Ye Chui was undoubtedly the one in the armour. Quinn then realised the absurdity of the rusty battle armour – the chestplate was covered with a layer of beast skin riddled with holes drilled by worms, the arms were wrapped with tattered pieces of leather and there was a porcelain vase also wrapped in thin strips of beast skin. This image was even more hilarious than the comedy that Quinn had watched.

Quinn's initial feeling of shock quickly evolved to that of slight



mockery. He could approximately guess what Ye Chui was about to do in that battle armour, but didn't sense that Ye Chui was of any threat to him; he only found it hilarious. Quinn then pointed his long sword at Ye Chui as he giggled, "Little rascal, do you intend to fight with me while wearing that piece of junk?"

"Actually, I would like to say something to taunt and ridicule you, then vent my anger later on when we fight," Ye Chui's muffled voice could be heard through the faceplate of the battle armour, "But I'm about to suffocate to death. In order to wear this set of battle armour which is one size bigger, I had no choice but to wrap a layer of beast skin around my body. Now, I perspire profusely. So... let's cut the crap and let the fun begin."

[What fun?]

[How would you like to begin?]

[What is fun to you?]

Very soon, Ye Chui made Quinn understand the true meaning of fun. It meant that he was about to have 'fun' torturing him.

Krrk, krrk

The rusty bearings of the joints of the battle armour only hindered the wearer's movement. Thus, a loud and jarring creaking sound complemented Ye Chui's movements. His left arm was very thick as it was covered with a layer of beast skin, and

within the beast skin was an old porcelain vase. The opening of the vase which was around the size of a fist was placed at the back of his hand, with a black and shiny opening directly aiming at Quinn.

Quinn was clueless and wasn't concerned about what Ye Chui was up to. Ye Chui had a magic wand in his hand when he knocked Quinn unconscious using magic spells. Now, he is but a Magician without a magic wand, one that is seen by others as an easy and harmless prey.

Of course, Quinn wasn't complacent.

The thought of Ye Chui possibly tossing countless magic scrolls like what he did to Carrey flashed in Quinn's mind. Even if Ye Chui did the exact same thing, Quinn wouldn't be afraid as the room was very cramped; Quinn could instantly dash to Ye Chui to knock him unconscious or even kill him. In fact, when Quinn got hold of the news of Carrey's plight, he secretly mocked at his stupidity – the result of the battle wouldn't be so bad if Quinn was the one fighting instead.

(Icicle:....it's the bad guy minion disease, quite prolific)

Therefore, Quinn remained alerted and arrogant. He grasped his long sword and dashed towards Ye Chui, in preparation to knock him unconscious.

He moved, but Ye Chui moved as well.

Quinn was significantly faster than that of Ye Chui's and he barely needed a second to reach Ye Chui, who was standing just two metres away.

However, Ye Chui only needed a tenth of a second to move his finger.

His left pinkie finger in the battle armour moved.

Suddenly, a large flame burst out of the flower vase which was tied to his left arm.

The huge flame instantly engulfed the eager and confident Quinn.

If one were to open the bracer on Ye Chui's left hand right now, they would be able to see a parchment congealed into the form of strings, just like wires connecting Ye Chui's fingers to the opening of the flower vase. Each strip of the parchment had magic symbols carved onto it. They served as messengers, allowing Ye Chui to use his fingers to activate the magic scrolls in the flower vase.

Since parchment could be used as a carrier for magic symbols, it behaved like a lead wire. Through the activation of magic power by Ye Chui's fingers, the magic scrolls in the flower vase would be ignited. It was probably the first time that someone discovered that parchment could be used for other purposes, besides carving magic scrolls.

A scarlet red raging flame burst out of the flower vase. Its power was much more destructive compared to the flame magic scrolls that Anthony's Magic Cottage sells. Judging from the extent of the rage, this kind of flame was at least four times more formidable.

This was Ye Chui's hard-earned result, a culmination of the effort he invested within the last three months, where he had painstakingly managed to understand 17 more magic symbols out of 32, bringing the total number to 22. Ye Chui had actually designed a flame magic spell that was multitudes stronger, but these magic spells could not be borne by a piece of parchment.

The flame erupted from the porcelain vase and spread throughout the cramped space. Furthermore, the high speed at which the flame erupted from the mouth of the vase trailed, sweeping towards Quinn.

“Ahhh...!”

Quinn's pitiful cries which had a hint of sorrow could be heard from within the raging flames. His clothes were instantly obliterated, revealing his reddish skin. His hair, eyebrows, eyelashes and beard singed while his eyes disintegrated. Quinn came to a stop, brandishing his long sword in pain and screaming at the same time. The originally humid and foul-smelling room was suddenly filled with the stench of burnt flesh.

The flame only remained ablaze for a short while, before it was extinguished.

Ye Chui once again moved his left pinkie and the flame erupted again.

There was a total of five magic scrolls in the porcelain vase. Through the connection between the 'lead wires' made from parchment and the fingers of his left hand, the magic scrolls could be activated to be shot out of the vase like projectiles. The temperature within the vase wasn't high; hence the magic scrolls could be preserved. The hungry flame ate Quinn and his cries became even more pathetic. Quinn tried to hack Ye Chui blindly, but he quickly conceded and retreated backwards from the unbearable pain. He crashed into the table that accompanied Ye Chui for three months, then collapsed to the ground alongside its splinters.

Ye Chui moved his left middle finger and the flame erupted for the third time.

For the past three months, Ye Chui has had to endure the terrible living conditions; the foul-smelling room, Quinn's incessant scolding, being treated like a slave... Ye Chui's heart was filled with anger. In his previous life, Ye Chui was a hacker who stuck to his principles, but that did not mean that he was a good person. A hacker is still a hacker no matter what. Ye Chui did not have the best morals and ethics. He openly wished for Quinn to perish in his flames.

Quinn eventually stopped moving. His whole body was now charcoal black, contrasting with his glowing red sword.

Ye Chui confirmed that Quinn was dead.

Ye Chui wanted to continue roasting Quinn, but when he moved his thumb and index finger, the flames did not erupt from the vase. It seems like the flame in the vase lost its effect after the two scrolls within it were burnt.

Ye Chui rammed his arm into the wall at the side and the porcelain vase shattered. He flung his arm to remove the shattered pieces of the flower vase and the tattered beast skin before walking towards Quinn with caution.

Quinn was thoroughly dead.

No one would be able to survive such an intense flame... Considering that this is a fantasy world, there shouldn't be any level two Swordsman who could survive this.

Ye Chui rotated his wrist and then bent down strenuously to take the bright red long sword from Quinn's burnt hand. By now, there were footsteps rushing to the room. [Locke is probably dashing down after hearing the commotion...]

Ye Chui walked towards the door with much difficulty.

Of course, the set of battle armour could do more than shooting flames out.

“Next...”

# Chapter 22 – The Lightning Attack Of The Iron Swordsman

---

“Quinn! Quinn! What happened?!”

Hasty footsteps coupled with Locke’s shouting reverberated through the halls outside the room. Standing at the entrance of the room, Ye Chui grabbed the glowing red long sword. His posture was slightly weird – his two legs were slightly bent and spread apart, one forward and the other backwards, while his chest and hips were pushed forward. It seems like Ye Chui was preparing to receive a powerful blow from his enemy.

Indeed, Ye Chui was about to receive a formidable attack from his opponent.

He calculated the time quietly and waited for Locke’s shadow to peek around the corridor, while his left pinkie moved at the same time.

Each finger on his right hand had a parchment-based lead wire he made which connects to the flame magic scrolls within the flower vase on his right arm. Similarly, all five fingers of his right hand were connected to other parts of his body via the parchment-based lead wires.

The lead wire from his right pinkie traces to his chest area.

A parchment was pasted on his chest and two magic scrolls were

hidden under it.

In a few seconds, Locke's silhouette finally appeared before Ye Chui. Locke obviously had a long sword in his hands. When Locke noticed someone, he immediately made an alerted and preventive move.

Locke had no clue who was under the suit of battle armour but knew that the battle armour was made for Carrey. The sight of the strange and large armoured opponent made him more vigilant.

However, his vigilance was of no use here.

Ye Chui moved his left pinkie.

A bright light emitted through the beast skin on Ye Chui's chest and became a flash of lightning.

The two scrolls under the beast skin at his chest were four times stronger than the original lightning magic scrolls.

Ye Chui modified the original lightning magic scrolls to the extent that its usage would unleash four times the original destructive power. That means that he had twice of that power ready to use.

With Ye Chui's programming experience as a hacker, he was able to modify the lightning scrolls he created to a certain extent. Normally, ordinary lightning scrolls would be activated to send out



uncontrollable lightning scattering about randomly. However, Ye Chui managed to create this new lightning scroll using his own created functional array, which has the ability to direct the lightning in the desired path.

Taking a stance to balance himself from the recoil scrolls' eruption, the lightning instantly flashed through the narrow and dank prison cell, illuminating all in its path. Locke was already panic-stricken, and this move only worsened it.

An uncontrollable scream that spoke of torture emerged from within the blinding strike of lightning. Flames were then hailed forth from Ye Chui, relentlessly surrounding and blasting Locke's body.

If one were to look from a distance, it would seem that a bright blue fist of lightning struck from Ye Chui's chest out of nowhere. Undaunted by Locke's long sword, the lightning clouted him and forced him to jump from the ground.

When the prison cell door swung open, Locke's body flew against the wall from the impact.

The sizzling and zapping sounds created from the sparks accompanied the cracks of bones shattering. Even the renovated cave seemed to vibrate a little, with a few pebbles and dirt dusting from the ceiling.

Such a jolt of power would certainly kill anyone instantly.

It seemed like before Locke hit the wall, he had already been electrocuted.

Ye Chui did not know the exact strength of the current produced from two intermediate lightning scrolls combined. However, he could estimate from the terrifying power that the scrolls displayed could without a doubt electrocute a person. As long as the current invades and conquers the body, it should fry all organs within.

Even with the thick animal skin he had on with his armour suit, Ye Chui could still feel a numb and uncomfortable feeling when the scrolls were used. On top of that, the recoil from using the scrolls forced Ye Chui back several centimetres and left him gasping for breath.

Ye Chui's eyes lands on Locke's lifeless body, his skin scattered with burn marks as white smoke oozed out of him.

[He's dead.] Ye Chui concluded and walked off. Out of the prison cell was a corridor of at least 10 meters long, dimly lit by magic lamps attached to the walls. At the centre of this corridor stood Busca, frozen from shock.

Initially, Busca was following closely behind Locke in this underground passageway. When he walked to the middle, Busca could already see Locke opening the prison cell door. A light then flashed spontaneously, engulfing Locke. In the blink of an eye, he had hit the wall where he now laid dead. The scene turned Busca's body stiff from fear. His whole body was rooted to the ground.

Busca was forced back into sobriety only when he saw the big suit of armour walking out of the prison cell. Seeking to live another day, Busca turned around and ran towards the exit.

Wearing the set of clumsy and heavy battle armour, Ye Chui had no chance of catching up to Busca. Fortunately, he didn't have to give chase. Ye Chui raised his right arm and aimed the opening of the second porcelain vase, also wrapped in a layer of beast skin, at the fleeing Busca.

Ye Chui's right hand still tightly held the bright red long sword. In the next moment, he put the long sword down and against the wall and tore off a part of the beast skin on his right arm to expose a fine thread that was tied to a piece of shattered porcelain. Ye Chui, in the battle armour, clumsily grabbed ahold of the piece of porcelain before giving it a hard tug.

The fine thread that used to belong to the tattered bedsheets he slept in was connected to a particular magic scroll within the porcelain vase. Previously, the only reason the magic scrolls within the porcelain vase could be activated by finger movement is because of the gap at the bottom of the vase. Now, the porcelain vase attached to his right arm was perfectly aligned, and a fine thread was the only means to activate the magic scroll within it.

Ye Chui activated a magic scroll within the porcelain vase when he pulled the fine thread.

It was a double gale magic scroll.

The strong gale blasted into the cramped hallway from the mouth of the porcelain vase. The porcelain vase cracked soon after.

Ye Chui did not have to worry because following the release of the gale magic scroll and the cracking of the porcelain vase, the high pressure exerted on the objects contained in the porcelain vase caused them to bolt out as well.

Indeed, this was Ye Chui's self-made artillery shell.

He used the power of the gale to launch the artillery shell.

This simple and crude looking shell was laughable in terms of appearance. It was quickly approaching Busca, who was clambering between the walls to save his own life...

# Chapter 23 – Iron Swordsman's Artillery Attack

---

The artillery shell, which was just a small porcelain vase wrapped in a layer of beast skin with strips of paper attached to balance it appeared for the first time in this magic world. The novelty of the concept of an artillery shell seemed incompatible with the magic aura surrounding it.

For the past three months, Ye Chui had rummaged through the pile of trash in the prison cell and took whatever was useful to him. Fortunately, he found a porcelain bottle which was used to store medicine within the stack of tattered beast skins. The medicine in the bottle had already dried up and rotted, but the porcelain bottle was exactly what Ye Chui needed.

The small porcelain bottle happened to be big enough for one magic scroll to be stored inside, and that magic scroll was four times stronger than an ordinary flame magic scroll!

Of the five magic scrolls which he had mastered carving, the lightning magic scroll was the one with the highest lethality. In reality, the flame magic scroll had the strongest destructive power overall for its ease of control.

When a flame suddenly erupts within a cramped space, an intense explosive force would occur due to the high pressure.

The power of one flame magic scroll is equivalent to that of a firecracker.

While Ye Chui was trying to stuff the flame magic scroll into the porcelain bottle, he also added some broken pieces of the porcelain vase. Then, he tightly sealed the bottle and left a fine thread behind to be used as a trigger.

The fine thread was tied to Ye Chui's wrist. When the porcelain vase flew into the air from the thrust, the fine thread would activate the magic scroll within the vase. Due to his deep understanding of magic scrolls, he was able to do things that many Magicians couldn't even achieve in their lives. For example, creating a magic matrix on the magic scroll that could be activated by simply pulling at one corner of a scroll.

The strange-looking porcelain bottle, which had strips of paper dangling from it flew towards Busca at lightning speed.

At that moment, Busca had already reached the end of the corridor. While he was trying to drag his plump body up the stairs, he glanced at Ye Chui with a frightened expression.

In the blink of an eye, the porcelain bottle was right in front of Busca's face.

Then, there was a loud explosion.

There was no way Ye Chui's clumsily-made artillery shell would accurately hit Busca's body and explode. Ye Chui could only manufacture the artillery shell based on his instincts; he had to estimate the time needed for the magic scroll within the vase to

explode. If it took too long, the vase would shatter, and the magic scroll within it would become an ordinary flame magic scroll. If it was too short, Ye Chui could put himself in grave danger.

Ye Chui invested a lot of his time and effort into producing the scroll-based artillery shell, but it did not explode when it accurately hit the target. Instead, it exploded on the ground two metres in front of Busca.

The flames shot out in all directions with a boom.

Looking from a distance, the artillery shell seemed to be quite powerful.

Despite its simplicity, the artillery shell did have a certain destructive power.

What made Ye Chui satisfied was Busca's pitiful screams echoing from a distance after the loud explosion.

Although the shell exploded two metres in front of Busca, the shattered fragments of porcelain inside the vase as well as the vase itself flew in all directions. Ultimately, the strength of the artillery shell was strong enough to injure Busca thanks to the shrapnel.

As the smoke in the corridor dispersed, Ye Chui, who was still in the set of heavy and thick battle armour looked at Busca sprawling on the ground. Despite being in a pathetic state all covered in blood, Busca quickly got back on his feet and started yelling

hysterically while trying to climb up the wooden stairs with much difficulty.

Ye Chui knitted his brows after realising that his artillery shell didn't kill Busca. He shook his head and hastily walked forward, his hand still gripping the long sword.

Busca crawled up the stairs at a very slow pace, but Ye Chui was even slower with the set of heavy battle armour. Hence, when Ye Chui finally reached the bottom of the staircase, Busca had already disappeared, but his yells could still be heard, "Carrey! Carrey! Where are you? Come here quickly and save me!"

"Father..." Carrey sounded off with worry in his voice as he quickly ran down the staircase. "What happened downstairs?"

"Devil! There is a devil downstairs!" Busca screamed with his hoarse voice, but he was quick to realise something. "No! That's not right. That devil must be Hammer! It's him who put on that suit of armour! Carrey, quick! Help me to kill him! Kill him!"

"What happened to Quinn and Locke?" Carrey asked.

"I don't know what happened to Quinn, but Locke has been killed by that boy! He managed to roast him using some weird lightning magic scroll." Busca gradually regained his calm demeanour and continued, "You don't have to fear him, Carrey. Just listen to what I have to say first..."



Their conversation gradually became inaudible.

Standing at the bottom of the set of stairs was Ye Chui, whose body had turned stiff from surprise. He had never expected Carrey to also be here. Even if Carrey had used the Protection of the War God and had a drop in his level, he was still much stronger than both Quinn and Locke combined.

Under Busca's instructions, Carrey would probably be guarding the exit with his long sword in hand, waiting to ambush Ye Chui.

Ye Chui decided to stay his next move.

He pondered for a moment before turning around and walking to the opposite end of the corridor towards the electrocuted Locke. He then lifted the box, which had plenty of magic scrolls in it.

Once again, he exhaustingly delivered the box of magic scrolls to the bottom of the wooden staircase. By then, Ye Chui was already breathless and hot, but he could nothing but endure it.

He placed the box on the first step of the stairs. He then reached his hand in, took one out, tore it open and tossed it towards the top.

Lightning flashed from above him, then came Busca's screams.

Ye Chui, revealed a satisfying smile and proceeded to use the second magic scroll, then the third, then the fourth...

A scene from four months ago seemed to have repeated itself.

Busca and Carrey were waiting for Ye Chui to appear at the top of the stairs, but little did they know that the only things that were appearing were magic scrolls.

Flame, lightning, gale, flying dust and stream magic scrolls all playing their part in wreaking havoc at the top of the staircase.

Busca and Carrey instantly transformed into sorry figures. Busca was already injured badly and was bleeding from shrapnel damage, but Carrey was...

Carrey had a psychological barrier with Ye Chui's method of crazily tossing magic scrolls. Thus, when the magic scrolls were tossed towards the father and son, both of them fled for their lives from the log cabin.

The flame scroll lit the entire log cabin ablaze within seconds, the gale scroll intensified the fire, the flying dust scroll produced dense smoke within the fire, the lightning scroll caused lightning bolts to flash all over the cabin. The stream scroll didn't seem to have much effect.

Ye Chui, still in the corridor in the basement, started to breathe rapidly as well.

He knew that Carrey and Busca did not have the means to

continue guarding his exit route.

Hence, he moved the remaining magic scrolls to the side and started crawling up the stairs amidst the thick smoke. The set of battle armour and the layer of beast skin on his body insulated him from the heat, but only temporarily.

Furthermore, he could start to execute his next killer move once he has managed to crawl to the top...

# Chapter 24 – The Flying Attack Of The Iron Swordsman

---

The log cabin had been engulfed by the ferocious flames. Thick smoke from fire and dust could be seen billowing from the centre of the cabin. It was constructed using dead logs and dry straw and was about to collapse, showing the intensity of the heat of the flames within the cabin.

Busca, with the support of Carrey's arm, sat on a wooden stool pitifully. The golden robe which Busca was wearing had become worn and tattered.

Carrey's face was filled with fear and anxiety as he tightly gripped onto his long sword with his hands. Trembling from fear, he couldn't help but ask, "Father, that battle armour... Is Hammer really inside that armour?"

"Isn't it obvious? Is there anyone else in this log cabin, besides Hammer?" Busca responded in a frustrated tone.

It seemed that Locke and Quinn were trapped in the basement of the log cabin, where the blaze caused by Ye Chui's flame magic scroll continued to spread.

Carrey hoped that the flames would be able to completely seal off the exit of the cabin.

His hopes were crushed soon after.

A silhouette gradually emerged from the tiny log cabin.

Due to the clumsiness of the battle armour and the thick layer of beast skin beneath the metal plates, he was temporarily protected from the heat. However, the thick smoke in the air was going to suffocate him.

Furthermore, the heavy set of battle armour made it very tedious for Ye Chui to climb up the stairs. His exhausted pair of legs made the situation worse. He was about to faint under the extreme temperatures. The remaining few magic scrolls beneath the layers of beast skin on his body and under the battle armour couldn't last him very long.

Then, he moved his left ring finger and some magic was transmitted to the parchment.

Numerous magic symbols that functioned as transmitters were written densely on the string-like parchment. It extended from Ye Chui's left hand to the beast skin on his armour's back with parts of it pasted onto his body.

The instant Ye Chui moved his left ring finger, the beast skin was aroused.

Ye Chui had an idea to fix a thick piece of wild boar skin onto the back of the battle armour firmly and coil it up. The Gale was activated within the coil of wild boar skin and the beast skin was blown upwards. From afar, it seemed like a long pole attached to

the armour's back.

Ye Chui made a wind pouch for himself using the beast skin. He made the wind pouch to propel himself into the sky.

The strong wind that expelled from the pouch was like a bellow blowing on the flames that continued to expand its grip over the wooden cabin. The wind also blew away and smashed several wooden tables and chairs. Even the log cabin itself swayed under the impact of the gale, though it still stood rooted to the ground.

This provided Ye Chui with a strong propelling force. The strength of it made his body move forward a few steps forward uncontrollably. After all, he had no prior practical experience in using such a thing. Although he was unfamiliar with how it worked, he managed to use it pretty well, especially in such an environment. He achieved balance after a while.

The gale within the wind pouch was produced by the gale magic scroll. Ye Chui developed the scroll and like the advanced flame magic scroll, it had four times the destructive power of a usual gale magic scroll. Although the original scroll would already have enough strength to blow a man with a large build away, it is uncomparable to the reinvented gale magic scroll.

Unfortunately, the gale only lasted for a short while.

However, there were three more reinvented gale magic scrolls within the wind pouch.

Feeling the strength of the wind pouch on his back weakening, Ye Chui moved his middle finger.

As he reached the perimeter of the log cabin, he planned to hit the wooden planks beside the door, but under the strong propelling force of the wind pouch, he was unable to change directions easily.

The wind pouch was strong and the battle armour was thick, there was no need to worry.

The most important thing was the wooden walls weakening from burning.

As Ye Chui activated the second gale scroll, the wooden wall buckled under the intense wind and crumbled from the elements.

At the same time, both his legs left the ground.

Under the force of two gale magic scrolls, Ye Chui's speed increased greatly. As he tried to escape from the log cabin, his body started hovering. Maybe he was jumping instead of flying, but no ordinary person would be able to jump that high. Even Carrey, a previously level four Swordsman, can achieve such a feat.

Both Carrey and Busca stood around 10 metres away from the log cabin and saw the suit of battle armour crash into the wooden wall amidst the inferno before it flew into the sky. When Ye Chui levitated upwards and away, the blazing log cabin finally lost its

legs and collapsed to the ground. It was perhaps due to the impact of the crash, or the already unstable frame of the log cabin.

This undoubtedly added magnificent colours to Ye Chui while he was soared out of the chaos.

In Busca's and Carrey's vision, the sight of Ye Chui's silhouette in the battle armour flying out of the flames was spectacular and nothing short of cool, but it also gave them a sense of death.

“Father, he... he...” Carrey stammered. [It is impossible for someone to jump that kind of height. It is impossible for a level four Swordsman, not to mention a level two Swordsman. If Ye Chui was indeed in the battle armour... It means that a mere level two Magician managed to do it?]

If Ye Chui could hear Carrey's voice right now, he would definitely be jesting. [Magicians use their intelligence. Their intelligence!]

Although Ye Chui had the perfect Hollywood-style hero entrance, it was still distressing. [Shit, I'm flying, I'm really flying... but I'm going to fall. Shit...]

After all, Ye Chui wasn't exactly flying. It was the upward force of the wind pouch that enabled him to float to that height. As the power of the gale weakens, he would descend to the ground.

Ye Chui was already starting to fall.



At that moment, the sight of the dazed Carrey who was pointing his long sword forward caught Ye Chui's eyes. Standing directly below Ye Chui, Carrey was dumbfounded at Ye Chui.

Ye Chui's body was slanting slightly downwards. He and his armour would be hurled directly at Carrey if fate allows.

In such a short amount of time, Ye Chui managed to do two things – he aimed for the long sword in his right hand and moved his right index finger.

The third gale magic scroll was activated.

The shrivelled wind pouch stirred once again. The power of it quickened Ye Chui's descent, to a worrying speed.

It meant that the long sword aimed at Carrey would have a greater effect.

Without any mishaps, the burning-hot tip of the long sword pierced through Carrey's chest.

Several months ago, Debbie's long sword scratched Carrey's battle armour and Ye Chui's magic scrolls damaged it further. After that incident, his battle armour was no longer shiny and was no different from an ordinary tin battle armour, as its inherent defence attribute had lost its effectiveness completely.

The long sword gave Ye Chui the power to finish Carrey off. The tip pierced through Carrey's battle armour almost effortlessly, then through his chest, emerging from his back...

# Chapter 25 – The Iron Swordsman’s Electric Trigger

---

Ye Chui kneeled as soon as his legs slammed into the dirt. His legs were instantaneously struck with numbness.

Ye Chui looked cool with his landing posture. With both his hands still grasping the hilt of the long sword, Ye Chui pierced the blade through the chest of Carrey’s kneeling figure before maliciously knocking him onto the ground.

All Carrey needed to do when Ye Chui was about to land was to point his sword upwards. Unfortunately, Carrey was too taken aback at that moment to react. Just as the long sword penetrated Carrey’s torso, he collapsed to the ground.

Facing the sky with an expression of utter denial with his mouth wide open, he tried to mutter his last words only to have his tongue stick out as he took his last breath.

Ye Chui loosened his grip on the longsword and tried to straighten his body with much difficulty while staring at Busca, who was sitting on a wooden stool at the rear in a daze.

It seemed that Busca’s soul had left his body.

As Busca looked at his bloodied, fallen son, he involuntarily cried, “Carrey?!”

“He’s dead,” Ye Chui kindly reassured Busca.

Anyone would find movement difficult while wearing this set of heavy armour. Ye Chui started dragging himself towards Busca slowly, but he started panting almost as soon as he started moving. He was exhausted, suffocating and uncomfortable, but he still had one final important task to accomplish. With a smirk plastered on his face, he declared, “Now, it’s your turn.”

Busca’s whole body trembled in fear as though the god of death was standing in front of him. He asked the armoured suit while shivering in fright, “Who... Who are you? Who the hell are you!?”

“Me?” Ye Chui chuckled.

Ye Chui no longer had to worry about Busca trying to escape. He had the opportunity to act like a lead actor in the movies – ramble on about some random things he thought was important to note before proceeding with other matters. He took the trouble to figure out how to remove his helmet easily before finally unbuckling the helmet and tossing it onto the ground.

Because of its huge size, Ye Chui’s head seemed to half in size when he removed the helmet. Funnily enough, Ye Chui had been looking through the mouth guard of the helmet for vision. Moreover, a layer of beast skin was wrapped around his head, making it harder for him to receive fresh air from his surroundings. Ye Chui looked comical, but Busca definitely didn’t think of it that way. Instead, Busca felt a sudden cold chill in the air.

Ye Chui continued to explain, “I am Hammer, a Magician Apprentice from Anthony’s Magic Cottage. I was referred to as a good-for-nothing Magician as my magic skills could only be used in real life situations. Whenever I come across any sort of trouble, I would hide behind Debbie. The thought of it makes me feel like a coward... But that is all in the past.” Ye Chui paused for a moment before continuing forebodingly, “Now, I am called Ye Chui and I am a hacker! Do you know what a hacker is? Well, whatever. You don’t have to understand this because you are about to die.”

Once he finished his speech, he reached out and grappled Busca’s head.

No one could know if it was the loss of Quinn and Locke or the death of his son, all by the hands of the man he had imprisoned for months to leave Busca in such a state of complete disarray. However, he was quick enough to regain himself. Acting based on his instincts alone, he clawed the leather-covered hand and begged, “No, please don’t... If you let me live, I will gift my entire fortune to you!”

“Who would believe the words from such a foul mouth? I was not reincarnated into this world to be imprisoned by you for three months! No one would be able to imagine the misery I have suffered under your cruelty. Do you think your wealth and apologies can quell my anger?” Ye Chui raged on. Although it may sound like nonsense, he secretly and quietly snickered under the beast skin, “I remember the days when I was a child. There was this one computer game character’s move that I really liked. If I recalled correctly, it was called ‘Electric Trigger’!”

Finishing his response, Ye Chui's left thumb jerked.

Similar to before, his left thumb was connected to a lightning magic scroll, but the magic scroll was linked to his skills. There were also five lightning magic scrolls. When Ye Chui activated the lightning magic scrolls via his left thumb, three of the scrolls would consecutively trigger and produce electricity to form a continuous flow of dangerous electric current.

The electricity then surged throughout his battle armour. Of course, the layer of beast skin underneath the battle armour would protect him from the electricity and prevent his own unfortunate electrocution.

Once the lightning magic scrolls were activated, flashes of blue electric currents started shooting out of Ye Chui's left arm. Violent zapping and sizzling filled the air, clearing a path to enter Busca's veins.

The electricity was very bright. If one were to stand at a distance watching the scene, it would seem as though someone used the move 'Electric Trigger'.

Busca's entire body started trembling while his dark red hair and beard stood on its ends. Soon after, white smoke started emitting from his body and the smell of barbeque and burnt flesh replace the zapping.

Ye Chui wasn't feeling well then. Although the layer of beast skin

insulated him from electrocution, the current flowing through the battle armour was still tingling and numbing, a voltage that was fortunately not fatal. Reining in the discomfort, Ye Chui let out a cry, “Ahh! So sore...”

The electric current didn’t last for long.

After the five lightning magic scrolls were depleted, Ye Chui wobbled and almost fell to the ground.

The smoke from Busca’s body was evidence that he was dead.

“Damn, I have to improve on this move next time...”

As Ye Chui glanced at the pathetic Busca, he murmured something to himself. He then sized up the surroundings only to realise that he was in the middle of a forest and had no idea how far he was from Stan City.

He confirmed that there wasn’t anyone in the vicinity before starting to remove the set of battle armour tediously. After 10 arduous minutes, he was finally free of the disgustingly stuffy armour and beast skin.

Ye Chui felt refreshed and cool as he released himself from his bond with the battle armour.

Ye Chui took another glance at the smoking Busca as his eyes lit up. Then, Ye Chui crouched and searched his clothes for anything

valuable.

“Ehh? There actually isn’t anything?” Ye Chui was dumbfounded.

In Ye Chui’s recollection, he remembered vividly that Busca could fish out 100 gold coins from his garments when Ye Chui demanded it from him three months ago. It was hard to believe that he was not carrying anything.

Ye Chui suddenly thought of something and his eyes caught sight of a ring on Busca’s finger. He impulsively removed the ring from his finger and examined it carefully.

As he was inspecting the ring, a loud and low voice groaned from behind him, “What’s going on here?”

Ye Chui, terrified by the suddenness of the voice, turns around to the sight of a tall and muscular silhouette standing behind him.

It was a Beastman Warrior.



# Chapter 26 – It's A Miracle That One Doesn't Need To Take Responsibility For Committing Arson And Murder

---

As Ye Chui came face to face with a two-metre tall giant in a suit of strong iron armour who had green skin, large fangs and a frightening face, he subconsciously let out a scream, “What the hell!?”

“What the hell?” the Beastman Warrior repeated hoarsely. In an uncouth tone which was comical and honest, he responded, “I’m not called ‘what the hell’. My name is Athol.”

Ye Chui was speechless.

The Beastman Warrior, named Athol, sized up the terrible state of the surroundings. When he saw Carrey’s corpse, his expression changed slightly. It wasn’t long before he fixated his gaze on Busca’s burnt corpse, which was still smoking. He then questioned, “Who are you? Did you kill these two people? How did Carrey die?”

Hearing Athol say Carrey’s name, Ye Chui’s heart started to palpitate. [Don’t tell me that this Beastman is on the same side as Busca.]

A simple glance would make anyone realise that the Beastman’s physique and imposing attitude wasn’t something that Carrey and Quinn could hold a candle to. Even if Ye Chui still had his battle

armour on and had unused magic scrolls left, it would be suicide to go up against this Beastman.

As Athol did not make any advancements contrary to Ye Chui's suspicions, his subconscious defensive actions gradually faded. Athol walked over to Carrey's corpse and examined it carefully.

Ye Chui stood aside with his heart in his mouth and then placed Busca's ring into the pocket of his Magician robe discreetly.

After a while, Athol finally broke the silence, "Judging from the wounds, Carrey was killed by a sword, stabbed from a height, from above. The huge sword must have penetrated through his body armour and sealed him to the ground. Judging from the pair of footprints here, the attacker does not seem to have been very agile. However, it seems that Carrey did not even make the least bit of an attempt to dodge the attack. This idiot must have gotten so scared that he forgot to move."

After accurately re-enacting and analysing the scene in his head, Athol turned his head towards Ye Chui.

Ye Chui became tense and he tried to explain using the most sincere tone, "I didn't kill him..."

"Obviously. Even a fool could see that you weren't the one who killed them." Athol reinforced naturally.

Ye Chui thought to himself, [What? Do I seem like such a lousy

Magician?]

Athol then walked over to Busca's corpse and inspected it, "He was electrocuted to death, but he doesn't seem to have been killed by an ordinary lightning magic scroll. It seems more like the doing of the intermediate attacking magic spell, 'Lightning Strike'..." After giving his detailed analysis, he turned towards Ye Chui again, "Who exactly killed both of them?"

Ye Chui wanted to let out a burst of laughter and mock Athol.

However, using his intelligence, Ye Chui put on an innocent and sincere expression and came up with a story, "I don't know the person... He is a suave agile man in battle armour, swift in movement and attacks and had a cool image. Oh, he also told me that he was called Iron..."

At that moment, Ye Chui wanted to say 'Ironman'.

But he knew that the language this fantasy world uses was vastly different from that of the modern world he came from. Although Ye Chui had inherited Hammer's memories and had no problem communicating in this world, there were some things stored in Hammer's mind that were not easily interpreted.

The word 'Ironman' could not be easily translated into the language understood by this fantasy world. The word 'iron' can be explained easily in their language, but one would take some effort to explain the word 'Ironman'.

Hence, Ye Chui paused for a moment, before finding the most appropriate word to use.

“...Swordsman. Iron Swordsman.” The phrase ‘Iron Swordsman’, which would become popular in the Aigen-Dazs Continent in the future, appeared in this world for the very first time.

“Iron Swordsman?” Athol’s thick eyebrows knitted together, “The killer is an advanced Swordsman?”

“Huh?” Ye Chui was stumped. [How did the phrase ‘Iron Swordsman’ give him the impression that the killer is an advanced Swordsman?]

Athol looked at Ye Chui’s stumped expression and explained, “Nicknames are only used by advanced Swordsmen. Since the Swordsman who saved you was named ‘Iron Swordsman’, I believe that he must be an advanced Swordsman. Eh, wait, wait, wait. The old fella was electrocuted to death. Does the Iron Swordsman know magic spells too?”

Ye Chui subconsciously nodded his head in agreement.

“Then he must be a Magic-Swordsman.” Athol concluded, his eyes green with envy, “Since he is trained in both magic skills and the sword, he must be very formidable.”

The Magic-Swordsman is a hybrid profession between both

Magicians and Swordsmen. Magic-Swordsmen are considered as Magicians who practised swordsmanship before they started learning magic. They are rarer than Magicians and their battling skills far surpass that of the same-ranked Magicians and Swordsmen alike.

It was the first time Ye Chui had heard of such a profession. He satisfyingly thought to himself, [Wow, I didn't know I was that good...]

[I heard that magic arrays can be carved on battle armour. I wonder if he would be able to research it. Perhaps the cool and dazzling iron battle armour seen in the movie could be replicated by him.]

As he let his train of thoughts run, Athol's eyes turned towards Ye Chui once again, "What happened to you? Looking at your sorry state... I wager that you were kidnapped by Carrey, that bastard?"

As of now, Ye Chui was half-convinced that the Beastman Warrior was not an ally of Carrey. However, Ye Chui could not conclude Athol's alignment. After contemplation, he decided to tell the truth, "My name is Ye Chui and I am a Magician..."

"You were the Magician who maimed Carrey!?"

Hearing Hammer's name, Athol's originally-fierce face unexpectedly revealed a tinge of happiness. He then interrupted Ye Chui, "Haha, I didn't expect you to be that interesting Magician

who defeated Carrey. That useless person has always been viewed by us as the disgrace of City Lord Guards. After he was expelled from the City Lord's Manor, we celebrated with drinks."

Ye Chui felt honoured to know that he had a good reputation outside.

Athol's expression turned darker and it seemed like he made sense of the entire situation, "Seeing you like that... I guess you were imprisoned by Carrey and his father? I heard you were an expert in carving scrolls. Did they imprison you to manufacture magic scrolls for them?"

Immediately nodding his head, Ye Chui said, "That's right! That is exactly what happened!" He then asked worriedly, "Now that Busca and Carrey are dead along with their two subordinates in the basement of the log cabin... Will I get into any sort of trouble?"

"Hmph. This mean villain deserved his retribution!" Athol slapped his chest forcefully, "Don't worry, you can rest assured that you will be fine!"

"Oh really? That's great!"

Ye Chui finally heaved a sigh of relief knowing he doesn't have to take responsibility for committing murder and arson.

## Chapter 27 – The Enchanting Technique

---

Due to his bloodline, Athol was born with a terrifyingly ferocious face. Despite that, he was very approachable and was even more so when he realised that Ye Chui was the Magician who managed to cripple Carrey. Since Carrey became an intermediate Swordsman only by virtue of resources, he was lacking in battling skills even though he had strength. He was consistently ranked as the worst Guard, and it was no exaggeration to say that he was regarded as the greatest shame of all of them.

Ye Chui had been informed by Athol that he will not have to be responsible for the death of Busca and Carrey. Although Athol had reservations about the existence of the Knight of Justice, the Iron Swordsman, he was still bought over by Ye Chui's story – with the evidence right before his eyes, how can he not believe his story?

While the two of them were talking, footsteps started approaching. Just as Ye Chui turned his head, four people could be seen walking out of the dense forest. Ye Chui knew the identity of the leader of the group – it was the City Lord's daughter, Alfea, the heroic female Swordsman, whom he had seen riding on a white horse while he was dining at the Moran Flower Restaurant several months ago.

The other three people were wearing sets of battle armour similar to that of Athol's.

Ye Chui suddenly recalled something – the first time he saw Alfea, she had four City Lord's Guards following behind her, one of whom was a Beastman Warrior. Now, the same four of her Guards

stood before Ye Chui.

Alfea scanned Busca and Carrey's corpses, as well as the burning log cabin. Despite being visibly shaken by the sight, she quickly calmed herself and asked, "What happened here?"

"Miss Alfea, this was what happened..." Athol hurriedly narrated.

At the end of his depiction of how the events played out, Alfea's turned red with fury, "Busca, this despicable merchant, actually shamelessly kidnapped someone? And his son is a City Lord's Manor Guard? What a disgrace!"

"Carrey was originally the disgrace of the City Lord's Manor Guard. It isn't surprising that he would do such a shameful act," one of the three human Guards mocked, laughing coldly. Then he walked over to Carrey and looked down on his corpse, "Hmph, he deserved such a dishonourable death." Following that, he looked towards Ye Chui, "Brother, you claim that a self-proclaimed Iron Swordsman murdered them? There is a total of eight advanced Swordsman in Stan City, and there isn't one who proclaims himself as the Iron Swordsman."

This Human Guard wasn't as gullible as Athol. Suspicion started to show on his face.

"Balmain, please don't tell me that you suspect Hammer killed both of them?" Athol laughed uncontrollably.



Almost immediately, Alfea started to laugh loudly as well, as though someone told a hilarious joke.

[Shit!] Ye Chui's heart skipped a beat. [Is it even that hilarious?]

“No, no. I know it is impossible for this little boy to do this.” Balmain shook his head smiling. Then he continued, “I was just curious. The sudden appearance of an advanced Swordsman in Stan City is simply unfathomable. One must know that the title of the ‘advanced Swordsman’ has to be registered in the Swordsmen Guild. I just want to know who in the world this Iron Swordsman is. From the way he killed the father and son, it seems as though he is far below the standard of an advanced Swordsman.”

It was instinctual for Ye Chui to blurt out the phrase ‘Iron Swordsman’. He didn’t expect so many implications to arise from it and hurriedly explained, “Maybe that person isn’t an advanced Swordsman. He probably likes to pretend to be one – wearing a full set of battle armour.”

“Perhaps.” Balmain nodded his head in agreement with Ye Chui’s theory.

Alfea started to inquire about the details of Ye Chui’s imprisonment, to which he naturally obliged. After listening to Ye Chui about his predicament in the log cabin, Alfea’s pretty yet heroic face revealed a tinge of sympathy. Judging from her youthful expression, she was not old, and the sympathetic expression was likely adapted from an adult. She patted Ye Chui’s shoulders and spoke in a mature tone, “It’s been hard on you. We ought to take responsibility for not performing our duties properly

as the City Lord's Guards. I'll get my father to compensate you."

"How can I accept it?" Ye Chui's face revealed embarrassment before changing his tone, "How do you plan to compensate me?"

"... I have to discuss this with my father before I can come to a decision."

During their conversation, the City Lord's Guards had already removed the long sword lodged in Carrey's abdomen. They arranged Busca and Carrey beside each other on the ground. Balmain squatted beside Busca and touched his body before his eyebrows wrinkled. As Balmain examined Busca's hand and saw a white print on his ring finger, he thoughtfully glanced at Ye Chui and shook his head, but he chuckled and never pursued the matter.

Balmain and another City Lord's Guard stayed behind while Alfea led Ye Chui back to Stan City, together with Athol and the last City Lord's Guard.

It was at that time that Ye Chui realised that he was at the top of a mountain outside of Stan City.

Busca's horse carriage, which was now a property of the City Lord's Manor, became a transport means for the group. Athol was in charge of steering the horse in the right direction, while Ye Chui and Alfea took seats in the carriage. Despite sharing the carriage with such a heroic beauty, Ye Chui had a calm mind, although he would occasionally stare at her chest which made her soft armour rise... If Hammer was the one in the carriage, he would have

fainted from an overdose of happiness.

As Ye Chui aimlessly chatted with Alfea, Ye Chui got wind of the information that she and the four City Lord's Guards had just completed their mission to conduct an inspection at the southern boundary of Stan City. The purpose of the mission was to investigate if there were any dangerous beasts which laid in ambush around the area. Due to Stan City's proximity to the dense forest, there were occasional incidents where people are attacked by beasts. This inspection was carried out monthly by the City Lord's Guards and was considered a responsibility of the City Lord's Manor.

Alfea had an exceptional gift for being a Swordsman. Despite already being level five, she would participate in every mission just to train and hone her skills.

"This time around, we encountered a level three Fanged Wolf Beast, which was hard to deal with," Alfea started to describe the occurrences of the inspection out of boredom, "Although we managed to finish off the Fanged Wolf Beast without coming to any harm, my long sword was damaged in the process." Following her words, the sound of metal riding a sheath was heard as she pulled her long sword out from her waist. The long sword, which was originally shiny and had floral patterns carved on it now had a rusty black stain. Alfea gently rubbed the stain and continued, "The venom from the Fanged Wolf Beast is highly corrosive and it caused the enchanting magic array on my long sword to malfunction. Now I've to go back and get someone to enchant it again."

“Enchant?” Ye Chui’s heart stopped beating for an instant.

Feeling strange, Alfea sized Ye Chui up, “Why?”

“If it’s enchanting... Miss Alfea, maybe you could let me have a go at it?” Ye Chui said in a low tone. For the sake of his fantasy version of the Iron Man Battle Armour, he was prepared to research on enchanting techniques...

# Chapter 28 – Gonna Die, Gonna Die, Gonna Die

---

“Do you even know how to enchant items?” Alfea stared at Ye Chui with a questioning gaze after hearing his words.

As Ye Chui spouted in the moment of impulse, he suddenly became anxious. In reality, Hammer’s memory within Ye Chui had warned that talent would be required to learn the enchanting technique since forging and enchanting were known to be the forte of the Dwarves. And while it might seem like a piece of cake for the dwarves, it would take a very long time for any human to master the enchanting techniques.

Furthermore, there was a stringent prerequisite for learning the enchanting technique – one had to be a Magician.

There were no more than ten people skilled in enchanting within Stan City.

As Ye Chui’s eyes met with Alfea’s gaze, he subconsciously became startled and started to stammer unconfidently, “I know... just a little.”

“Anyway, the enchanting magic array on my sword is merely a <Wind Blade>; it should be quite easy to repair.” As Alfea responded to Ye Chui’s lack of confidence, she passed her long sword to him.

In astonishment, Ye Chui hastily received the long sword from Alfea, “Do you trust me so much with your long sword?”

Alfea’s mesmerizingly gorgeous face revealed a gentle smile, “I bet you don’t have the guts to do anything to my sword.”

“...” Ye Chui remained silent. [As a genius Swordsman and the daughter of the City Lord, she definitely knows what she’s talking about.]

The horse carriage wasn’t comfortable for Ye Chui as it traversed and bumped on an uneven rocky road, but he had his entire concentration shifted to the long sword within his embrace. Deep in thought, he extended his hands and felt the floral carvings on the long sword before gently using his finger to touch its blade.

“Enchanting, in simple terms, is to carve magic arrays on sets of battle armour. However, the method of carving is different from that of carving magic scrolls. After all, the magic tool used for scrolls, which only has one use, is magic ink, while the magic tool used for enchanting is probably... Mithril?”

Ye Chui tried his best to recall the information related to enchanting from Hammer’s memory.

[Using a special tool, one will be able to integrate Mithril into weapons and battle armours while forming the floral patterns and magic matrixes. But how do the magic matrixes get embedded into the floral patterns?]

Enchanting was the process of integrating Mithril into weapons or battle armours through the carving of unique floral patterns. However, Ye Chui was unable to comprehend how the magic matrixes were formed through carving. As his fingers slid across the floral engravings on the long sword, he was able to sense the vague aura of magic, but he did not know how the aura came about.

[Enchanting seems like an extremely troublesome thing to do...]

Although Ye Chui sensed that enchanting wouldn't be easy, he didn't flinch. Instead, he wanted to give it a go. [Even if I am unable to repair the long sword, Alfea wouldn't blame me, right?]

The horse carriage stopped at the intersection of the avenue where Anthony's Magic Cottage was at.

"I hope you'll be able to repair my long sword within half a month," Alfea hoped as Ye Chui alighted from the horse carriage, "As for the reward, I will give it to you when the time comes."

"Sure." As he jumped off the horse carriage, a thought seemed to have popped into his mind, "What about the compensation we spoke of earlier?"

"..." Alfea did not expect Ye Chui to remember her promise to him. She rolled her eyes and replied helplessly, "Don't worry, Busca is now dead after committing those heinous crimes. According to the Empire regulation, his entire fortune will be confiscated. When the time comes, I will ask my father to give

some of his fortunes to you.”

As Alfea finished her words, she hopped into the horse carriage and closed the door, “Athol, we are returning to the City Lord’s Manor.”

“Alright, Miss Alfea.”

Before leaving, Athol smiled at Ye Chui to express good intention. However, the two protruding fangs from Athol’s mouth made his smile very frightening...

Ye Chui forced a smile back at him before walking to Anthony’s Magic Cottage.

“Hammer!” An auntie, who was doing grocery shopping on the streets, ran towards Ye Chui with an astonished expression, “Is... Is it really you? Look at your pathetic state! What happened to you?”

“Err, it’s a long story.” Ye Chui looked at the compassionate auntie and pointed to Anthony’s Magic Cottage, “I have to go back first.”

“You better hurry back. Debbie has been depressed about your absence,” The auntie told him hastily.

Ye Chui nodded his head and subconsciously quickened his footsteps. Ever since he was reincarnated into Hammer’s body,



where he spent half a month with Debbie and three months being imprisoned by Busca, he had a strange yet indescribable affection for Debbie. At first, Ye Chui thought that it was Hammer's memories that were playing tricks on his mind, but after the time spent together with Debbie, he realised that he had developed sibling-like love towards her.

[Perhaps a small part of a 'loli' plot could be seen being played here.]

Ye Chui gradually made his way to the entrance of Anthony's Magic Cottage. From afar, he had already noticed a petite lonely silhouette sitting on the steps of the entrance. It was noon and the sun was beating down harshly on the ground. Debbie had her hands wrapped around her knees, and her head was buried within them. The presence of the 50kg sword beside Debbie only further undermined her size.

He felt as though there was a melancholic tune playing in the background as he saw the scene before him.

"Debbie..." Ye Chui raised his voice slightly.

The petite silhouette moved slightly. Debbie then raised her head from her arms and looked towards Ye Chui.

Debbie was expressionless before she rubbed her eyes to ascertain that it was Ye Chui who called her name, not anyone else. Immediately, she jumped for joy, but in the next moment, she became furious. She was angry about Ye Chui leaving without

informing her and sending only a slip of paper back within the three months he wasn't around. Debbie dashed towards Ye Chui with her small adorable face filled with grudge and hatred.

She clenched her fists and her teeth, as though she was about to violently beat Ye Chui up.

Ye Chui felt a cold shiver being sent down his spine. [Don't tell me that I'm going to die under her? I just survived three months of imprisonment...]

Based just on her ability to wield the 50kg without much effort, Ye Chui wouldn't stand a chance of survival if she were to attack him...

Just when Ye Chui's heart started to palpitate furiously, Debbie arrived in front of him. The anger on her face instantly turned to pity, as tears started to gush out of her eyes. She then pounced onto Ye Chui and hugged him with all her might.

"Hammer, where have you been? I really missed you..."

"I... I missed you too..." Ye Chui replied in a hoarse voice. He was being suffocated by her strong hug. "Can you loosen your hug before you continue speaking? My bones are about to break. I'm gonna die, gonna die, gonna die..."

## Chapter 29 – A Pleasant Surprise

---

“You were imprisoned by Busca in the mountains for the past three months?”

“Yes. Not only did I have to endure terrible living conditions in the dark and stuffy log cabin, I had to obey to his command of carving 30 magic scrolls each day.”

“It’s all my fault; I should have tagged along in the first place...”

“The outcome wouldn’t have been any different with you around. They would surely find a way to kidnap me, given their numbers. Don’t blame yourself for this; am I not fine now?”

“Hammer..”

“Yes, Debbie?”

“I will protect you in the future.”

“Hehe, all right. You can stick close to my side when you marry me in two years.”

Debbie kept silent.

“Debbie?”

“Okay.”

“What do you mean by okay?”

“I’m okay with marrying you. I was planning to marry you in the first place.”

“...”

As they caught up, the daylight burned away and it became evening and the dark sky was filled with countless bright stars. In the backyard of Anthony’s Magic Cottage, the door of Ye Chui’s room was tightly shut. While Ye Chui was in his room, he talked to Debbie, who was still sitting on the steps outside his room with both her hands supporting her chin.

Intermittent sounds of running water could be heard outside the locked door. Having only used the stream magic scroll to shower during the three months when he was imprisoned, where the flow of the water was little and hard to control, Ye Chui did not enjoy that kind of bath at all. Now, he was taking his time to enjoy every moment of the hot bath.

Ye Chui then walked out of the room in a set of clean clothes.

Ye Chui looked at Debbie and gave a warm smile. “Busca and Carrey were killed by... a suave and extraordinary Iron Swordsman. I also heard that the City Lord’s Manor will

compensate me. So I guess our lives will be much better in the future.”

Debbie then looked at Ye Chui with an adorable expression. “Hammer, I have a surprise for you... Can you close your eyes first?”

[Surprise?] Ye Chui’s heartbeat quickened and some loving scenes flashed through his mind. [Since I discussed the topic of marriage with her just now, would she now give me a kiss?]

With an uneasy mind, Ye Chui agreed and closed his eyes. Considering Debbie’s petite stature, Ye Chui figured that it would be hard for her to reach his lips, thus he slightly bent his head down with his lips protruded.

Then...

Whoosh... Whoosh... Whoosh... Wave after wave of powerful howling sounds played.

Ye Chui couldn’t contain his curiosity and opened his eyes to see what’s going on. At that instant, he cursed and swore – Debbie was spinning around with her great sword in the backyard.

Ye Chui was speechless.

[Is this the so-called pleasant surprise?]

“Hammer, I’ve been working very hard for the past three months and I can now do the Giant Spinning Top for half an hour without exerting much strength. I found a technique to help me – by fixing my eyes on a certain spot when I’m spinning, I can effectively reduce dizziness. Now, I’m working towards my target of spinning continuously for an hour!” Debbie boasted excitedly, “I wouldn’t be afraid to meet Carrey again. So, is this a pleasant surprise?”

“... It’s really a pleasant surprise.” Ye Chui didn’t want to disappoint her.

[Umm, Debbie is just like a little sister to me. I can live without a little kiss...] Ye Chui comforted himself.

Ye Chui then sat on the steps and watched Debbie spin around for half an hour.

Eventually, when Debbie could no longer spin, she stabbed her greatsword into the ground and leant into it, while tears of happiness flowed down her cheeks, “How was it? Am I impressive? Even if Carrey were to unleash the Protection of the War God, he wouldn’t be my match. I now feel that I have the potential to be promoted to a level three Swordsman!”

“That’s impressive.” Ye Chui portrayed an exaggerated congratulatory expression and clapped for Debbie.

Debbie did not detect exaggeration and her eyes lit up with joy. She wiped her perspiration off her forehead and looked at Ye Chui,

“Hammer, I’m hungry after all the spinning.”

“... I’ll cook noodles for you then.” Ye Chui kindly offered.

Being reunited after three months of separation, Debbie and Ye Chui had now returned to their original daily routines...

While Ye Chui was cooking noodles in the kitchen, Debbie sat at the entrance of the kitchen as though she was afraid Ye Chui would suddenly disappear. She then probed, “Hammer, is the Iron Swordsman who saved you very powerful? Is he an advanced Swordsman?”

“He’s may not be an advanced Swordsman, but he is very powerful.”

Due to certain considerations, Ye Chui hid part of the truth about the advanced Swordsman from Debbie and only told her about how the mysterious character heroically saved him. While speaking of this Iron Swordsman and cooking the noodles at the same time, Ye Chui was very enthusiastic in telling his tale, “The Iron Swordsman was really impressive. Although his body was entirely shelled in battle armour and his face was hidden, I believe he must be very handsome. He was clearly trained in both swordsmanship and magic skills. Quinn and Carrey were easily defeated by him. When he dealt with Busca at the end, he even unleashed an ultimate killer move – El-c-Trigger, which was awesome...”

Ye Chui recounted enthusiastically, but when he paused and

turned around – Debbie had already fallen asleep...

Ye Chui's heart was instantaneously flooded with a warm fuzzy feeling. After earnestly cooking two bowls of noodles, he carried a bowl to Debbie, "Debbie, wake up and eat your noodles."

Ye Chui laid on his bed that evening.

Ye Chui didn't have to sleep on an uncomfortable wooden bed for the first time in three months. Lying on his bed, his mood remained carefree. Although he had just killed four men earlier today with the aid of his battle armour, he was not bothered; after all, he understood that this fantasy world was interesting yet dangerous. In order to survive, he needed to be wary and protect himself, even if it meant being the aggressor and killing others.

His captivity inculcated this particular mindset in him. Thus, he was guilt free.

As Ye Chui suddenly thought of something, he reached his hand into his pocket and took out a ring. It was the ring he previously removed from Busca's corpse. If Ye Chui guessed correctly, the ring was a space ring which could store things within.

Ye Chui tried to transfer his magic skills and instincts into the ring, but he seemed to feel a door when he tried to do that.

Since the ring was Busca's, only he could open the door of the ring.



The ring presented a space magic array, which had a simple recognition system. [Is this the legendary owner recognition magic tool?]

He licked his lips.

[Let's see if I can hack into this ring.]

# Chapter 30 – Hacking Into The Space Ring

---

Magic is the control of the power of nature.

Ever since a genius from the human race mastered the control of the power of nature 13000 years ago, the application of magic by humans had become increasingly frequent, and many researchers had carried out thorough analysis on the essence of magic, before accurately categorising the various elements of the power of nature.

Simply put, magic elements could be categorised into [eight types](#) – water, fire, electricity, earth, wind, darkness, light and space.

(Silvan: I want readers to note that the author specifically wrote 7 types but when we counted the number of elements, it was 8...)

These were the eight elements of magic.

Inevitably, the myriad of things in nature could be categorised into many more types of elements. Hence, these eight elements of magic were merely basic elements, and entirely new magic elements could only be created through the interaction of these basic elements.

For example, if the wind element combined with the water element, the ‘ice element’ would be created. The combination of the water element and earth element formed the ‘wood element’ or ‘mud element’, while the combination of the earth element and fire element formed the ‘lava element’...

Rumour had it that when these eight elements fuse together, it

would open the new frontier of the ‘time element’.

Since the existence of magic 13000 years ago, the genius who discovered magic was the only one who had unleashed time magic successfully and defeated a terrifying intruder from the northern part of the continent. However, it was just a rumour, and many researchers had widely doubted and debated if the eight magic elements would be able to fuse together in modern times.

Out of the eight magic elements, the water, fire, electricity, earth and wind elements were the most basic ones; and these were the elements which every elementary Magician must comprehend. Out of these five magic symbols which elementary Magicians must grasp, there was a particular one which helped to deconstruct these five magic elements.

On the other hand, it was comparatively harder to deconstruct the space, darkness and light elements.

Having spent three months in the small black room, Ye Chui had successfully grasped the meaning of 18 magic symbols through countless experiments. Now, he could grasp a total of 23 magic symbols. There were nine more magic symbols which he had not managed to grasp, and they are related to the space, darkness and light elements. These three magic elements were so complex to the extent that the magic symbols related to them were almost impossible to grasp as well.

In order to comprehend these three magic elements, one must first be an advanced Magician.

Only advanced Magicians could use the space magic array.

And only advanced Magicians could manufacture a magic tool, such as a space ring.

However, one didn't have to be an advanced Magician to be able to hack into the space ring – at least Ye Chui thought that he had the ability to hack into the space ring.

[The requirement for successfully dissecting the owner recognition system is like an electronic door, which requires a password to enter. However, the owner recognition system itself is made up of a set of complicated magic array, similar to that of a computer system. If I want to enter the system, I must first hack into the system and deduce the password of the electronic door. If I try to open the electronic door by brute, the computer system would be destroyed and the space ring would no longer exist...] Ye Chui tried to figure out how to hack into the space ring using the computer theory.

As one of the best hackers, hacking into the owner recognition system would be a piece of cake to Ye Chui.

However, now it seemed otherwise... It wasn't that easy after all.

When Ye Chui walked out of his room with panda-black eyes the very next morning, helplessness could be seen written all over his face – the owner recognition system magic matrix had its own space array, formed from its own theories. Furthermore, it used

nine magic symbols which Ye Chui had not fully comprehended. If he wished to hack into the owner recognition system, and its inner workings, it would be similar to hacking into a bank system using the basics of programming. There were many aspects of life which could be solved, no matter how experienced one was.

[It seems that before I can hack into this space ring, I need to first comprehend the remaining nine Magic Symbols.] Ye Chui thought to himself with an exhausted heart and mind.

“Hammer, what’s wrong?” Debbie asked, observing that Hammer looked troubled after practicing her Giant Spinning Top in the yard. Debbie was originally very lazy, but she had cultivated this habit of practicing her sword skills early in the morning.

“I had insomnia last night...” Ye Chui shook his head and went to the magical automatic pump to wash his face. Then, he turned his head to look at Debbie once again. With a smile on his face, he asked, “What would you like to eat for breakfast today?”

“You don’t have to cook today. I will cook some porridge later, so just rest.” Debbie said with eyes of tender care.

“It’s okay. I just didn’t have a good rest last night; no big deal.” Ye Chui entered the kitchen while shaking his head. His voice echoed out from the kitchen soon after, “I have to go out later today.”

“Go out?” Debbie immediately became anxious. “Why do you have to go out?”

“I need to go to the Magic Guild.” Ye Chui answered, “My magic wand has been destroyed by Busca. Without a magic wand, I can’t do anything. So I must go to the Magic Guild to get a new wand.”

“Oh, then I shall accompany you there.” Debbie said hastily. Since Hammer just came back yesterday, she felt an overwhelming sense of relief and joy. However, with such emotions also came the fear and worry of him vanishing once again; only to send a letter of regard stating he was going to preserve world peace. Thus, she swore that she would always stay by Hammer’s side to protect him.

Ye Chui had started preparing the food. While doing the preparations, he thought of something and said, “Oh, I just recalled. I have to make a trip to Cara’s Magic Bookstore later to buy a few books.”

After she heard Ye Chui’s desire to buy more books, Debbie immediately recalled the past when he bought the two expensive magic language books; and became anxious. “Again?! What kind of books do you plan to buy this time?”

The vivid memory of being cheated of nine gold coins was an expensive lesson for her.

“I’d like to buy a book on enchanting.” Ye Chui thought of the long sword which Alfea passed to him.

“Enchanting?” Debbie also thought of the long sword which Ye Chui brought back the previous day, “Hammer, I was about to ask

you; why did you bring Alfea's long sword back? In my recollection, father didn't seem to know any enchanting skills. If so, how would you know how to enchant?"

"I don't know how to." Ye Chui answered nonchalantly, "That's why I want to buy some books on enchanting."

"..."

Enchanting is a complex skill that only Dwarfs and Magicians can use, and Ye Chui actually plans to study it now?

"But Hammer, enchanting seems hard." Debbie cautioned him.

"How difficult can it get?" Ye Chui proclaimed in a confident tone, "There isn't anything that is too difficult for the Father of Studies to learn!"

Having comprehended 18 magic symbols on his own and created a set of magic battle armour to kill the four people who imprisoned him, Ye Chui now felt that he was the Father of Studies and nothing was an issue to him...

# Chapter 31 – The Magic Crystal Within The Mirror

---

Most human cities on the Aigen-Dazs Continent had facilities, such as the Magician Guild, the Swordsman Guild, as well as the Mercenary Guild. These facilities enabled the Magicians, Swordsmen and Mercenaries to form groups which made the interaction between one another more effective and efficient.

The Magician Guild of Stan City was situated in the western region. From afar, it could be observed that the Magician Guild did not have the imposing aura compared to the edifice of the Mercenary Guild, nor did the Magician Guild have the liveliness of the crowd at the Swordsman Guild. The Magician Guild appeared just like an ordinary two-storey building. Although the profession, Magician, was the most respected in the world, the number of people who qualify to be one were few and far between. Out of the hundreds of thousands of residents in Stan City, the number of Magicians did not exceed one hundred.

Apart from the ordinary-looking façade of the Magician Guild building, the entrance of the building looked desolate as well.

Magic tools which Magicians used, such as parchment, magic ink and magic wands could only be purchased from this building. However, these magic tools were used frequently by Magicians. Magicians interacted within their respective cliques, unlike the Swordsmen and Mercenaries, who assembled at their respective guilds or mutually challenged one another.

“I’d like to purchase a magic wand.”



After walking into the hall of the Magician Guild with Debbie, Ye Chui scanned the surroundings and saw a deck chair at a corner of the spacious and quiet hall. An old person in a long, black magician's gown was lying on the chair, while humming to a tune and drinking a bottle of liquor at the same time. Ye Chui then walked over and spoke in a soft tone.

The old person lying on the deck chair seemed indifferent and was absorbed in drinking liquor. He then looked towards Ye Chui, "Ehh, are you that Hammer?"

"You know me?" Ye Chui was stunned. [Although there are less than one hundred Magicians in Stan City, I don't think many people know my name yet.]

"Hello little brother, I'm called Basgen." The old man deftly jumped up from his lying position. He said in a seemingly friendly tone, "The news of you defeating Carrey, a level four Swordsman, with magic scrolls has already spread through the entire Stan City. Busca, that old fox, even asked me to cure his son. So, I got to know your name."

"Hammer." Debbie whispered into Ye Chui's ears, "I've heard father mentioning his name. He's a level five Magician, who specialises in light element magic. He's also a well-known magic doctor and might become a priest in the future."

After a Swordsman gets promoted to an advanced Swordsman, the Swordsman will be categorised into different classes, such as

Great Swordsman and Long Swordsman. There was a similar categorisation for Magicians as well. Priest was one of the classes which a Magician could choose after being promoted to the advanced level, and a Priest specialised in light magic.

Concurrently, Basgen was taking on an important role within the Magician Guild.

Debbie's words instantaneously made Ye Chui look up to Basgen with respect, "Mr Basgen, I'd like to purchase a magic wand."

"I've heard that you'd been imprisoned by Busca and his useless son and you had been rescued only yesterday?" Basgen seemed unsurprised by the fact that Ye Chui wanted to buy a new magic wand, "The City Lord's Manor have conveyed a message to me yesterday, saying that your magic wand had been destroyed and you would be coming here to buy a new one. The cost of the new magic wand will be borne by the City Lord's Manor, so feel free to choose whichever wand you like."

"Really?" Debbie's entire petite face lit up instantly upon hearing Basgen's words. According to Debbie, the happiest thing on earth was to be able to purchase items without having the need to pay...

However, Ye Chui was not in the least happy. [Don't tell me that the agreed compensation would be just a magic wand.]

Ye Chui was currently an elementary Magician and the magic wands elementary Magicians used were not considered expensive. At a price of only a few silver coins, how could it compare to the

expected compensation of many times more?

Basgen didn't sense Ye Chui's unhappiness and he laughingly walked towards the Magician Guild hall, "I'll go get the magic wands. Kindly wait here."

"Ehh?" Debbie let out a soft sound.

"What's wrong little girl?" Basgen asked laughingly. He was seemingly interested in this girl, who carries a 50kg greatsword around.

Pointing at a mirror at the side of the hall, Debbie was in a daze, "There seems to be something in the mirror."

Ye Chui also looked at the mirror curiously.

It was a full-length mirror. Like any other ordinary mirror, Debbie and Basgen's reflections could be seen clearly in the mirror. What was unusual about the mirror was that there was a crystal-looking blue object hanging from within the mirror. Ye Chui then examined the mirror thoroughly and concluded that the crystal did not exist in the real world.

Debbie stood before the mirror and waved to herself, and her mirror image in the mirror similarly waved back at her. However, her hand in the mirror image seemed to be able to pass through the crystal.

[Does the crystal only exist within the mirror?]

“Hehe.” Basgen laughed after seeing both their actions, “That’s a magic crystal which was placed into the mirror by an advanced Magician who was a guest of the Magician Guild. He also placed some of his magic knowledge within the magic crystal. One will be able to own the magic crystal, so long as the person manages to retrieve it from the mirror.”

After randomly suggesting the idea to Ye Chui, Basgen looked at him, “You can try it as well.”

Basgen walked into a room at a corner of the hall after giving Ye Chui the suggestion.

Although Basgen suggested Ye Chui to try retrieving the magic crystal from the mirror, he didn’t actually think that Ye Chui would be able to do it.

The magic crystal was placed into the mirror using high-level space magic.

The guest who recently visited the Magician Guild was a level 9 advanced Magician. He was about to enter the specialist realm and had an honourable status. The Guild Master of the Magician Guild of Stan City had always wanted his son to learn from this master. His son was considered gifted, having ranked as a level three Magician at the young age of 17 years old. However, the advanced Magician was reluctant to accept the son as his disciple. After pleading with this advanced Magician for a long time, the

advanced Magician decided to set a tough challenge – retrieving the magic crystal from the mirror. He even proclaimed that whoever was able to retrieve the magic crystal would be his disciple.

Many Magicians had attempted to retrieve the magic crystal from the mirror several times, including Basgen. However, their attempts were futile.

[If Ye Chui, the level two Magician, was able to pull off this feat... Hehe, then the sun would rise from the west.]

Debbie and Ye Chui, who were in the hall, thought that the challenge was some kind of gimmick – a Magician setting a tough problem just for the sake of fun. Hence, they got excited and decided to try to get the free item.

“Hammer, Hammer, come and try.” Debbie urged Ye Chui enthusiastically. She first attempted retrieving the magic crystal with her small hands. In the end, her fingers could only touch the hard surface of the mirror and was unable to retrieve the thing within the mirror.

Following her, Ye Chui also reached out his hand and it unsurprisingly hit the hard surface of the mirror as well. However, Ye Chui’s expression changed slightly – he saw a door.

It was a door similar to that when he tried to hack into the space ring.

The advanced Magician had set up a magic array on the surface of the mirror and he used the magic array to store the magic crystal within the mirror.

It was for certain that the magic array set up by this advanced Magician was much simpler than the one on the space ring. It was just a normal door, without any locks on it. One only needs to push the door open, instead of cracking the door lock.

Thus, Ye Chui pushed the door open.

His hand was able to reach into the depths of the mirror. It was as though the surface of the mirror became a tranquil lake and Ye Chui's hands merely reached into it.

It was without much effort that Ye Chui retrieved the magic crystal within the mirror.

“Ehh, how do you take it out of the mirror just like that?” Debbie was instantly disappointed, “Hammer, you're so stupid and you actually managed to retrieve the magic crystal from the mirror? That thing must be worthless.”

## Chapter 32 – Was The Magic Spell Too Strong For The Magic Wand To Handle?

---

As Ye Chui stared blankly at the magic crystal in his hands and listened to Debbie's seemingly reasonable deduction, his expression became strange. [Is this magic crystal really a worthless item?]

The anticipation he had previously had now vanished!

When Ye Chui tried to hack into the owner recognition system of the space ring yesterday, he could effortlessly spot the door within the ring and he spent the entire night experimenting with various methods of opening the door. Hence, he could easily spot and open the door when he saw a similar magic array in the mirror today.

He thought it was a simple thing to do. Perhaps it was considered simple to others as well?

It was unknown to Ye Chui that no level two Magician in this world had ever tried hacking into a space ring. It was something that only advanced Magicians would try. Furthermore, there was definitely no one who could spot the door that was formed by the magic array effortlessly.

This feat required an accurate comprehension of the magic symbols and arrays.

The reason why Ye Chui could pull off this feat was because he

had the wealth of experience in programming languages. His prior experience allowed him to subconsciously visualise the array which the magic symbols formed. This special ability he had was extremely useful and greatly valued in this magic world; and most Magicians would never be able to harness this magic intuition even until the day they died.

Perhaps in the aspect of spiritual power, Ye Chui's Magician intelligence was considered inferior, but in terms of magic intuition, he was an absolute genius. Although Ye Chui called himself the Father of Studies, he understood that the hacking experience he had was a shortcut to mastering magic. However, he had no clue what his innate talent was.

Footsteps could be heard as Basgen returned to the hall after getting the magic wands from the room. Ye Chui casually slipped the magic crystal into his pocket and rushed towards Basgen with Debbie. Since Debbie and Ye Chui have both assumed that the magic crystal retrieved from the mirror was just a worthless thing, they didn't give much thought to it. Instead, they were more concerned about the free magic wand that Ye Chui would be compensated with.

Basgen took out more than ten magic wands for Ye Chui to choose from; and each magic wand was carefully placed within a wooden chest. Basgen placed the wooden chests onto a round table in the hall and then opened them one at a time. He then laughingly said, "Little brother, take your pick."

The magic wand was an important magic tool which Magicians used to cast magic spells. Without a magic wand, any Magician



who has not entered the specialist realm would be just like any ordinary human. This was due to the fact that the magic wand acts as a medium for the magic matrix to unleash its might.

Materials used in manufacturing a magic wand usually have magic attributes. Morgan Tree, Blood Carving Tree, Purple Star Vine and Tong Pear Wood are some examples of materials used to manufacture magic wands.

Meanwhile, materials of magic beast nature have to be integrated into the magic wands as well, so as to stimulate the activity of the magic power, which is called magic core. The materials used are usually flamingo feathers and phoenix powdered scales, etc.

It is rumoured that the best material used to make the magic core is the dragon blood.

However, the last three Great Dragons have been killed in the War of Former Civilisation 5000 years ago. Thus, the quantity of dragon blood that can be found in today's world is very little, and magic wands made using dragon blood are rare these days.

At the moment, Basgen showed Ye Chui the magic wands. It can be observed that the magic wands were of inferior quality, as these magic wands will be used by elementary Magicians after all.

“The pairing of a magic wand and a Magician is similar to that of a long sword and a Swordsman; a Magician must choose a magic wand that he admires, but in reality, the magic wand will also choose the most suitable master. Take a look at these magic wands

and see which one allows you to accurately input your magic matrix into it.” Basgen said with a smile, suggesting that Ye Chui try all of them.

“Okay.”

Ye Chui picked up a magic wand with gleaming eyes.

Having been imprisoned for three months, Ye Chui had a new understanding of magic. Through trial and error, Ye Chui had invented many novel magic scrolls. Since magic scrolls were just parchment with magic spells carved onto them, it meant that he had created several entirely new magic spells within the three months.

Of course, it was incorrect to say that Ye Chui actually invented the novel magic scrolls, as he merely applied what he learnt to multiply the power of the magic spells. This was done by doubling or quadrupling the magic element array within the magic spell. No matter how innovative the magic spell was, there were definitely many people who had done it before. However, Ye Chui was always filled with anticipation when he carved the magic spells onto the parchment.

[If these magic spells are cast through the magic wand, what kind of image would there be?]

The casting of magic spells required one to carve the magic model in one’s memory. Ye Chui has already firmly carved the magic models of the several new magic scroll arrays in his memory.

As he picked up a magic wand, he couldn't wait to experiment and test the might of his new magic spell.

He was agitated; he didn't even think about how Basgen would react if he were to see Ye Chui cast a magic spell.

<Four times lightning>

Ye Chui chanted something in his heart, and then waved the magic wand in his hand gently.

Zila

Suddenly, a bolt of lightning exploded from the tip of the magic wand, emitting white and blue rays instantaneously. It seems as though the fury of the intermittent thunder was concealed in the air, adding tension to the atmosphere.

A hint of astonishment could be seen in Basgen's gaze. [This magic spell seems unordinary...]

However, the astonishment was temporary.

Piak the magic wand in Ye Chui's hand suddenly snapped. Electric light continued to surge and twisted a section of the black magic wand. Following an "ah!" by Ye Chui, he released the magic wand in his hand only to feel numbness on his palm.

“...” The hall became silent.

Then, Debbie came over and trampled her foot onto Ye Chui's thigh, “Why did you use the magic wand to cast an offensive spell when your offensive spell is not agile? See, the magic wand is now broken!”

While Ye Chui innocently rubbed his numb palm, he felt that something was wrong. [There definitely isn't any problem with my magic spell. Moreover, the magic spell works when I carve it onto parchment. So, why did the magic wand break when I cast the magic spell though it?]

While Ye Chui was doubtful, his body involuntarily swayed. The casting of magic spells through magic scrolls, which encompassed four times the lightning array, required the magic power of the magic ink only. However, the amount of magic power used by him in casting of <four times lightning> was equivalent to him casting <lightning> four times in one breath. Thus, it was inevitable that Ye Chui was exhausted.

He smiled helplessly and turned his head towards Basgen, “Sorry, there seems to be some problem in casting the magic spell...”

[It isn't 'some' problem, 'a lot of' problem!] Basgen had never seen someone destroy his magic wand while casting a magic spell!

[Unless... The magic spell Ye Chui cast was too strong for the magic wand to handle. But how can this happen on a level two

Magician?]

[Maybe the magic wand is the one with problems?]

“Hmph, I must give some feedback to the magic General Guild. The quality of the magic wands definitely poses some form of hidden danger to the user!” Despite thinking secretly in his heart, he smilingly said to Ye Chui, “No worries, there’s probably some problem with this magic wand. You can try the others.” After pausing for a while, he suggested, “You better not use offensive spells anymore, use other magic spells instead.”

“All right...” Ye Chui agreed.

Soon after, Basgen felt a different sense of astonishment from before – he had never seen a Magician use the lifestyle spell <breeze> so smoothly, to the extent that it is able to control a paper dancing in the air!

[He must be so bored that he mastered the magic spell.]

Eventually, Ye Chui chose the most convenient magic wand, which magic core was made from flamingo feathers and the wand itself manufactured using Tong Pear Wood.

Bringing along the free magic wand, Debbie and Ye Chui left the Magician Guild hall happily. By that time, both of them have cleanly forgotten about the magic crystal.

Basgen packed up the magic wands, before continuing to lie on the deck chair in repose with his eyes closed.

Following that, there were many Magicians who entered the building, wanting to buy some magic tools or attend to some errands.

Towards noon time, an 18 year old young Magician tirelessly walked into the Guild Hall.

Seeing the other party, Basgen sighed and welcomed him, “Oberth, you’re here again.”

“Mr Basgen, I’d like to try again.” Although Oberth, this young Magician, looked tired, he still had an arrogant look. He walked directly to the mirror at one side of the hall.

Oberth, a level three Magician, is the son of the Guild Master of Stan City’s Magician Guild. The retrieving of the magic crystal within the mirror was a challenge specially designed for him.

Oberth is the most talented Magician in the whole of Stan City. However, since Stan City was just a small place, his talent was considered average in the entire continent. There was absolutely no way that he could enter the eye of that advanced Magician. Despite the magic crystal within the mirror being just a test, Basgen knew that it is impossible for Oberth to pass this test. In reality, this challenge was just a tactful method used by the advanced Magician to reject Oberth.

Oberth's screams could suddenly be heard, "Mr Basgen, the magic crystal... The magic crystal has disappeared!"

"What?!" Basgen was startled.

# Chapter 33 – Don't Make Money Too Quickly

---

While chaos erupted in the Magic Hall due to the sudden disappearance of the magic crystal, Ye Cui and Debbie had already reached Cara's Magic Bookstore along Stardust Avenue. After leaving the Magic Guild, they roamed the streets and found a place to eat, before arriving at the store.

Thinking back on the lunch they had earlier, which cost four silver coins, Debbie held a solemn look as she spoke to Ye Chui. "Hammer, make sure that you don't casually touch any of the magic books in the store as we have to purchase the magic book once you lay your finger on it. Furthermore, I heard that the enchanting technique is very difficult to grasp, so it is expected that such a specialised teaching guide would be expensive. If it is too expensive, I would rather not buy it, since you won't be able to learn it with the little intelligence you have..."

Ye Chui rolled his eyes in frustration. [Such accusation! What do you mean by saying that I can't learn it with my intelligence?! I will ensure you swallow your words when I prove to you that I'm the Father of Studies!]

While reigning in such thoughts, Ye Chui entered the Magic Bookstore with Debbie. Like the previous time they visited, there was no one in sight in this huge store. The emptiness of the store sent chills down Debbie's spine as she couldn't help but sighed, "How can this bookstore survive till now?"

"She managed to cheat us of nine gold coins the previous time we patronised her store." Ye Chui reminded Debbie in a low voice.



Debbie became silent for a moment before sighing again, “When can we open such a shop?”

Ye Chui immediately became speechless as he was shocked by the girl’s ability to change her thinking so quickly, before walking straight to the innermost book shelf while laughing to himself, “We shall open another Magic Cottage in Stardust Avenue in the future.”

Enchanting is categorised under the scope of magic, hence the book must be placed on the magic bookshelf. Before Ye Chui reached the magic bookshelf, his eyes were already scanning the top row of books; looking out for any book title that had the faintest relation with enchanting. Unfortunately, Ye Chui was quick to discover that none of books on the entire bookshelf had the least bit of relation to enchanting.

“It isn’t here?!” Ye Chui was dumbfounded. [How is it possible that they don’t have any enchanting-related books?]

Debbie also helped Ye Chui to look through the bookshelf and confirmed that none of the books were related to enchanting. Looking at the disappointed Ye Chui, she tried to comfort him, “I recalled that father had once told me enchanting is an extremely profound technique. This type of book must be extremely precious, to the extent that the Magic Bookstore does not sell it.”

“Girl, what you said is incorrect. My bookstore doesn’t contain any enchanting-related books, not because it’s too precious, but

because it's impossible to explain the enchanting technique in a book." Cara's voice suddenly played out as she walked down the staircase nearby.

As the sound of her footsteps grew louder, the pair of slender moving legs caught Ye Chui's eyes. Next, was the alluringly tight battle dress, which showed off her wonderfully fine-tuned, muscular abdomen. Soon, a pair of perky, large swaying chest entered his view, causing him to appreciate in silence.

However, he knew what was coming next – a face attached to a pair of disgustingly large fangs, able to turn stomachs and falter hearts. Thus, while avoiding her face, Ye Chui asked in a strange tone. "Is... it because the enchanting technique is so profound that no one can write it into a book?"

"You're wrong. There're no enchanting-related books because the enchanting technique is too simple." Cara walked from the base of the staircase towards the pair with a smile on her face.

"Too simple?" Ye Chui and Debbie both turned their heads with a confused expression, only to see Cara having her meal. She was holding a roasted mutton leg in her hand...

"That's right, it's too simple." Cara continued to explain, "The enchanting technique can be explained with just a few words. And some magicians are able to completely grasp this technique in less than a day. However, there are some people who, no matter how hard or long they try, will never be able to learn such a technique. Hence, the learning of this technique really depends on one's talents. Little Brother, are you interested in learning the

enchanting technique?”

After speaking her piece, Cara’s eyes became predatory-like, staring at Ye Chui as though he was a roast lamb ready to be eaten. “I can introduce you to an Enchanting Master and assure that he would pass all his knowledge on the enchanting technique to you.”

After hearing such a melodious plan, Ye Chui was in the heavens. However, his lifted spirits quickly settled down as he became vigilant all of a sudden, “How much is the intermediary fee?”

Hahahaha! Cara laughed crudely, “It seems that you’re smart, little Brother. It’ll not cost much... Just five gold coins.”

“Five gold coins?! Why don’t you go rob a bank?” Ye Chui snapped back angrily.

Meanwhile, Cara was grinning with a self-satisfied look. No matter how she smiles, she always looks fiendish due to the two protruding fangs. With the mutton leg in her hand, she leaned against the closest wall and smilingly explained to Ye Chui, “There are at most five Magicians or Dwarfs who know about the enchanting technique within Stan City. Even if you find one of them, without my introduction, they will never teach you the enchanting technique. Thus, it’s only reasonable that I receive five gold coins as a token. Of course, whether or not you manage to grasp the enchanting technique is entirely up to you. If you manage to learn enchanting based on the enchanting technique... \*HeHe\* It would be a surprise if you don’t make money too quickly.”

“...” Ye Chui found that without her pair of horrendously large fangs, Cara’s serious facial expression would seem a lot more convincing...

Five gold coins, in monetary value according to Ye Chui’s original world, was 50000 thousand. Since it is uncertain if he would be able to grasp the enchanting technique after spending so much gold coins, both Debbie and Ye Chui were reluctant to spend the five gold coins...

Ye Chui looked at Debbie, who was showing a hesitant expression. She was clenching her teeth in deep thought, as though this was her life’s most important deciding moment. When Ye Chui was about to say something to her, Debbie unexpectedly took out a purse from her bosom happily and fished out five shining gold coins to give it to Cara. “Here’s five gold coins. Now, lead us to the Enchanting Master!”

Ye Chui, and even Cara, was shocked as to how readily Debbie took out the five gold coins from her purse.

With a few more bites, the entire mutton leg would have been engulfed by her (A scene so beautiful that I dare not describe it – Author). Even the bones were nipped clean, till it became stick-like. She threw the bones away and took out a towel at the side of her waist to clear up the grease in her hands. Once she was done, she stretched her hand out to receive the five gold coins from Debbie’s hand and placed it in the deep valley between her two mountains. With a smile, she walked towards the door of the bookstore, “Let’s go. I’ll lead you to the Enchanting Master now!”

Ye Chui and Debbie both hurried catch up to Cara as she left the bookstore. When they were by the roadside walking, Ye Chui looked at Debbie with a perplexed and surprised expression. Never would he have imagined that the person he had spent his whole childhood with, the person who was incomparable to being stingy, to have such boldness to take out five gold coins!

Watching such a scene, Ye Chui's impression of Debbie drastically changed. [She must have noticed my sincere desire to learn enchanting technique and wanted to support me. Although she might be stingy, I guess when the time comes, she will always place the more important matters over wealth.]

“Hammer...” Debbie looked towards Ye Chui and spoke in a low voice while clenching her teeth.

“Yes, Debbie?”

“This five gold coins have bought you an opportunity. If you don't manage to grasp the enchanting technique, don't ever think about getting another copper coin in your whole life!” Debbie said to Ye Chui with a look of graveness and non-leniency.

“...” Ye Chui became speechless.

# Chapter 34 – The Mithril Hammer And Chisel

---

Stardust Avenue is the most prosperous street in Stan City. Prosperity does not only refer to the liveliness of the avenue but also refer to the high level of patronage of every shop in Stardust Avenue.

To be able to purchase the best-quality merchandises in Stan City, one must go to Stardust Avenue. Similarly, most of the highly-esteemed Enchanting Masters own their very own enchanting stores in Stardust Avenue.

However, the Enchanting Master, which Cara had brought Ye Chui and Debbie to find, had his shop in an inconspicuous corner of a small alley within Stardust Avenue.

The small alley, where the Enchanting Master's shop is located, was right behind Cara's Magic Bookstore.

Right at the end of the alley was a simple straw shed, which had a dirty mess and gloom underneath it that was never before seen in the streets of Stan City. cling, clang, clong Sounds of continuous hammering reverberated from deep within the shed. From afar, the shed would seem like an ordinary blacksmith shop – definitely not a very good one in fact.

“Here?” Debbie's face was filled with worry as she thought of the disparity. It was a known fact that Enchanting Masters were people with high statuses. Seeing this decrepit shed in such an

isolated alley caused Debbie to consider the five gold coins that she used, to be wasted.

“Girl, all the races have differing views on the idea of an honoured status.” Cara turned her head back to speak as she heard Debbie’s complaint. As they moved closer to the shed, a short and strong figure could be seen. Referring to that figure, Cara introduced him, “This is Dove from Mount Blue and is recognised as the best Enchanting Master within Stan City’s.”

Hearing her introduction, Ye Chui’s heart palpitated with excitement.

[Mount Blue?] Through reading the Aigen-Dazs Continent encyclopaedia, Ye Chui knew many things about the world, such as the fact that Dwarves were split into five tribes. As legitimate Dwarves live in caves within the mountains, their tribes were naturally named after mountains. They were namely the Mount Blue, Mount Purple, Mount Black, Mount White and Mount Dragon tribes.

Cara addressed the stout silhouette of the Dwarf underneath as ‘Dove from Mount Blue’, thus it was obvious that he originated from Mount Blue.

dwarves love to live in the mountain caves, which had a dark environment. Looking at the messy and dark conditions under the shed, it seems like the dwarves had similar customs and habits like the Giants.

“Dove, come out quickly. I’ve brought you a disciple.” Cara bent down and shouted into the shed.

Not sure what when through my mind...

The cling, clang, clong stopped almost immediately. Then, the stout figure put down his iron hammer and walked out of the shed slowly.

Although the man appeared approximately 50 to 60 years old and was no taller than 1.2 metres, he did not give one the impression of being weak. Though petite, he had a muscular built and endless strength seemed to be stored within that miniscule body of his. Dwarves were born to fight wars, thus their battling abilities will definitely not pale in comparison to the Beastmen. Furthermore, since dwarves have a lifespan of about 200 years, he was considered relatively young.

He had grimy black, long hair hanging from atop his head, and a long beard that was tied into two plaits. While carrying out his work, sparks would fly close to his beard, but thankfully it would only cause it to light up slightly and was insufficient to burn his beard.

This Dwarf was wearing a thick layer of linen clothing and a dark coloured apron. However, light spots of pale discoloration could be seen on it, which was obviously the doing of the sparks.

“Dove, this little brother is called Hammer. He is very interested in the enchanting technique and he hopes that you can impart



your knowledge on enchanting to him.” Cara stood at the side, laughing.

Remaining expressionless and silent, Dove extended his callus-filled hand, towards Cara.

Both Ye Chui and Debbie stood there in a daze, before becoming furious – Cara fished out two gold coins from her chest pocket and handed it to Dove, “This is the lesson fees.”

Having noticed that Debbie and Ye Chui were fuming, Cara tried to explain in an innocent tone, “Without my introduction, how would you know this place?”

Debbie angrily brandished the great sword on her shoulder and stabbed in into the ground with a clang, before staring at Cara.

However, Cara wasn’t intimidated or influenced by Debbie’s actions. She even started smiling sweetly and curling the ends of her long hair playfully.

Dove’s eyes quickly shone brilliantly after seeing Debbie’s great sword. He quickly walked towards Debbie and used his hand to knock on the blade of the sword. Ding, Ding With a crazed voice, he exclaimed, “This is forged from good-quality black iron. Although your great sword is made of quality material, it is a pity that it isn’t enchanted. So, do you want to enchant your sword? At a token of only two gold coins, I can enchant a <Windwalk> magic matrix on your sword!”

”No!” Debbie cried out in a depressed state.

Dove apprehensively shook his head in regret and glanced at Ye Chui. Dove confronted the boy in a commanding posture, though he was only till Ye Chui’s waist level. In an arrogant and imposing manner, he spoke. “I heard that you wish to study enchanting. Good, good. Now, come with me.”

“So, am I now your apprentice?” Ye Chui asked, and continued to question. “Is there any ceremony that I have to perform?”

“There is no need!” Dove said in an indifferent tone. He turned his head to take a look at Ye Chui, revealing a slight intent of teasing in his eyes.

The whole shed was scorching hot, especially the site closest to the enormous stove that was blazing. Fuelling the stove was a pile of charcoal which was burning furiously. Dove was trying to smelt down an iron rod into a sword. Wiping away the sweat on his forehead, Ye Chui took a look at Dove, who was wearing a thick layer of linen clothing and could not help but be impressed. [It seems like the dwarves have a physique that is really unique...]

“I will only explain important pointers of enchanting once.”

Dove walked to a cabinet and took out two silver coloured items, a hammer and a chisel. He then explained, “Enchanting requires the use of these two items, a Mithril Chisel and a Mithril Hammer. The pointers of enchanting is very simple – you just need to transfer the magic matrix onto the Mithril Chisel, transfer the

magic power onto the Mithril Hammer, then hammer the armour or weapon, before the enchanting is completed”

Finishing his piece, Dove tilted his head to look at Ye Chui, who became silent.

After waiting for a few seconds, he realised that Dove had actually explained the entire process of enchanting to him. He then shockingly asked, “Is that all?”

“Yes.” Dove nodded his head with an even more teasing look on his face. [Only a few words are needed to explain The Enchanting Technique.]

Debbie, who was standing outside the store, was about to erupt into rage. She looked at Cara with bloodshot eyes, as if she was about to brandish her great sword to have it cleave into Cara.

However, Cara remained indifferent to Debbie’s anger and explained, “I’ve already said that The Enchanting Technique cannot be written in a book. It is because few words are needed to explain it. As said previously, those without talent will never be able to learn the art of enchanting, even if they were to spend their entire life trying. Instead, those that do have talent, like the dwarves, are masters upon hearing these few words.”

Ye Chui’s expression quickly changed from that of anger to a state of calmness. While in deep thought, he got a better look of the Mithril Hammer and Mithril Chisel in Dove’s hand, “Master Dove, can I try?”

“Ha!” Dove casually placed the Mithril Chisel and Mithril Hammer in his hands onto the wooden cabinet in front of Ye Chui, and took out an iron sheet. “I will give you three chances to experiment. Hahaha! Enchanting is a talent possessed by dwarves, even if human Magicians are able to learn it, it would be impossible to succeed within three attempts. If you manage to succeed, I will give my Mithril Hammer and Mithril Chisel to you for free!”

After Dove said his piece, he took out a black liquor bottle from the same cabinet, which he stored the hammer and chisel in, and twisted off the cover. gulp, gulp he drank, with eyes sparking, waiting to see a good show.

It was common knowledge that no other race besides the dwarves would be able to grasp The Enchanting Technique in just one attempt, using the Mithril Hammer and Mithril Chisel.

Cara, who was standing outside the shed, showed a curious expression but at the same time, also looked as though she was enjoying a good show.

On the other hand, Debbie was filled with anticipation, wishing that Hammer would create a miracle; although she had absolutely no confidence in him.

Ye Chui felt that he had an epiphany and held up both the hammer and chisel.

He could feel a sense of connection with the two objects once his hand connected to it. It felt as though he was holding onto his magic wand. After all, the hammer and Chisel were both made by Mithril, a marvellous material that was extremely responsive to magic. Thus, engraving a magic matrix onto metal or other objects was similar to him making scrolls with magic ink, but the effects were much stronger.

Ye Chui was prepared to carve out a magic matrix with the Chisel while pouring magic into the hammer.

This was a simple feat, but there isn't anyone who is able to complete it effortlessly, unless that person has a deep understanding of magic matrixes and is able to view all the magic symbols as one entity. Transferring the magic matrixes to the Magic Chisel is something that is at least 10 times harder compared to using a magic wand to cast a spell. If one does not have the means to transfer the magic matrixes to the Mithril Chisel, the whole matrix would simply collapse and disperse in contact with Mithril, resulting in failure.

However, such an occurrence would only come forth to those without sufficient knowledge and preparation, something Ye Chui would not fail to overcome.

In the eyes of ordinary Magicians, rows of magic symbols would seem just like magic symbols. However, in Ye Chui's eyes, magic symbols were akin to a programming language that he can manipulate and create tens of thousands of different magic effects from his understanding.

As the sharp end of the Mithril Chisel came into contact with the iron sheet, magic power is transferred to it. Bang! Ye Chui swung the Mithril Hammer and landed it on the top of the Mithril Chisel.

Gradually, a marvellous pattern started emerging on the surface of the iron sheet.

Dove took a gulp of the liquor and anticipated the failures he had seen when others took the same test of enchanting. He showed a look of ridicule towards Ye Chui, but as he continued to watch a beautiful silvery pattern form on the iron sheet, his mouth stuck open with his drink flowing out. In astonishment, he exclaimed, “Did the enchanting succeed?”

# Chapter 35 – An Enchanting Talent That Is Greater Than The Dwarves?

---

The Magic Chisel is a unique magic tool. In the hands of an Enchanting Master, a Magic Chisel would be able to perfectly carve out magic matrixes onto magic appliances. Mithril will directly seep into the magic appliances, forming a special silvery floral pattern. This is the reason why enchanted armours or weapons would have silvery floral patterns on it.

And now, as Ye Chui used the Mithril Hammer and Mithril Chisel for the very first time, silvery floral patterns started to form on the surface of the metal sheet – it was a pattern formed by the simple furnace fire array.

As Ye Chui was unsure if he had succeeded, he examined the flame-like fire patterns with a strange look. Then, while he was about to pick it up, Dove suddenly dashed over and snatched the metal sheet in Ye Chui's hands to examine it in detail first. Thereafter, he turned to Ye Chui with a surprised expression, as his line of sight continuously shuttled between both Ye Chui and the metal sheet.

Cara and Debbie, who were standing outside the straw shed, had noticed that something was amiss.

Cara frowned and quickly asked, “Dove... What happened?”

“Hammer?” Debbie inquired as well.

Ye Chui looked at Dove in an agitated manner. [Could it be that I have managed to succeed on my first try?] Although he has always regarded himself as the Father of Studies, he was still astonished by the feat he had accomplished.

Dove suddenly jumped up and grabbed Ye Chui by the collar. This muscular Dwarf seemed to be more agitated than Ye Chui, “Little rascal... Do have the genes of the Dwarves in your blood?”

Seeing Dove grab Ye Chui by the collar, she got furious immediately and bent down. Brandishing her 50kg sword with a single hand, Cara rushed to prevent Debbie from doing anything rash, “Don’t worry, everything’s fine.”

Being grabbed by the collar by Dove, Ye Chui felt extremely uncomfortable and he said hurriedly, “Judging from my height, do you think I have the genes of the Dwarves? Moreover, I’m a Magician!”

Only humans are allowed to enter the profession of Magicians – although enchanting seems similar to magic, they are obviously two totally different entities. If the blood of the Dwarves flows through a human’s body, that human would not possess the gift of magic.

Dove had just realised that he got his facts mixed up and loosened his hand on Ye Chui’s collar, though still holding on to the metal sheet with the other hand. With a surprised look, he exclaimed, “It’s the first time that I saw a person manage to succeed at



enchanted on their very first try... Little boy, your gift at enchanting is definitely at least on par with the Dwarves!”

Ye Chui had now confirmed that he had talent in enchanting and that it is as good as the Dwarves. He was also quick to understand that his personal hacker experience aided him a lot in mastering the Enchanting Technique.

The essence of enchanting is the full understanding of the magic matrixes of the Magicians. Thus, it is almost impossible for most Magicians to learn how to transfer a complete magic matrix onto the Mithril Chisel within their lifetime. However, it was a piece of cake for Ye Chui – having been in the programming industry for a long time in his past life, some strings of characters would seem 3-dimensional to him, hence cultivating his intuition.

And this intuition is the key to enchanting.

This was also the very same reason why he could spot the door in the space magic array.

Debbie stood outside the shed in a daze for a few seconds before realising what had happened. [How can it be that our dumb and slow-witted Hammer actually has the enchanting talent of a Dwarf?] This little girl suddenly felt her breathing become increasingly rapid and inserted her great sword into the hard blue stone ground. She dashed into the shed, pounced onto Ye Chui, then gave him a really, really tight hug, just like a small beast.

At that time, Ye Chui only had one thought. [I’m gonna die,

gonna die, gonna die...]

At last, Ye Chui managed to push Debbie away from his body. He then rubbed his numb arm, which was squeezed by Debbie and speechlessly look over to the joyful Debbie, “Are you that elated?”

“Of course! I didn’t expect you to have the gift of enchanting.” Debbie proclaimed, “It seems as though I saw gold coins falling out of my bag.”

“...” Ye Chui was speechless.

Thereafter, Ye Chui recalled he had something important to do. He then looked bashfully at the Mithril Hammer and Mithril Chisel that he had put down just now. Such enchanting tools could be bought at the Magic Guild, but would definitely cost an arm and a leg. Although Both Debbie and Ye Chui have a combined asset of tens of gold coins, they couldn’t bear to spend it on such expensive items. It isn’t the case that they couldn’t bear to buy the enchanting tools, but since Dove had already promised to give it to him for free, why should they spend extra gold coins on it?

Thus, Ye Chui looked at Dove and smiled, “Err, did you say that you will give me the Mithril Hammer and Mithril Chisel for free if I succeed at enchanting on my first try?”

Dove’s expression turned from one of amazement to that of shock. He was merely teasing Ye Chui, as in theory, no ordinary human being would be able to succeed at enchanting on their first attempt... but Ye Chui managed to do so. The cost of a pair of

enchanted tools are astronomical, moreover, Dove's pair of enchanted tools came from the Dwarf tribe in the blue mountain. This means that the quality of his tools is many times better than the ones human Magicians imitate.

How could he bear giving these enchanted tools away?

However, Dwarves are born straightforward and are famous for having a code of honour, thus Dove's flesh and his heart hurt while making this hard decision. After hesitating for a while, he beckoned Ye Chui to come over, "Okay, this pair of enchanted tools will be yours in the future. I hope you can use them to create fabulous pieces of work!"

Seeing that Dove kept his word, Ye Chui was more or less surprised. Of course, he accepted the gift readily and packed it with a happy heart. He then smilingly said to Dove, "Master Dove, thank you for your generosity."

"Hahaha, it's my honour to meet such a rare talented Magician like you. I can invite you to be my guest at the Blue Mountain in the near future. I believe that the Dwarves will look forward to your arrival." Dove tip-toed and patted Ye Chui's shoulders.

If Ye Chui was playing a game now, he would have received a message from the system, 'Congratulations! You have obtained a favourable impression from Dove of Mount Blue, the Dwarf Enchanting Master.'

Similarly, Debbie didn't expect Ye Chui to succeed at enchanting

on his first attempt. As she recovered from her daze, she bent down and peeked her head into the shed, “Little brother, I didn’t expect that you have the gift of enchanting. It’s really out of my imagination!”

“These five gold coins were well-spent.” Debbie smiled sweetly, as she didn’t purchase some counterfeit and inferior products.

“No, it’s two gold coins.” Cara said. She fished out three gold coins from her chest pocket and returned them to Debbie, “Previously, the two gold coins were for Dove’s lesson fees. The remaining three gold coins, which were supposed to be an introduction fee – please take it back. Who knows, we might have a chance to do business together in future.”

Ye Chui seemingly heard a message from the system again, ‘Congratulations! You have gained a favourable impression from Cara, the Beastman!’

## Chapter 36 – The Magic Crystal Can Be Regarded As A USB

---

Undoubtedly, Cara was a cunning, yet somewhat warm merchant.

After knowing that Ye Chui possessed the gift of enchanting, she immediately decided to get on good terms with him. If he were to seek help from her in the future, she would gladly do her utmost to help. Naturally, she also expects the same from him, where he would help her to the utmost if she needs it; a relationship with mutual benefits.

This was something Debbie understood very well and was delighted to receive Cara's friendship. A personal connection like this was important in business and essential when starting up something like a store.

"I have read the encyclopaedia before and it describes Beastmen as simple-minded battle maniacs. But it's different in Cara's case." While walking on the road back to the magic store, Ye Chui said in a strange tone.

"My grandfather also mentioned this too." Debbie thought for a second before speaking again. "Cara's indeed very different from your average Beastman – too intelligent. That's why she was chased out from her tribe."

"..." [I guess it's somewhat expected. Intelligence isn't a quality that is greatly regarded within the Beastmen race, since they only

value strength. Regardless of gender, if a Beastman lacks strength but is intelligent, they would probably regard that Beastman as a human – someone who isn't of their kind...] Ye Chui analysed.

They walked to the street where Anthony's Magic Cottage was located at and ran into some random pedestrians. As Ye Chui's news of return has spread to the ears of everyone around the area already, some of those who saw him crowded around him out of curiosity.

In relation to Ye Chui's disappearance, a divide in opinions was created among the people and everyone maintained an exuberant level of curiosity of wanting to know more of the truth of the matter. Thus, Ye Chui explained that he had been kidnapped by Busca for three months but managed to escape, and thanks to his fortunate encounter with the invincible Iron Swordsman, he was finally granted an opportunity to escape. Naturally, while he spoke, he highlighted the grandioseness of the Iron Swordsman.

When passing by Busca's store, Ye Chui saw that there were many people who gathered there. They were mainly people from the City Lord's Guards, who were tasked to confiscate Busca's fortune after his magic store had been officially shut down for good, and bring it back to the City Lord.

Since Busca was widely recognised as the tyrant on this street and had a hateful reputation, the surrounding neighbours were all in shock, but at the same time, gratified, after news of his death in the hands of the Iron Swordsman had reached their ears.

Watching the goods being moved out of Busca's mansion, Ye

Chui suddenly recalled the space ring in his possession.

[All of Busca's treasures are sure to be in this ring! I must quickly find a way to unravel the space array in this ring!] Ye Chui secretly swore in his heart.

During the afternoon, Ye Chui took the opportunity to diligently study the Enchanting Technique. Of course, being self-conscious of the level of his enchanting skills right now, he did not choose to repair the magic matrix on Alfea's long sword immediately.

During the evening, Ye Chui was trying his best at hacking into the space array within the ring. However, he came to the realisation that to unlock this thing, he will need to be able to comprehend the nine other magic symbols. Likewise, he also felt that if he were to use this ring to meditate, he would be able to uncover more understandings on magic symbols. Unfortunately, the elements, Space, Darkness and Light were related to the nine remaining magic symbols and were a very abstruse concept to comprehend.

Even to midnight, Ye Chui still could not manage to find any means to unlock the ring. And feeling the weight of exhaustion on his mind, Ye Chui decided to fall asleep first before doing anything else. However, when he took off his clothes, getting ready for bed, he noticed the magic crystal in his pocket that he had brought home from the Magic Hall. [I've completely forgotten about you...]

[This magic crystal is unlike those crystals harvested from magic beasts' bodies...] Ye Chui analysed and looked through the encyclopaedia in the hope to understand the marvellous uses of

this magic crystal. He managed to find out that in the hands of a Magician, this magic crystal could store information! However, that was not all there was to it. Due to its gorgeous appearance as well, this magic crystal was high in demand, unlike the normal magic crystals. Typically, normal magic crystals were quite cheap, so at the first glance, Debbie mistook this crystal as an ordinary magic crystal that was from a level one Magic Beast; completely useless in her eyes. Thus, she was greatly disappointed when Ye Chui acquired it out from the mirror.

At that point in time, Ye Chui did not have enough time to inspect the crystal and shoved it into his pockets. But at that very moment, he was earnestly researching and studying this magic crystal that he had taken in a spur of a moment.

Using his spiritual powers to analyse the magic crystal, he felt that it was akin to a USB.

[I see... I can regard this crystal as a USB.]

After more in-depth analysis, Ye Chui discovered that the storage space of this USB wasn't that small. [If I were to compare this to a normal USB, and taking an assumption that each magic symbol can be considered as a byte of memory, then this USB is at least 128MB!]

Although the USB only had a memory of 128MB, it was only considered small for a USB in his previous world. In this world, such an object is considered priceless; especially when an ordinary level one Magic Beast's magic crystal would only be able to store at most 1MB!



Of course, magic crystals can store not only magic symbols, but also a Magician's will. Thus, with this humongous amount of storage space, this magic crystal was definitely something extremely expressive. However, what made Ye Chui surprised were the contents within the magic crystals, [explanations of magic symbols!] being caught in such a sudden state of delight caused the boy to silently scream in excitement. But he forgot to speak.

In this magic crystal was a clear record of explanations regarding the 32 magic symbols. Furthermore, the explanation of each magic symbol took up 2MB of space!

Although magic symbols can be comprehended through a magic book, the most direct and effective means of learning was through the inheritance of other magicians. Whereby, one can study using their spirit. Similar to this was when a magician learns magic symbols through the input of what others stored within the magic crystals.

As the magic crystal comes with explanations of magic symbols, the value of it will be very high!

Moreover, the magic crystal makes it seem like an advanced Magician is personally teaching the person who owns it.

However, Ye Chui quickly realised that this magic crystal does not only store the explanations of the 32 magic symbols, but also a vast number of magic spells and magic arrays, including the

explanations of the said arrays. Such information made this magic crystal is worth so much more.

[With this magic crystal, it seems as though an advanced Magician is personally teaching me! The value of this thing must be at least 100 gold... No wait, it must be more than that!] After finally managing to calm his nerves, Ye Chui smiled while recalling the fortunate opportunity that came with his choice; to bring back the magic crystal once it was taken out of the mirror. [Going to the Magic Guild was really my good fortune.]

[With this magic crystal, not only will I be able to fully understand all 32 magic symbols, my understanding of magic will also be more profound.]

However, the most profitable findings would definitely be the explanations on the space magic arrays. There were so many detailed explanations that it seemed to hint that the owner of this crystal was someone who excelled in space magic.

[With this thing, I can definitely open up Busca's ring! As the saying goes, where there's a will, there's a way!]

Although Ye Chui was preparing to sleep due to exhaustion moments ago, he now became many times more energetic because of the unexpected discovery.

## Chapter 37 – Hammer, I Quite Like This

---

Just as Ye Chui was deliberating over the fact that the Magician Guild was so generous to the extent that they actually gave away a magic crystal, which was worth at least 100 gold coins, everyone in the Magician Guild Hall was frantically searching high and low for it.

The challenging puzzle, which the advanced Magician put in place, could not be easily deciphered by any ordinary human being. However, the reality was that the magic crystal had vanished from the mirror. This strange occurrence left everyone puzzled for words but the one who felt the greatest perplexity was none other than Basgen. During the time when the magic crystal disappeared, he had been laying down in the hall of the Magician Guild. [How is possible that someone took it away while I didn't notice?]

[How is it possible?!]

“It must've been the doing of one of the Magicians who came in the morning to run some errands...”

After carrying out an investigation on the internal personnel of the Magician Guild, the investigation team unanimously eliminated them as possible suspects, before targeting those who visited the Magician Guild today as the possible perpetrators.

Basgen, who had been guarding the hall way today, tried his best to recall, “I remember the last time I saw the magic crystal in the

morning was when Hammer came to the Magician Guild.”

“Who is Hammer?” Oberth, the Guild Master’s son, had a darkened expression as he immediately inquired.

“Hammer? Isn’t he the boy from Anthony’s Magic Cottage?” a clerk of the Magician Guild asked curiously.

“Yup, he’s the one.” Basgen nodded.

“What level is his Magician skills at now?” Oberth hurriedly asked, “Hammer? Snorts What kind of trash name does he have!”

“Hammer is currently a level two Magician. He was kidnapped for three months and was just rescued yesterday by the City Lord’s Daughter Lady Alfea. The City Lord’s Manor had also requested that we compensate the boy with a free magic wand.” the clerk answered, “I heard that the boy doesn’t have much talent in magic and does not have much future prospects. However, he does have sufficient skills to manage a magic store.”

“It is definitely not him!” Oberth declared – comparing his own outstanding magic talent as a level three Magician to that of Ye Chui’s. [How can this unknown figure in the magic world be much better than me in magic? And how could he have deciphered the space array and removed the magic crystal?]

“Shouldn’t we go and ask him?” Basgen had a differing thought.

“That man has gotten news that magic crystal was stolen and is fuming right now. We have to find the magic crystal as soon as possible! We don’t have the time to waste on such trash!” Oberth lashed out, “Mr Basgen, try and recall, who else had visited the Magician Guild in the morning!”

“All right then.” Basgen replied although he did not approve of Oberth’s saying that the magic crystal was stolen. After all, the magic crystal could not be considered stolen if that advanced Magician who placed it there had said that whoever is able to remove the crystal from the mirror would be able to keep it for himself... However, since Oberth was in an angry fit, Basgen did not add on anything.

[The Magician Guild is typically empty. However, for no particular reason, there were quite a few Magicians that visited in the morning...] Basgen frowned as he attempts to recall who those people were.

Unfortunately, due to Oberth’s insistence, they had eliminated the true culprit from the start.

---

~ Three days later

Dingdong!

Dingdong!

Crisp and intermittent knocking sounds could be heard from the backyard of Anthony's Magic Cottage. As Debbie laid her great sword horizontally on the ground, Ye Chui was holding onto the Mithril Chisel and Mithril Hammer, as he constantly produced the knocking sounds. On the other hand, Debbie stood at a side, looking at Ye Chui with a worried expression.

“Hammer, are you up to it? What if your enchanting fails?” Debbie asked out of worry.

“Don't worry, I've already managed to repair the enchantment on Alfea's long sword. Compared to enchanting the long sword, your great sword is much easier.” Ye Chui said in a relaxed tone, “Even if I were to fail, your great sword would not be damaged in any way. At most, your great sword would just have a silver pattern on it.”

Enchanting may sound like an extremely advanced technique and in reality, it is indeed so. However, if one were to compare it to carving magic scrolls, it would just be a level harder. Furthermore, since Ye Chui would carve 30 magic scrolls each day, he felt that enchanting wasn't that difficult.

Of course, Ye Chui no longer had to make magic scrolls. For the past few days, Debbie had allowed him to shift his focus. Instead of making magic scrolls, he was to practice and perfect the art of enchanting. After all, enchanting makes more money than selling magic scrolls!

<Wind Blade> was the only enchantment array on Alfea's long sword.

<Wind Blade> is recognised as a basic offensive spell and it isn't too hard for Ye Chui to repair, since he had read up on it in one of the books that he had bought from Cara's Magic Bookstore. Since he had been diligently studying, many of the magic arrays and spells were already memorised by him. Thus, repairing an enchanting array such as this was a simple task for Ye Chui.

Currently, his goal is to enchant the <Wind Walk> enchantment array onto Debbie's great sword.

<Wind Walk> is classified as a basic auxiliary spell, which has a function that increases the speed of an object or person. This enchantment array is the most popular amongst great sword users. After all, not only is the enchantment array capable of increasing the speed of the great sword by two times, it can also increase the might of the sword!

Similarly, in order to enchant this magic matrix onto the great sword, Ye Chui also had to form the magic model of the magic spell in his mind. In other words, he needed to learn the magic spell before he is able to enchant it onto the great sword.

This is a pre-requisite of enchanting for all human Magicians.

Typically, a Magician would need to spend a lot of time to learn a new spell, and form its magic model. However, this rule doesn't apply to Ye Chui.

Regardless if it is <Wind Walk> or <Wind Blade>; he only needs

to spend a short amount of time, before being able form the magic model. After all, for a hacker standing at the apex like him, finding out the small things that made up this spell was a piece of cake to him.

His ability would definitely cause a stir if known by many, but Ye Chui isn't aware of it.

After a while, the hammering sounds coming from the backyard stopped. Ye Chui inspected the great sword before passing it to Debbie. With a cough, he spoke. "The enchantment is completed. Try it out."

A bright, blinding light immediately shone into Debbie's eyes as she used one hand to lift the great sword. The blade was originally black in colour but at this moment, one side of it had a leaf-vein like pattern on it. In total, Ye Chui carved out four <Wind Walk> arrays onto Debbie's great sword. If one were to order this type of enchantment from an Enchanting Master, it would undoubtedly cost several gold coins.

"Two <Wind Walk> magic arrays were enchanted on each side of the great sword, so as to counter each other. When you grasp your great sword with your left hand and input sword aura into it, the magic arrays on one side of the great sword would be activated, thus producing a huge propelling force, which allows the sword to spin quickly. When you grasp your great sword with your right hand and input sword aura into it, the <Wind Walk> magic arrays on the other side of the sword would be activated, causing an opposing force in the opposite direction and the sword to halt to a stop." Ye Chui explained.



Magic power is required to activate the magic matrix. Although they both have different attributes, the sword aura and magic power is actually the same thing; they are merely named differently in different professions. The enchantment done by Ye Chui on Debbie's great sword is designed with Debbie's Giant Spinning Top attacking move in mind. When Debbie uses the Giant Spinning Top, the array on one side of the sword would be activated and her spinning speed would be increased.

If she wants to stop spinning, she can activate the magic array on the other side, which would cause a 'braking' effect and make her slow down.

"Try it out!" Ye Chui smilingly suggested to Debbie.

Debbie's eyes glint with an excited expression as she used both hands to grasp the hilt of the great sword. Following Ye Chui's instructions, she injected her sword aura from her left hand, towards one side of the great sword. The array on that side activated and made a siii siii, whistling sound. Unable to control herself, Debbie started to revolve. Meanwhile, Debbie, as though it was already planned in her head, immediately cried out in astonishment as she turned into a human top, spinning faster and faster.

The spinning speed was at least twice as fast compared to the time when she only used her pure strength!

The might was doubled as well!

If Debbie were to face off with the Protection of War God move by Carrey, she could definitely go head on against him fearlessly!

Seeing that the results of his enchanting were so successful, Ye Chui revealed a satisfied smile.

Then he cursed.

“Ahhhhh...” Debbie’s screams continued endlessly. Her petite silhouette soon became blurry as she became frantic due to the speed of the spinning.

Ye Chui yelled hurriedly, “Quickly activate the other two <Wind Walk> magic matrixes on the other side of the sword!”

However, it was obvious that Debbie couldn’t hear Ye Chui’s instructions as her speed increased tremendously. Soon, dust filled the entire backyard as though a tornado had just swept past.

“Shit, will everything be fine?” Ye Chui couldn’t help but feel worried.

Debbie suddenly let go of the great sword in her hands!

Due to the centrifugal force from the spin, 50kg great sword flew without stop, till it collided with the southern wall of the yard. Bang! Sparks flew around as the wall made of stone crumbled

under the tremendous force; creating dust clouds and fragments that shot off. It took a while before the dust settled down to reveal a great sword, half submerged into the ground, displaying its might – no difference to that of a bomb!

Debbie continued to spin like a table top, unable to stop herself. Even when Ye Chui came in to intervene with a hug, his body was beaten down to the ground. Taking the opportunity to stop, Debbie quickly sat on him.

Ye Chui felt that his body was about to fall apart, but he knew that Debbie was more important. So, he anxiously asked, “Are you okay?”

Debbie, with a dazed expression and red complexion, collapsed onto Ye Chui’s body and rubbed her head. Then, she turned her head towards the concrete wall that had collapsed due to the impact of the great sword and the pedestrians who stood at the opposite side of the street in astonishment. She looked at Ye Chui and laughed heartily, “Hammer, I quite like this.”

“...” Ye Chui was speechless.

Although <Wind Walk> is a basic magic spell, it was visibly different from the gale magic scrolls he had carved before. The gale produced by the gale magic scrolls was instantaneous. On the other hand, since <Wind Walk> was enchanted onto the weapon, the power of the wind could last for a long time if magic power is continuously supplied.

[If that is the case... Then if I enchant <Wind Walk> onto an armour, wouldn't the person be able to fly if the wind power is strong enough?]

# Chapter 38 – Even I Am Afraid Of The Ultimate Move

---

Debbie was determined to be a Great Swordswomen. Among the various classes of Swordsmen, Great Swordsmen have always been the representation of strength. For her to be able to display such a destructive force with her great sword, her words ‘Hammer, I quite like this,’ was definitely from the bottom of her heart. Her mutter caused Ye Chui to sigh in his heart as well. [You are really the epitome of a violent woman...]

The collapse of the backyard wall drew much attention as random passers-by remained dumbfounded at the scene. However, that was the least of Debbie’s concern as she was currently more focused on tidying up the backyard, before heading to the City Lord’s Manor with Ye Chui to return the long sword to Alfea.

What was the actual reason why Debbie was in such a rush to return the sword before noon? She had her own train of thoughts. [Although I’m not sure how much they would pay for the repair of the long sword, they should at least be able to treat us to a lunch, right?]

She had heard that the meals at the City Lord’s Manor’s were of a very high standard!

Following Debbie’s lead to the City Lord’s Manor, Ye Chui could not help but sigh in the depths of his heart. He did not have any means to control this greedy ‘wife’ of his.

They were not worried at about the collapsed southern wall at all. Since they had a close relationship with everyone in the neighbourhood, it was unlikely that one of their neighbours would steal from them. Likewise, the security in Stan City is renowned, with close to no pilferage cases occurring in this city. So, they could leave their house in such a state without worry.

Soon, Ye Chui and Debbie both arrived at grandest building of Stan City in Stardust Avenue. The guards that stood there were well aware of the purpose of their visit and joyfully granted them passage.

“Miss Alfea is currently in the garden. Please follow me.” One of the servants came to entertain her guests, Ye Chui and Debbie, spoke with a smile. She then led them deeper into the manor.

While Debbie and Ye Chui were led deeper into the City Lord’s Manor, both of them continuously sized up the surroundings. Not only did Debbie behave and look like a grandmother exploring the humongous garden, Ye Chui also had the appearance of one. This place was indeed a City Lord’s Manor – there was a massive mansion, expensive decoration pieces all around and even servants who would lead the way for the guests. For people who trespass into this place, they would definitely get lost. It was rumoured that there was a petty thief who actually had the guts to sneak into the City Lord’s Manor to steal. Although he had managed to loot some valuable items, he couldn’t find the way out of the manor and had no choice but to surrender himself to the authorities...

As they awed at the grandeur of the place, they soon arrived at the garden under the leadership of the servant.

Just as they entered the garden, they could hear a distant Bang! from weapons colliding.

Ye Chui was struck dumbfounded, “Is Miss Alfea practicing her swordsmanship right now?”

The servant smiled as she explained, “I heard that Miss Alfea is currently preparing for an adventure and is recruiting members to join her.”

“An adventure?” Ye Chui and Debbie both got interested.

The City Lord’s Manor garden was huge and was filled with a vast array of flora. Unfortunately, since it was autumn at that time when Ye Chui and Debbie arrived at the scene; they were only able to witness the withered leaves festering around the place. Even with all the cleaners around, the dull leaves would be carried into the air so long as the wind blew. Thus, it made the whole environment instantly seem isolated, as though the garden was a cruel place to work in for those cleaners.

Out of all these people, Ye Chui instantly notice the Alfea – a woman who was wearing a white long dress, displaying her peerless grace and talent to all those around. Without her suit of armour on, she seemed like a poised hero. In addition, there was the two meter tall Beastman in an armour suit, Athol, and the human Swordsman, who left a deep impression on Ye Chui, Balmain, who stood beside her. There was also another Swordsman called Damon, a Mercenary that Debbie was

acquainted with. He would often visit and buy scrolls from Anthony's Magic Cottage due to his liking towards Ye Chui's scrolls.

What's more, there were two human Swordsmen who were standing at the side watching the battle of yet another two human Swordsmen. In the battle was one who specialised in using the greatsword while the other was specialised in using the long sword.

The human Swordsman wielding the greatsword had a height that exceeded two meters. He had a strong and defined built, appearing to be extremely robust. If one were to compare him to Athol, the difference would not be much. Brandishing the great sword, he seemed like a perfect companion to it, easily causing over lookers to conceive his build as what all Great Swordsmen should be like.

Debbie's eyes instantly lit up. Although there were many Swordsmen around, there were rare few Great Swordsmen. In the midst of her excitement, she commented, "This Great Swordsmen is quite strong! He must be at least a level three Swordsman!"

Ye Chui was staring at the overwhelming power of the Great Swordsman, but after Debbie made her comment; he turned his head towards her. He was now looking at the girl, who was only 1.5 meters tall, who had hung a 1.6 meter tall great sword on her back and sighed. [You really practiced the wrong thing...]

Meanwhile, the servant who guided both Ye Chui and Debbie to the garden quickly went to Alfea's side. She informed the young



lady of the purpose of their visit. Immediately, Athol turned his head to look at the pair. Athol, a simple and honest Beastman, quickly became joyous as he greeted the pair with a smile. “Little Brother, did you come here to deliver Miss Alfea’s long sword? I didn’t expect you to be able to repair it so quickly.”

After he spoke, the people around took notice of Ye Chui and Debbie’s presence and looked towards their direction. Balmain also gave them a smile and a nod. Damon, the Mercenary, stood there in a daze before realising that they were the owners of a magic store. He then gave a smile to show his good faith. However, the other two people were indifferent towards Ye Chui and Debbie’s existence.

Alfea walked over to Ye Chui and took over her long sword from Ye Chui’s hand. She then examined her weapon and brandished it against a nearby tree.

Whiz a translucent blade made of wind shot out after she made her slash. The translucent wind blade shot towards the tree, causing a loud rustle with plenty of branches and leaves falling down. This was a test initiated by her to check the effectiveness of the array, and the results were satisfying.

“You’ve actually managed to repair the magic matrix on my sword.” Alfea said. However, her voice soon turned mature, at least for someone who was 15-16 years old. “Your enchanting technique is excellent. And according to the market price, I shall give you 50 silver coins as the price for reparation.”

“Thank you, Miss Alfea.” Ye Chui said hastily, while Debbie, who

was standing beside him, had a blossoming grin plastered on her face. [If it was before we became richer, I wonder how long she would stand here with that greedy grin on her face...]

Suddenly, a bang! rang through the entire place.

Everyone turned their heads to the source of the sound to find that it came from a powered slice by the greatsword wielding Swordsman. Meanwhile, the long sword wielding Swordsman was sent flying by that powerful attack. When he finally landed on the ground, his long sword had already been broken in two. Furthermore, with the blows he had taken, he was only able to slowly crawl on the ground. When he tried to make bigger movements, he vomited out blood. In his current state, he could only lie on the ground with a reluctant expression stuck on his face.

It was obvious that the victor and loser had been determined in this battle.

“Miss Alfea, does Bolton, my younger brother, qualify to join you in your adventure?” A swordsman clad in red armour, which both Ye Chui and Debbie did not recognise, spoke in a joyful manner, “Although my brother is only a level three Swordsman, he’s a Great Swordsman! He’ll definitely be someone who can hold his own in battles and aid in strengthening battling capabilities.”

“Of course.” Alfea hurriedly kept the long sword in her hand and responded with a smile. “Mr. Guthem, since your younger brother managed to defeat an already recognised Swordsman, he is naturally qualified to join my squad.”

“That’s great.” Guthem, who was clad in red battle armour, said smilingly. With a wide grin, he walked to Bolton’s side and patted on his brother’s shoulder. However, Bolton just stood there and smiled, as though he did not understand his older brother’s signalling.

“So, have we formed our squad?” Guthem turned his head towards Alfea and asked.

Just as Alfea was about to respond to Guthem, Balmain suddenly injected, “I suggest that we increase the size of our squad to include one more person.”

“What?” Everyone exclaimed and stared at Balmain with perplexed looks on their faces; Debbie and Ye Chui were no exception.

Balmain then extended his finger and pointed towards Ye Chui. “This little brother is an Enchanting Master. Since we are going to an ancient tomb, which is filled with all sorts of magic traps, we need an Enchanting Master, who is specialised in the traps, so as to detect and disable them. So, I suggest that we invite this little brother to join us!”

“Me!?” Ye Chui was dumbfounded. He had never expected an invitation to join them on their adventure.

Alfea frowned as she contemplated on Balmain’s suggestion. She then looked towards Ye Chui and asked, “Hammer, I would like to

formally invite you to join us on our venture? After the adventure is complete, 10 percent of any harvest we find will belong to you. Are you agreeable with these terms? Oh, since you are our Enchanting Master, we will protect you with all our might in this risky adventure.”

“Well.... This is...” Ye Chui hesitated.

“Hammer, we really need you.” Balmain patiently tried to persuade him, “Please believe me when I say that this adventure will bring you no small amount of riches. What’s more, we will protect you with the best of our capabilities. Moreover, we will sign an oath contract manufactured from the church, thus you can be assured that we will keep our promise.”

After hearing Balmain words, Ye Chui had to acknowledge that he was tempted by this good offer. He knew that such an opportunity was one in a million, and often, returning from such a trip would normally yield no small amount of profit. Hence, every Swordsman, Mercenary, Magician, Follower and Knight, would jump at the opportunity whenever it arises.

What’s more, with the restriction of an oath contract, he need not worry about the other part not keeping their promise.

However, before he could say anything, Debbie quickly interrupted, “No! If you desire Hammer to join you on this adventure, I must tag along as well!”

Everyone stared at Debbie with shock.

“Hold on, girl. Aren’t you a Great Swordsman as well?” Guthem, who was wearing red armour, said with a sneer, “We already have a Great Swordsman in our team and we do not require another one. If you wish to join us, you have to defeat my younger brother first!”

The tall and muscular Bolton wielded his great sword in a display of power. The thought of being able to bully a little girl seemed to make Bolton excited...

“Debbie, there no need for this. If push comes to shove, I can just choose not to join.” Ye Chui knew very well that Debbie was worried for his safety, and thus, pushed for her own recruitment. However, if he could forgo the opportunity to go on an adventure just to ensure Debbie’s safety.

However, Debbie’s eyes sparkled as she explained. “I’ve heard of others who participated in an adventure to the ancient tombs. It is rumoured that one can earn dozens of gold coins, how can I possibility forgo such an opportunity?!” She lowers her voice and continued to whisper to Ye Chui, “What’s more, this guy called Bolton, he looks quite dumb. If he is only one level higher than me, I think I can take him down. I have my great sword which you have just enchanted. Didn’t you see my Ultimate Move: The Giant Spinning Top? What do I have to be afraid of? I do not think I will fall short of him.”

Ye Chui remained silent, or rather, speechless. [Debbie, you really need to change those pair of greedy eyes. This kind of sickness needs to be controlled!]

It was tacitly understood that this was just like the battle earlier. Just like how Bolton had beaten the Long Swordsman in battle and gains his place in the team; the new challenger must defeat him to take over his place. Hence, Debbie stood tall; at least she tried to, as she held her great sword and pointed it towards Bolton. “Alright! Let’s fight!”

# Chapter 39 – The Power Of The Giant

## Spinning Top

---

Standing at only 1.5 meters tall, Debbie had a petite build that made her seem like a little girl from the neighbourhood. As she brandished the 50kg greatsword in the air, she pointed to a man, who had a height of more than two meters and seemed to be the symbol of the term ‘human tank’ and screamed, “Tall one, let’s fight!”

This scene was so weird to the extent that everyone’s minds were frozen from shock for a second.

Even Ye Chui could not contain himself – his gaze quickly dropped to the floor. He was so embarrassed to the point that he wished to hide his face from the world...

However, on the other hand, Debbie felt totally comfortable in this situation. This girl started to dash towards Bolton with battling intent in her gaze. The determination seen on her adorable face made everyone feel the fire to fight within her.

[This strong girl definitely has the passion for battling.] Most people at the scene would subconsciously have this thought in their heads. However, Ye Chui was the only person in the crowd who knew that this strong girl’s true passion was for gold coins...

Ye Chui knew that he was unable to stop Debbie from battling. Though he was worried for her, he subconsciously developed a sense of anticipation in his heart, as he thought of the collapsed

southern wall in their backyard. Nevertheless, he also subconsciously grabbed the magic wand at his waist and held it in his hands, while untying the knot of the magic robe. Although Debbie did not request for him to carve any magic scrolls these few days, Ye Chui still made some strengthened basic magic scrolls just for self-defence. And now, he had 30 of those strengthened magic scrolls in his magic robe.

Ye Chui was thus confident of rescuing Debbie, if any unfortunate accidents occur later on.

Alfea, Athol, Balmain and Damon regained their senses quickly. Fearlessness was the most advocated quality in the warrior profession. Hence, Debbie's courage to step up and battle Bolton was certainly a surprise to many in the crowd. Furthermore, a petite stature does not mean much in this magic world. For instance, Alfea is already a level five Swordsman – who would have imagined that she had the capabilities to take down everyone at the scene?

“Little girl, I wish you all the best and I hope that you can be victorious!” Alfea encouraged Debbie with a smile.

Ye Chui had a thought in his mind. [Alfea's encouragement would have been more effective if she had said that the reward for winning the battle was 10 gold coins.]

Alfea's desire for Debbie to emerge victorious seemed to have upset Guthem, who was in red battle armour. He then walked over to his little brother and whispered to him, “Bolton, leave no mercy!”



Bolton looked at Debbie with bright eyes – he felt that the vast difference in body size would allow him to torture her easily. He then replied his brother, “Bro, I won’t disappoint you!”

“Silly boy, you’re fighting for your own glory, not mine!” Guthem sternly warned him.

Bolton gave a foolish laughter, “I got it, bro.”

Everyone in the field made way for the battle, while Debbie and Bolton stood exactly opposite each other, with a greatsword in their hands.

The clash between the two strong Great Swordsmen thus begins.

Bang!

Bang!

The deafening sound produced by the strong impacts of the clashing of the greatswords was a unique characteristic of battles between Great Swordsmen. The slashing of the great sword would leave a trail of disaster behind – some flora in the garden was not spared from the battle as well. This caused the servant gardeners, who were sweeping at a distance, to look straight immediately. [Indeed, you guys don’t know the pains of taking care of the plants...]

Debbie and Bolton soon had multiple clashes with each other.

Bolton was a level three Swordsman, who had a muscular built, while Debbie was a level two Swordsman, who had a petite stature. No matter which aspect does one look at, Bolton does have the edge over Debbie at winning. However, in reality, the skills proved to be equally-matched in the tense battle.

[It's because Debbie's greatsword had been enchanted!] Ye Chui thought to himself.

Although Debbie had often caused Ye Chui to be speechless, since she chose the profession of a Great Swordsman, it means that she has an innate talent to battle. Despite only using the enchanted greatsword only once, Debbie had already mastered the technique of how to use the <Wind Walk> array perfectly. She could, in the instant when the great sword swings down, activate the array and increase the power of the great sword tremendously. This gave her a huge advantage in the battle.

Guthem, who was in red battle armour, increasingly became stone-faced. [How can my little brother be unable to defeat this girl after so long into the battle? It's such a disgrace!] He then shouted involuntarily, "Bolton, you idiot! Take her down quickly!"

Hearing his brother's words, Bolton instantaneously became tense. He suddenly gave a loud shout, sprang up with both his hand grasping the greatsword, then swung his sword downwards fiercely!

The power and aura he had was frightening to many, thus Debbie dodged his attack by evading to the side with her greatsword quickly.

Boom! A big hole was created on the blue stone ground.

If the blow was to land on a person, the person would have lost his life. Bolton gave a blood-thirsty sneer and wailed, before continuing to attack Debbie with such overwhelming, yet clumsy method.

Thus, the blue stone pathway leading to the garden had a few more big holes in it. The servant gardeners stared at Bolton with their eyes in fury. [Do you know that we have to repair the ground?!]

Bolton's attacking method seemed to have exhausted his physical strength and sword aura, but he wasn't lacking in these two things. Pound after pound, his self-satisfying laughter became increasingly louder and dangerous aura can be felt all around him.

Debbie started to retreat.

It was about time for Debbie to showcase her ultimate attacking move.

She nimbly did a backflip to distance herself from Bolton, then grabbed her great sword with two hands and took a deep breath.

“This little girl is about to lose!” Guthem laughed indifferently.

Alfea, Athol and the others gave a worried expression. Debbie’s petite, yet courageous silhouette has already won over their support.

Ye Chui already knew what Debbie was about to do and his eyes lit up instantly.

Soon after, no matter who it was – Alfea, Guthem, or those servant gardeners, who were still fuming over the damaged blue stone ground and the destroyed plants – all of them had their eyes wide open. The little girl, who held the great sword with her two hands, started spinning at an increasing speed and the friction between the air and the blade of the sword produced a whizzing sound.

The scene just resembles a giant spinning top. As the spinning speed increases, the fallen leaves and dust in the garden started flying into the air, forming some sort of ‘tornado’.

It was the first time Bolton had seen someone use this attacking move.

In fact, no one in the crowd had actually seen this attacking move before, except for Ye Chui. Hence, all of them had a jaw-dropping expression plastered on their faces.

‘Ahhhhh...’ Intermittent screams of either excitement or shock

came from Debbie's mouth.

Her screams jolted Bolton awake. Having felt that danger was imminent; he quickly held onto his great sword with two hands and raised it above him. Bolton then let out a loud shout, before looking up to Debbie.

Dang!

It was noon at that moment, when the sun was still shining brightly in the sky. The sunlight reflected by the shiny blade of the great sword maliciously blinded the eyes of the crowd.

After Debbie used the Giant Spinning Top, she was now both on the offensive and defensive side of the battle. She also perfectly made up for the weakness of all Great Swordsmen – stiffness of movement. As Bolton looked up, he was immediately swept away by the moving great sword and an awful doong could be heard.

Bolton's great sword slipped out of his hands.

Following the strong impact, Bolton's huge body fell backwards uncontrollably.

Not decreasing the speed of the great sword, Debbie spun herself over to Bolton's body.

At this moment, Debbie's great sword had an immense amount of power stored within it. Let alone Bolton, even small rocks would

be crushed to pieces when dealt with the great sword!

“Debbie!” Ye Chui screamed hurriedly. It is inevitable for injuries and deaths occur in such battles and Debbie would not have to be responsible for any injury or death, but Ye Chui does not want Debbie to actually take someone’s life.

In an instant, the blade of Debbie’s greatsword brushed past Bolton’s head.

Suddenly, the wind in the garden seemed to have lost its power and direction, as it started to disperse in all directions.

Debbie maintained her pose with both her hands holding onto her great sword – her body leaned forward slightly, as the blade of her sword was merely inches away from Bolton’s brain. She had managed to stop her greatsword and posed in such a manner just inches from his brain.

It was the braking effect of the two <Wind Walk> arrays, which Ye Chui carved onto the other side of the sword.

Of course, Debbie perfect control of the arrays was also pivotal in stopping in time.

Spinning the great sword was easy, but making it stop suddenly at such a high speed was no easy feat. After managing to pull off this difficult task, her arms started trembling due to the exhaustion.

But... She won.

Bolton, who had been sent flying by Debbie's spinning greatsword, had just landed underneath a tall tree. The impact of Debbie's spinning greatsword caused Bolton's sword to be lodged right in the centre of the tree trunk.

Sitting motionlessly on the ground, Bolton's eyes glanced at his great sword, while intense fear overwhelmed his patience. Then, this tall and muscular man started wailing in fright...

# Chapter 40 – Struck By Lightning

---

From the time Debbie used her ultimate attacking move, the Giant Spinning Top, to the time she achieved victory by engulfing everyone's eyes with a blinding light; the entire process took merely a few seconds. These few seconds were sufficient to make everyone dumbfounded, as no one would have imagined that a Great Swordsman would be able to pull off such a move that had a perfect combination of both defence and offense elements. Witnessing the lethality of the 'Giant Spinning Top' left all at the scene astonished; as they widened their horizons today.

Ye Chui's nervousness quickly dissipated and was replaced by pride. [This little girl sure is talented in battling...]

He noticed from Debbie's posture and grasp of her great sword, that stopping the sword consumed no small amount of her strength. Hence, he was prepared to immediately walk to her side to support her once the dust has settled.

However, at this very moment, a man was a step faster than Ye Chui – it was Guthem, the man wearing red battling armour!

With a face cold as ice, he approached Debbie while taking out the long sword on his waist.

Alfea and the others were still stunned by the shocking result of the battle and did not realise Guthem's plan. However, Ye Chui noticed the anger in his eyes and could foretell what was going to happen.



Therefore, Ye Chui quickly waved the magic wand in his hand.

A white-coloured wind blade was suddenly released from the magic wand. Zila It sliced the grassy ground right in front of Guthem, creating a deep gully.

[Basic Offensive Spell, <Wind Blade>]

Since Ye Chui was able to fix the <Wind Blade> magic matrix on Alfea's sword, he would have naturally mastered this spell.

Having noticed the gully that had suddenly appeared on the ground, Guthem's murderous face turned towards Ye Chui with an ominous stare.

Before he could do anything, Ye Chui was already standing beside Debbie. With a wave of his hand, a few magic scrolls, which had not been activated yet, were casually thrown out by him. Although Ye Chui tossed the magic scrolls towards Guthem, they did not fall onto the ground. Instead, they were floating in mid-air mysteriously. From afar, Ye Chui used his magic wand to control these magic scrolls and make them surround Guthem.

[Basic Life Spell <Breeze>]

“Eh, what are you up to? Admit defeat! Or do you plan to go back on your words?!” Ye Chui spoke with a hint of teasing.

Guthem glanced at the magic scrolls floating around his body and smiled callously, “Magic scrolls? I heard that you defeated Carrey, the disgrace of the City Lord’s Guard, using these, but do you actually think the magic scrolls will be effective against me?”

Bang!

After Guthem spoke his piece, a magic scroll floating beside his face was activated and flames started spewing out of the magic scroll in all directions, engulfing Guthem’s figure inside a sea of fire.

However, Guthem was unlike Carrey, the piece of trash. He was able to feel the movement of energy within the magic scroll at the instant when the scroll was activated. Hence, at that moment, he turned his body to a side and did a nimble backflip, evading the attack of the blazing flames.

However, there were a few strands of hair on a side of his head that were not spared from the flames, as a burnt stench could be noticed.

Ye Chui’s attack made Guthem enraged and he roared, “You must be courting DEATH!”

As he let out a loud scream, he held up his long sword high into the air, preparing to strike down Ye Chui with one ferocious attack.

After a Ziz was heard, a lightning scroll was activated directly above him.

It seems as though a lightning flashed through the bright sky.

And Guthem happened to be holding his long sword high in the air...

Therefore, strikes after strikes of lightning passed through his body by the 'lightning rod' at a high speed. Everything happened too fast for Guthem to even react to the situation. In the next instant, Guthem's flowing hair exploded into a mess, while his face was burnt black.

Ye Chui was immediately delighted upon witnessing that scene. [You deserve to be struck by lightning wearing something like that.]

However, Guthem was a level four Swordsman, who has a muscular physique and strong body. Although Ye Chui's magic scrolls had been modified to make it four times stronger, Guthem was unfortunately not fatally wounded. Instead, it simply made him angrier. He showed off a grin, trying to cool down his anger as he spoke, "Good. It seems that you do have the skills to humiliatingly defeat Carrey, that piece of rubbish. But I am not Carrey. Let's see just how many more magic scrolls can you continue using?!"

"Many." Ye Chui cunningly replied as he opened his magic gown – there were numerous small pockets sewn on the insides of the

magic gown and there were magic scrolls in every pocket. Judging from the number of pockets, there were at least a few dozen magic scrolls in his gown.

“...” Guthem turned speechless.

“Enough!” Alfea finally regained her senses and quickly rushed between the two. Calming herself down with a deep breath, she coldly looked at Guthem and asked, “Where do you think this is?!”

It was obvious from Guthem’s facial expression that he was holding in his rage. However, he dared not rashly attack Alfea. Although she is a mere level five Swordsman and was only 15 or 16 years old, he knew that she was a talented Swordsman. Even if there were three of him, he would still not be her match. Furthermore, they were inside of City Lord’s Manor.

Even at a disadvantage, he was still reluctant to let go. Staring coldly at both Ye Chui and Debbie, before shifting his gaze to his crying little brother on the floor, who had no strength to stand, he clenched his teeth in tolerance.

“Guthem, if you dare to continue this farce, then I will ensure that you will not live to see tomorrow.” Balmain suddenly arrived beside Guthem and pulled out two tall and slender daggers, before placing one at his neck, and the other at the artery on his thigh.

Since Balmain was a well acclaimed Dual Swordsman, Guthem had no choice but to give in. Finally, he managed to constrain his anger and returned his long sword to the side of his waist. Raising

both hands, he gave a defeated smile while speaking, “I’ve made a mistake. How would I dare to cause such trouble within the City Lord’s Manor?”

Balmain slowly withdrew his daggers and placed them back to his waist. He then looked at Ye Chui with a face full of surprise.

However, Balmain was not the only one who was impressed with Ye Chui. Alfea, Athol, Damon, as well as another swordsman also had surprised looks on their faces, as they looked towards Ye Chui. Earlier on, Debbie, who had taken down Bolton with an unimaginable style, already left them in deep shock. But, they were even more impressed with Ye Chui, who was a level two Magician. If they were to consider the rumours between Carrey and Ye Chui, it was obvious that Carrey’s defeat was true. Even they themselves, now felt that retreat would be a more viable option when confronting a magic scroll master like Ye Chui.

Noticing that there was no longer any danger, he waved his magic wand, causing those scrolls that were floating in the air to fly back into his pockets. Even this simple move was shocking to the masses, as they had never seen someone so skilled with the magic spell, <Breeze>.

Ye Chui looks towards Debbie and asked, “Are you okay?”

“I’m fine... Just a little tired...” Debbie replied as she stabbed her great sword into the ground. With both hands holding onto the grip, she also looked at Ye Chui with astonishment. She thought to herself, [In the past, Hammer would always hide behind me when something went wrong. But now, it seems that he has changed...]

[Of course, he has changed for the better!]

Debbie returned a sweet smile to Ye Chui.

Ye Chui turned around and smiled at Alfea, “So is Debbie allowed to join in your adventure now?”

“Of course.” Alfea nodded with a smile as well, “I have not seen such a Great Swordsman like her before. Having her on my team would be such an honour.”

Debbie immediately pumped her fist up in excitement.

“Since the eight members of our team have been confirmed, Little Brother, I will introduce everyone to you.” Balmain said.

Ye Chui already knew Athol and Damon.

Guthem, the level four Swordsman was beside his depressed younger brother, who was still crying. He took a look at Ye Chui with cold and cloudy eyes but did not say anything.

As for the other swordsman at the scene, he was known as Bill; a level four Swordsman.

Since this was considered as a personal adventure, the team members were recruited by choice. Therefore, there were City

Lord Guards such as Athol and Balmain, while the rest were mainly from the Mercenary Guild.

After the introduction, the servant, who brought Ye Chui and Debbie to the garden, took the injured Bolton away.

On the other hand, Ye Chui was baffled as once he did a head count, he noticed that there were only seven people present. Therefore, he asked, “Where is the eighth person?”

“That person is a Magician.” Alfea spoke with a smile. “He seemed to be busy as of late. So, he didn’t manage to come today. However, I can give you an introduction of him now. He is Stan City’s most talented young Magician. He is the son of the Magician Guild Master, Oberth.”

# Chapter 41 – The Most Degenerated Family In History

---

“Oberth’s magic talent far surpasses his father. I heard that he’s about to be a disciple of a level nine Magician. If that happens, his future achievements would be limitless! He might even have a chance to enter the Specialist Realm!” Listening to Alfea speak about Oberth, the indifferent man who was standing beside his little brother, spoke with much respect towards Oberth, while looking at Ye Chui with a gaze of disdain, “His magic is definitely much stronger compared to that of an unorthodox Magician.”

Ye Chui turned his head towards Guthem and sneered. HeHe

Guthem was speechless, “...”

[So what if he is talented young Magician? It doesn’t concern me in any way.] Ye Chui thought to himself. However, he was more concerned about the friction between Guthem and himself. [What if Guthem purposely sabotages, hinders, or even threatens me while we are exploring the ancient tomb...]

Alfea seemingly noticed Ye Chui’s worry and with a smile, she tried to console him, “Those who join our team on the adventure will need to sign an Oath Contract. During our adventure, if anyone were to violate the contract, the person would encounter the wrath of the Oath.”

“How mysterious...” Ye Chui already knew the existence of the Oath Contract. However, what he wished to unravel was the



operating principle behind it. [Is it due to magic? It seems like it's something advanced...]

Alfea smiled and within her palm, she presented a folded piece of paper to Ye Chui, "This is the contract for our adventure." She then looked at both Ye Chui and Debbie. "Both of you should have a look. Fill in your names if there are no issues."

Ye Chui received the contract and opened it up. After reading it, he then passed it to Debbie.

The contents of the contract were not complicated. 'If a person from the public was to join this private adventure, the person cannot mutually circumvent or wound their teammates during the period of adventure. Otherwise, the perpetrator would receive the Oath's tribulation. After the adventure, the initiator, Alfea, would receive 30% of the prize, while all the other members would each receive 10%.'

Furthermore, there were additional clauses of various classifications.

Under the clauses were the signatures of the fellow participants of the team: Alfea, Athol, Balmain, Damon, Bill, Guthem and even Oberth; leaving out two spaces to be filled. It was at this moment that Ye Chui noticed that the contract had a line of small letters written at the bottom of the page, saying 'The Oath Contract is made by the glory from the church's light. The quality is assured and the price is kept cheap at one gold coin.'

After seeing the line of words, Ye Chui could not keep his cool any longer. [Haiz, the high standard that a contract should have immediately dropped due to this line of words...]

Ye Chui seriously scrutinised the contract and realised that it was made of a material no different from the ordinary parchment. He then started to question the effectiveness of the so-called Oath effect of the contract. However, just as both Debbie and Ye Chui filled in their names on the contract, an unexpected thing happened – a golden ray of light, which could be seen by the naked eye, emerged from the surface of the contract and covered both of them. Moreover, Ye Chui had an unexplainable feeling.

“The contract is now established.” Alfea took the contract from Ye Chui’s hand and glanced at their signatures. With a slight movement of her hand, the contract disappeared instantaneously – it was probably kept into her space ring, “Our adventure will commence in 10 days. Debbie and Hammer, do take this time to prepare yourselves.”

“Miss Alfea.” Debbie suddenly thought of something important and inquired, “At which tomb are we conducting the adventure? Is it far?”

Hearing Debbie’s questions, Alfea uncontrollably laughed. Athol, Balmain and the others also had a slight smile involuntarily plastered on their faces. Balmain thus explained, “The ancient tomb is located very far away, but we only need an instant to enter that tomb – it is the Doria Tomb.”

“Doria Tomb?”

Upon hearing the name of the ancient tomb, Ye Chui and Debbie simultaneously became dumbfounded. Suddenly, Hammer's memory quickly flashed through Ye Chui's mind; and this made him understand the meaning of the Doria Tomb.

Doria Tomb was a type of ancient tomb. This type of ancient tomb was usually hidden within a massive space magic array, and was not located in any part of Aigen-Dazs Continent. It was thus no wonder that Balmain said that the tomb was located in a very remote place.

As long as one had the key to enter the ancient tomb, one would be able to enter the tomb instantaneously, no matter the time or place.

This ancient tomb was named as such due to the relationship with the Doria family.

The Doria family was a huge magic family, which existed around 2000 years ago; and the members of this family were masters at space magic. The entire family specialised in manufacturing space rings, space necklaces and other space products, which were of good quality and popular with the masses. At the same time, the Doria family, till this day, was still managing a special magic service: burial service.

There were some famous Swordsmen, Magicians and Knights, who hoped that their graves would remain forever. In order to achieve this, they would build their grave tomb in a massive space

array, thus opening another space, which would allow their bodies and treasures to remain to the end of time.

The Doria family had been providing this burial service for about 1000 years. There were countless Knights, Swordsmen and Magicians who trusted the construction of their grave tombs in a space array to the Doria family; most of which were well-known characters in Aigen-Dazs Continent.

Then, about 1000 years ago, something surprising happened – the Doria family encountered an unprecedented disaster, where the entire family was wiped out by another strong family!

At the same time, a book which recorded the grave tomb magic array was divulged to the whole world.

Through the recording of incidents in this book, one would understand the core of the grave tomb magic array and manufacture a space key to enter the grave tomb. Therefore, a tide of ancient tomb adventurers started from there. From statistics, it is recorded that there were more than 1000 grave tombs that had been looted within the past 100 years... Maybe it should be said that these adventurers gave these ancient tombs the name of 'Doria's Tomb'.

In contrast to the riches and wealth seen inside of a 'Doria's Tomb', the adventurers now marked the Doria Family as 'History's Most Degraded Family'.

It was rumoured that there was a small group of Doria family

descendants that tried to restore the fortune and fame they once had. However, it was easier said than done.

Occasionally, the entrance to a Doria's Tomb would appear in front of people, and this time, it was Alfea's luck to have accidentally obtained the Tomb's Keys; presenting her a chance to form an exploration group.

"The Ancient Tomb Master lived 1300 years ago. He is said to have been a rank 9 swordsman. So, I suspect that there are many valuable treasures from his ancient tomb." Alfea said with a smile. When she continued to speak, she turned towards Ye Chui and Debbie, "In ten days, our adventure will commence. So, you must be well prepared by then!"

"Miss Alfea, I understand." Debbie's face turned ruddy from the thought of the exciting adventure ahead.

"Good." Alfea returned a nodding grin and she turned to look at Damon, Bill and Guthem. "We shall meet in ten days."

What she was implying was for the visitors to leave. Therefore, the three of them bid farewell to each other as a form of respect.

On the other hand, Ye Chui was a little frightened. [If we go now, won't I have to miss lunch? If only Debbie wasn't so stingy.... I was anticipating a good western lunch later...]

Everyone successively left the Manor while Ye Chui walked along

with Debbie expressing his depressed emotions.

Guthem, who was leading his brother away, looked back at Ye Chui from afar. Seeing both Debbie and Ye Chui gradually moving away, his expression remained ice cold and cloudy. With his hair in a mess, including some burnt marks on his face and his loose tattered red amour, Guthem was in a pathetic state.

“Elder Brother, are we going to let them leave like this?” Bolton asked after noticing his brother’s ugly complexion.

“We have signed an Oath contract so, I cannot initiate a fight with them now... But!” Guthem’s eyes flashed a murderous light as he snorted. “Just wait until our adventure is over!”

# Chapter 42 – Iron Swordsman 2.0 Initiate!

---

Night had fallen.

But the light in Ye Chui's room within Anthony's Magic Cottage was still shining brightly.

Within the room, Ye Chui sat cross-legged on his bed, with Busca's space ring placed in the heart of his palm. As he closed his eyes and knitted his eyebrows together, he tried to study and unravel the secrets of the space magic array within the space ring.

Three days after obtaining the magic crystal, Ye Chui managed to fully comprehend the nine remaining magic symbols in the fastest speed possible. Assiduously researching about the magic crystal using the space magic articles that he had obtained, Ye Chui managed to obtain a brand-new understanding of space arrays.

When Ye Chui tried to unravel the secrets of the space ring on his first few attempts, he could only do so by trial and error, as though he was a blind man trying to cross the river – only capable of fumbling, losing his sense of direction, or even drowning.

Every step of the process was incomparably difficult.

However, with the new understanding brought about by the magic crystal, he could see the light at the end of the tunnel.

This made him recall the first time he had tried to hack into the

back-end system of a website. Although he started clueless as to how he should go about it, he soon managed to get the hang of it, after understanding the principle by which the back-end system works on and having a clear thought process of how he should do it.

Hacking into the back-end system of a website and deciphering the secrets of the space ring was obviously two different entities, but they both seemed similar in the eyes of Ye Chui. The explorative, yet challenging aspect of this task gave him the motivation and joy he needed to carry on.

Suddenly, Ye Chui opened his eyes.

“I did it!”

Ye Chui’s spiritual power permeated into the space ring. He stimulated the operational principle of the space magic array, carried out a series of attempts, before finally managing to open the door which was hindering his consciousness from exploring. He also conveniently modified the blockade array of the space magic array. In magical terms, Ye Chui had managed to ‘tame’ the ring.

At the same time, Ye Chui felt immense exhaustion, but the thought of resting had never crossed his mind. In an instant, everything within the space ring was retrieved.

Huala! Ye Chui’s mattress was immediately covered with things.



The items that caught Ye Chui's eyes first were two brass coloured cards!

These were actually Gnome Bank gold coin cards. Ye Chui hurriedly held the two gold coin cards in his hands and scrutinised them. He then realised that each gold coin card had 100 gold coins stored within it – it means that were 200 gold coins in total!

There were still some other gold and silver coins scattered around his bed. After counting the coins, he made a conclusion – there were eight gold coins, 23 silver coins and 46 copper coins.

“I knew it! Busca had hidden all his wealth within the space ring!” Ye Chui's face was filled with ecstasy and surprise.

At first, Busca could readily take out 100 gold coins from his chest area when Ye Chui demanded it from him. However, after Busca was murdered, there wasn't anything valuable on his body. This led Ye Chui to think that Busca had kept all his wealth within the space ring, and it turned out to be the case. 200 gold coins was not a small amount!

Following that, Ye Chui proceeded to go through the other items – several magic scrolls, normal magic items, clothes and even a piece of women's lingerie... It seems like Busca had a unique fetish.

Suddenly, Ye Chui's eyes lit up as he noticed an exquisite box.

“What's inside this box?”

Ye Chui hurriedly held up the box in his hands. As he did that, he could sense intermittent waves of energy moving about in the box and immediately knew that this box was not any ordinary item. Hence, he carefully opened the box and a ray of light blue light covered his face thereafter. Ye Chui's eyes opened even wider, "This... is a magic stone! And it's a magic stone of the highest grade!"

A magic stone is a kind of mineral that contains magic power.

Magic stones were commonly seen, as magic furnaces relied solely on these to provide magic power. Similarly, some battle armours actually had magic stones inscribed into them to allow magic arrays to function. In simpler words, magic stones were akin to batteries, just that they provided magic power instead of electrical power.

The magic power encompassed within a magic stone differed from stone to stone. Low-grade magic stones, which had limited magic power stored within them, were used for magic furnaces, since they were only able to operate simple magic arrays, such as the furnace fire array. On the other hand, the magic stone retrieved from Busca's space ring was definitely of the highest-grade. As such, the value of such a magic stone could be as high as tens of gold coins!

Of course, the discovery of this piece of magic stone made him very excited.

[Magic stones of this kind cannot be bought in the market, no matter how many gold coins one has, as it is very precious and rare. I was originally worried about the supply of magic power for my Iron Swordsman suit. But now, with this magic stone, everything can be resolved!]

Ye Chui hurriedly jumped off his bed and ran to his table. From the thick encyclopaedia, he pulled out a loose piece of paper, which had a drawing of a human armour suit, drawn using goose feathers.

At one glance, the battle armour looked high-end, as though it was a blueprint for some high-tech weapon.

In reality, the drawing was an actual blueprint – it was the blueprint for Ye Chui's Iron Swordsman 2.0.

Within these three days, Ye Chui summarised all the learning points he attained during the three months of imprisonment, as well as the new knowledge of enchanting to create an all-new Iron Swordsman suit. This set of battle armour was mainly enchanted with a <Wind Walk> magic matrix, supplemented by magic matrices used for attacking, such as <Lightning> and <Fire> magic matrices.

Considering that one would feel hot and stuffy within the battle armour, Ye Chui even prepared a <Stream> magic matrix to lower the temperature, which was enchanted on the interior of the battle armour. Actually, <Frost> magic matrix would have been more suitable for lowering the temperature within the battle armour, but after much serious deliberation, Ye Chui felt that the

combination of the ice, wind and water elements would form a magic matrix that would be hard for him to control. Hence, he could only settle for the <Stream> magic matrix.

To Ye Chui, the Iron Swordsman blueprint which he designed was absolutely viable, but the only flaw was the problem of supplying magic power to the battle armour.

In the movie, a small nuclear reactor would be needed to supply energy to the Iron Man suit. However, the Iron Swordsman suit which Ye Chui had envisioned required a lot more magic power to activate the various magic arrays on it. In addition, being a scrawny and weak Magician without a strong body and spirit, even more magic power would be needed for the Iron Swordsman to unleash the ultimate Swordsman skills. Hence, ordinary magic stones would not be able to provide the magic power. If the magic power provided by the magic stone was insufficient, the body would go into shock within seconds of using the battle armour.

The magic power within Ye Chui could be used to release at most three or four Basic Offensive Spells, or up to seven or eight auxiliary spells, such as <Wind Walk>.

Ordinary magic stones were unable to support Ye Chui's battle armour for a long period of time – Ye Chui definitely didn't want to battle small monsters with a time limit, just like Ultraman.

And now, with the help of the magic stone found among Busca's belongings, everything could be easily resolved.

[I wonder what Busca's magic stone is used for. But it no longer matters. All that matters is that I have picked up a valuable treasure!]

Ye Chui felt an indescribable sense of excitement in his heart. He then tidied up his bed and prepared to go out with the two gold coin cards. [The shop which specialises in armour suits on Stardust should be open at night, right?] He couldn't wait to purchase a new set of battle armour, before modifying it to become his Iron Swordsman 2.0.

The storage space within the space ring was about one-metre square – just the right size to store a battle armour. In the future, he would be able to transform into Iron Swordsman 2.0 anywhere and anytime...

# Chapter 43 – A Mysterious And Wealthy Magician

---

Battle armour suits were common equipment in this fantasy world.

Every Swordsman should own a set of battle armour. “You can’t call yourself a Swordsman if you don’t have a decent set of battle armour.” This was definitely one of the most discouraging words a Swordsman could hear in this world.

Even if Debbie had her very own battle armour, it would be the one that she wore during the battle with Carrey – a soft battle armour that was similar to a cosplay costume.

Since Ye Chui was a Magician, he did not require a set of battle armour. If Ye Chui were to ask Debbie to buy a set of battle armour for him, rejection would be the only answer from her. Fortunately, Ye Chui had obtained 200 gold coins from Busca’s space ring. Thus, he was very grateful towards Busca for his generosity.

Battle armours were considered necessities for Swordsmen in this world. They could be classified into low-grade and high-grade ones. For example, the red battle armour Guthem wore was considered high-end and would cost at least 50 gold coins, as it was manufactured using tin.

As for the battle armour which Ye Chui was preparing to buy, the price could not be any lower. This was because the quality of the battle armour directly determined the amount of magic array one

could enchant on it.

Besides the soft armour being the main material used in crafting the battle armour, black iron, tin, brass, silver, gold, as well as dull and purple steel were used. Of which, black iron is of the lowest quality and the most commonly used. During the time Ye Chui was imprisoned, the battle armour which he found was made using black iron.

Similarly, Debbie's great sword was made using black iron, with the exception that dull steel was mixed into the black iron, making the sword even sturdier.

As the nature of the materials differ, their prices would naturally vary as well.

Ye Chui had done his research in the market these few days and found out that he would be able to purchase a set of good quality battle armour using 200 gold coins.

There was a shop named Bell's Grand Weaponry on Stardust Avenue.

Ye Chui entered the weaponry just before they closed for the day.

"Mister, what would you like to purchase?" The receptionist in the weaponry looked listless and did not have a sense of hospitality towards the visitor who patronised the shop late at night. The receptionist squinted his eyes and sized up the visitor – Ye Chui

was wearing a black magic long gown with a hood covering his head. This made his body camouflage with the dark surroundings, causing others to not be able to see his looks.

Ever since Ye Chui left Anthony's Magic Cottage, he always had this image, as he did not want people to associate him with the Iron Swordsman.

Ye Chui sized up the weaponry, which was still brightly illuminated despite the darkness outside, and purposely said in a hoarse voice, "I'll like to buy a set of battle armour."

"Battle armour?" The receptionist looked at Ye Chui with a weird gaze. [Judging by his looks, this boy should be a Magician, so why does he need a set of battle armour?] Due to his desire to knock off soon, the receptionist did not want to entertain Ye Chui too much. He then pointed at a nearby shelf, "Mister, all the battle armours are displayed there. Please take your pick."

After finishing his sentence, he yawned loudly.

Ye Chui nodded his head and walked to the front of the shelf, as his eyes scanned the shelf filled with various kinds of battle armour.

A typical set of battle armour would be able to cover one's entire body, and it included a helmet, breastplate, shoulder plate, arm protector, bracer, belt, gloves, groin protector, greaves, knee protector, boots, as well as a weapon.



Ye Chui sized up these armours and concluded that there were mainly two different types of battle armour available – one of which was enchanted, while the other was not enchanted.

The enchanted battle armours would typically cost at least double that of those non-enchanted ones. After all, Enchanting Masters were rare and there were less than ten Enchanting Masters in Stan City. Furthermore, there were fewer than five Enchanting Masters who were able to enchant battle armours with quality assurance.

Since the price of one non-enchanted battle armour would be a lot less, Ye Chui would naturally pick it. At a price of 150 gold coins, the best non-enchanted battle armour this weaponry had to offer was made of dull steel. However, the dull steel material was naturally very heavy, thus this battle armour would weigh around 40kg. Ye Chui hence spent some time pondering and wondered how he would fight in such heavy battle armour...

Nevertheless, Ye Chui had to settle for less and chose a tin battle armour that cost 80 gold coins.

Some brass was blended into the tin material used for manufacturing this battle armour, thus it gave the armour a slight reddish and golden hue. The look of the battle armour was rustic yet not flamboyant, and its subtly luxurious style was perfect for Ye Chui. Moreover, the size of the battle armour and its weight of 6.5kg were just right for Ye Chui's stature.

At the same time, since this battle armour was able to withstand a high amount of enchantment on it, Ye Chui's needs had been

completely fulfilled.

“I’ll get this!”

Ye Chui made up his mind at that instant.

“Have you chosen your preferred battle armour?” The receptionist saw Ye Chui return back to the counter and asked with a yawn.

“I want this suit of battle armour!” Ye Chui pointed to his choice.

Huh?

The receptionist’s spirits were slightly lifted, as he had thought that Ye Chui was going to choose a soft armour that would cost at most dozens of gold coins. After all, besides the rare Magic-Swordsmen, there would be few Magicians who would be interested in battle armours. Therefore, the receptionist would never in a million years think that Ye Chui would spend 80 gold coins on a pricey battle armour.

The receptionist suddenly becomes more hospitable to the Ye Chui, “Mister, are you going to pay by cash or gold coin card?”

“... Gold coin card.”

A brass-coloured card appeared in Ye Chui’s hands. He then

placed the gold coin card onto the counter, but he couldn't help but let his thoughts run wild. [WTF?! Please don't tell me that I can swipe the card to pay? How can they have such advanced technology?! If not for my strong psychological bearing capabilities, I would have fainted!]

Ye Chui then broke out in a head full of sweat.

After the receptionist received the gold coin card from Ye Chui, he sensed and ensured that the gold coin card did have the value of 100 gold coins. Hence, the receptionist deftly took out 20 gold coins from the cash box and passed it to Ye Chui, "Mister, the battle armour costs 80 gold coins. Since I've received 100 gold coins from you, here's your change of 20 gold coins."

"..." Ye Chui was speechless.

The concept of swiping the card to pay for his purchase was perhaps too advanced for this world...

"Mister, do you need someone to deliver your battle armour to your house?" The receptionist enquired with a smiling face.

"No, thank you."

Ye Chui knew that the deal had been completed. He then walked towards the battle armour, moved his hand slightly and kept the battle armour within the space ring in an instant.

The receptionist was probably used to such strange sights and hence was unalarmed. He then continued to speak, “Mister, the battle armour you have bought is not enchanted yet. If you need any enchanting to be done, you can approach our Bell’s Grand Weaponry, where we will link you up with an Enchanting Master, who will give you a 20% discount.”

“Ohh, it seems like they provide a one-stop service...” Ye Chui mumbled to himself, “It’s okay, I will contact an Enchanting Master on my own.”

Following his response, Ye Chui walked out of Bell’s Grand Weaponry.

The receptionist seemed to have thought of something and wanted to shout out to Ye Chui, “There’s a rule in Bell’s Grand Weaponry that states that any patron who purchases a weapon or battle armour has to register their name.” However, since no problem had occurred ever since this weaponry was opened, this rule could be regarded as obsolete. Moreover, the thought of his own cosy home made this receptionist choose not to tell Ye Chui the unnecessary rule.

The receptionist opened the log book, picked up the goose feather pen and wrote down the transaction – one set of tin battle armour, which costs 80 gold coins, was bought by a mysterious and wealthy Magician.

Due to the irresponsible receptionist from the weaponry, the Magician who bought a set of battle armour from Bell’s Grand Weaponry, had gained a reputation of being ‘mysterious’ and

‘wealthy’. And that reputation stayed with him for a very long time...

After that night, frequent yet intermittent knocking rhythms could be heard coming from Ye Chui’s room in Anthony’s Magic Cottage. dang, dong, dang dong

Debbie spent some money to hire several artisans to restore the collapsed southern wall.

These artisans who were restoring the collapsed wall were extremely curious about the knocking sound coming from Ye Chui’s room. But upon seeing the little girl spin around the backyard with her great sword, they struck off that thought in their heads.

Ten days just went past in the blink of an eye.

The southern wall in the backyard of Anthony’s Magic Cottage had been restored.

That morning, after Ye Chui and Debbie ate their breakfast of noodles, they embarked on their journey to the City Lord’s Manor.

The ancient tomb adventure was about to begin.

# Chapter 44 – Then, I Must Have Been The World's Biggest Loser

---

Ye Chui wore a brand-new, long, black gown, which was the standard clothing for all Magicians. Under the sleeves of the long gown was an ordinary-looking ring, worn on his right index finger. On the other hand, Debbie, who was still wearing an oversized soft armour, carried her 50kg great sword on her back.

Since both Debbie and Ye Chui were not short of money at the moment, Ye Chui proposed to Debbie to buy a new set of battle armour. However, she rejected his proposal after much serious deliberation. A typical Great Swordsman would need a hardy suit of armour – such was common sense. However, Debbie was against this sense of reasoning. For her, it was essential to be agile in combat. Rushing into the fray and activating Giant Spinning Top; such an amazing tactic would only be burdened by a bulky and heavy suit of armour. Thus, light weight armour was preferred.

Of course, Debbie had already prepared all kinds of medications. Although she was a little greedy, she could still tell what was of higher importance.

Ye Chui and Debbie arrived at the City Lord's Manor after a long journey. After the entrance guards confirmed their identities, they both were hurriedly ushered in and brought to the same garden they were in the last time they came. Now both of them could no longer deny the amount of wealth City Lord's Manor had, as the destroyed and messed-up garden had been restored to its original state.

The City Lord's daughter, Alfea, who was also the initiator of this adventure, Beastman Athol, Dual Swordsman Balmain, and the Mercenaries Damon and Bill had all geared up, ready to take on whatever came their way in the adventure.

Alfea wore a heroic-looking battle armour, just like the one she wore when Ye Chui saw her outside the restaurant. Presented in a shining silver tone, her battle armour was probably manufactured from tin.

Alfea seemed exceptionally hospitable when Ye Chui and Debbie arrived. As Debbie was the only other girl in this adventure, Alfea was even warmer towards her. Alfea even kindly explained all the important points to take note of during the adventure.

Discovering that Debbie was wearing only a simple soft armour, Alfea recommended that she gave the tin battle armour she wore the previous time to Debbie. However, Debbie rejected her kind suggestion.

Now, Athol, Balmain and Damon all came and talked to Ye Chui. Knowing that it was Ye Chui's first time joining an adventure, they warned him about the important points to take note and Ye Chui took down notes seriously.

Not long after, the last two people on the adventure team arrived. One of them was Guthem, who wore a red battle armour, and the other was Oberth, who wore a long black magic gown. They talked softly to each other while walking, as though they were friends.

Ten days ago, Ye Chui had attacked Guthem with a lightning magic scroll. The attack left Guthem's red luxurious armour in tatters, with many scorch marks. Meanwhile, some of his hair was burnt to a crisp, as though it was caught up in a small explosion. But now, his hair seemed to be well groomed. Not to mention, his red suit of armour seemed to have undergone careful maintenance. With a face filled with vitality, Guthem stared at Ye Chui with the same expression he had ten days ago. Eyes cloudy and cold as his lips wiped into a sneer, filled with disdain.

"Oberth and Guthem, you both have finally arrived." Alfea welcomed them with a smile.

"Miss Alfea, it's my honour being able to embark on an adventure with you." Oberth seemed polite in front of Alfea.

On the other hand, Guthem walked towards Ye Chui and smiled coldly, "Adventures can be risky; I hope you can walk out of the ancient tomb alive."

Ye Chui looked at Guthem and frowned, before breaking out into laughter, "I will definitely walk out in one piece; and I will live a good life thereafter. Whoever makes my life difficult will have an even more difficult life than me."

Guthem's smile became more cunning, "Interesting..."

"Guthem!" Balmain choked as he walked towards Ye Chui, with his eyes sternly warning him about the contract.



Guthem immediately raised up both his hands and gave an ‘I didn’t do anything’ expression, before turning around and walking to Oberth.

“Don’t be influenced by him. If he dares to do anything funny to you during the adventure, he will get his punishment.” Balmain patted Ye Chui’s shoulders and comforted him.

“Hehe, I know. It’s all right.” Although Ye Chui laughingly said this, his heart thought differently. [I might not hurt him during the adventure, but it doesn’t mean that I won’t do so after the adventure. For now, he might not be afraid of me, but let’s see how he is when he meets my Iron Swordsman armour that is hungry for action.]

Oberth noticed Guthem’s conversation with Ye Chui and appeared to be interested. While he saw Guthem walking towards him, he asked curiously, “Did you have some kind of friction with that boy?”

“Yes, but it’s a minor issue.” Guthem superficially explained but his expression revealed that it was no small matter.

Alfea’s brows were knitted, expressing her discontent. She did not want any bad blood to exist between members of the adventure team. Although they had signed the Oath Contract to prevent any betrayal, it did not mean that they would coordinate with one another during the adventure. If they are unable to cooperate efficiently, the adventure would naturally become more difficult.

Looking at Guthem with an expression of indifference, she swore to herself. [If he dares make any ‘accident’ while we are there, I will not spare him.]

She also noted Oberth’s interest in Ye Chui and introduced him, “Oberth, you haven’t met him before, have you? This is Hammer. He is an Enchanting Master and our adventure partner. Next to him is his friend, Debbie.” She then looked at both Ye Chui and Debbie, “This is the Magician Guild Master’s son, Oberth. He’s the most famous genius Magician in Stan City.”

Upon hearing Hammer’s name, Oberth thought to himself. [What kind of nonsensical name is that? Who will call someone that name? Wait... Hammer... isn’t that the name of one of those people who visited the Magician Guild that day the Magic Crystal was lost?]

The thought of Ye Chui stealing the magic crystal once again resurfaced in his mind, but since Basgen mentioned that Ye Chui was only a level two Magician, he was quickly cleared of suspicion.

For several days, the Magician Guild still had not managed to track down the lost Magic Crystal. The owner of said crystal, the level nine Magician who came to Stan City as a guest, was not pleased with this matter. This caused Oberth to feel anxious, forcing a search of everyone who visited the Magician Guild on that day. However, this person called ‘Hammer’, managed to slip away from his mind...

However, he got an epiphany but was quickly destroyed by his pride. [This guy named Hammer, looks like trash. If he truly

managed to take the Magic Crystal away, then I will officially label myself as this world biggest loser!] Oberth wished to pledge his thoughts with a shout, but retained it within the confines of his mind.

Meanwhile, since Ye Chui was unaware that he was being labelled as ‘trash of the society’, he thought that it was only right to greet this team member of his politely, or even going as far as to give him a smile.

However, Oberth replied with a cold snort, appearing to disdain Ye Chui. Guthem who saw this scene also smiled with disdain towards Ye Chui.

Debbie immediately became unhappy and whispered in a low voice, “Who does this person think he is?”

Ye Chui patted Debbie’s shoulder with an expression of ‘don’t care about him.’

“Since everybody is here, then let our adventure commence!” Alfea announced as she started to move. She took out a piece of dark cloth that appeared to be all worn-out. However, there seemed to be different characters (Chinese Characters) written on this piece of cloth. Taking out her sword, she held it with both hands and was prepared to stab into this fabric, but before she was about to do so, she ordered, “Everyone, stand at least 2 meters around me. I am going to activate it.”

This piece of cloth was the key to entering the Doria’s Tomb.

When Ye Chui and Debbie, as well as Athol, Balmain, Bill, Damon, Guthem and Oberth heard her, they all stood beside Alfea. Once they were all in position, Alfea used both hands and forced the sword into the fabric on the ground.

The piece of cloth faded into a pure blue fog, engulfing them.

Ye Chui was curious at the strange situation but suddenly, Bang! a group of dazzling streams of white light wrapped around their bodies. Soon, all eight of them disappeared from the place.

In actuality, the method of entering the Doria's tomb was a magic teleportation array.

When all eight of them were transported away, a dust cloud was produced. When it cleared, there was only the ground and the leaves that scattered all over.

Several servants in the garden quickly took their brooms and rushed back. They all had depressed expressions on their faces as they questioned in their minds, [Why Young Lady? Why must you always do things in this garden?]

# Chapter 45 – Doria's Tomb Adventure Guide

---

Following the dissipation of the blinding ray of white light, Ye Chui discovered himself in a dimly-lit corridor. Damon, the experienced Mercenary, then took out a white sphere, which was the size of an egg, from his pocket. The white sphere, which was obviously a magic creation, emitted soothing rays of white light, enabling everyone in the adventure team to have a clear view of the surroundings.

Debbie stood next to Ye Chui. The excitement and anticipation this little girl had for this adventure had now transformed into fear and anxiety. Standing in this unfamiliar ancient tomb, her petite stature started to tremble slightly, indicating the terror in her heart. However, it must not be overlooked that this little girl still had the calmness to grab Ye Chui's hand despite the panic she felt, "Hammer, don't worry. I'm by your side, so don't be afraid."

"... Your voice seems to be shaking." Ye Chui seemed to have noticed the anxiety within her.

This was not Alfea's first adventure. As the leader of the adventure team, she appeared very calm, "It seems like we have entered the Doria's Tomb safely. Magician, we need some light."

"Huh?" Upon hearing Alfea's words, Ye Chui subconsciously thought that it was directed at him. Hence, he took out his magic wand from his waist and wondered if he was supposed to cast a fire magic spell, or something similar.

However, Ye Chui quickly realised that he had mistaken Alfea's words – the Magician that Alfea was referring to was Oberth.

While Ye Chui was pondering over whether to cast the fire magic spell, Oberth had already brandished his magic wand in his hand and summoned the spell in a soft voice, "Light Drop."

Intermediate Auxiliary Spell, <Light Drop>, was cast.

A ball of bright light shot out from the tip of Oberth's magic wand and travelled forward at lightning speed. Light waves, which can be witnessed by the naked eye, slowly extended into the depths of the corridor ahead of the adventure group.

As the light waves combed every nook and cranny of the corridor, it left some star splendour on the walls – it was the doing of the magic spell. These star splendours can sustain its combustion for around 10 minutes.

Oberth's magic spell had earned the praise of his team members.

"It is very rare for a level three Magician to know how to use an intermediate magic spell, especially for magic spells that controls the element of light, such as <Light Drop>. Oberth is definitely worthy of the title 'Stan City's genius Magician'." Guthem was generous with his praises. He then glanced at Ye Chui's magic wand, as he had noticed Ye Chui pull out his magic wand after misunderstanding Alfea's words previously. Guthem looked at Ye Chui in disdain and said to him, "Mister Enchanting Master, I see that you have pulled out your magic wand. Do you plan on casting

a light magic spell?”

“...” Ye Chui rolled his eyes and turned his head away, as he was not interested in Guthem’s provocation.

Upon hearing Guthem’s commendation, Oberth felt very happy and looked at Ye Chui in an arrogant manner, “Although I’m a level three Magician, my father said that I already have the skills of a level four, or even level five Magician. My father didn’t want me to go for the level four promotion examination because he wanted me to concentrate on consolidating my spiritual power.”

“Oberth, wait till you attain the rank of a level four Magician – the entire Stan City will be in astonishment.” Guthem immediately praised him once again.

“How am I that talented?” Oberth replied humbly, but his facial expression says otherwise – he had an ‘I’m that talented!’ look on his face.

Thanks to Guthem, Debbie also did not have a good impression of Oberth. Ye Chui then felt a tighter grip of her hand.

“Don’t bother.” Ye Chui said in a low tone and curled his lips, expressing his nonchalance towards the existence of Oberth. His line of sight focused on the star splendours left behind on the stone wall, as he reached out his hand to feel them. All he felt was a warm and gentle sensation.

“I’ve already managed to comprehend all 32 magic symbols, including those related to the element of light, but I still haven’t had the opportunity to research such magic elements... Mmm, these star splendours must’ve been formed by the congelation of the light element. Their structure looks very strange; they looked as though they shimmering granules.”

“Everyone, please get into formation.” Alfea said at that instant, “Traps can be found almost everywhere within the ancient tomb and thus it’s highly dangerous. From now on, I will lead the group by walking in front, while Debbie will follow right behind me; Athol and Balmain, you guys are responsible for the left and right wing of the formation; Bill and Guthem, you two are to ensure the safety of the rear of the squad; Ye Chui and Oberth, you guys shall just walk in the middle of the group.”

Everyone quickly followed Alfea’s instructions and formed themselves up in their respective positions.

The tactical formation of the adventure team displayed Alfea’s talent in strategic planning. Alfea, who is widely-recognised as the strongest of the team, took the lead naturally. Meanwhile, Debbie, who possesses immense destructive capabilities despite her low level, was positioned such that if any accident were to occur, she would be able to cover for Alfea’s blind spot.

The four Swordsmen were all positioned in a formation of a square, while the Magicians, who had the worst abilities in close combat, were stationed right at the centre.

“Everyone, be careful! We’re setting off now!” Alfea ordered.



Under her leadership, the adventure team started the journey into the depths of the corridor. Everyone was on their toes, as they hoped to prevent or react to any incident that might occur.

Ye Chui was rather anxious at the beginning of the adventure. However, after he saw Alfea's calm demeanour as she took out a book, 'Doria Tomb Adventure Guide' from her space ring, her ability to explain the objects around the corridor, as well as her ability to instruct the team down the correct path when they met a fork road, Ye Chui knew that his worries were unwarranted.

Doria's Tomb is an ancient tomb which the Doria family had constructed. After a thousand years of expeditions, generations of people have noticed that there was an order to which the interior of the Doria's tomb was constructed. It thus could be said that the Doria Family constructed these tombs batch by batch.

After all, it seemed like the ancient tomb adventure was not at all like what Ye Chui had envisioned.

[Where's the eerie and gloomy atmosphere?]

[Where're the skeleton warriors?]

[And where're the ancient tomb monsters?]

[It seems like we are a group of tourists on a sightseeing trip to this ancient tomb.]

“We’re only in the surroundings of the ancient tomb. After we enter the inner halls, we will encounter various kinds of unforeseen dangers. Knowledge on that place has not been recorded down in the Doria Tomb Adventure Guide, every ancient tomb has its owner who will design it; and it happens that this ancient tomb was created by a level nine Swordsman. So, this area must be enigmatically designed and filled with dangers.” Alfea considered that this was Ye Chui and Debbie’s first time participating in this type of tomb adventure and opened her mouth to answer.

[So, the climax will be over there? Good.] Ye Chui’s anticipation rose.

Every 10 minutes, Oberth would release a spell called, <Light Drop>. It was used to illuminate the whole tomb chamber corridor. With his status as a Level Three Magician, he had spiritual and magical stamina which enabled him to continue releasing said spell, something which Ye Chui was currently incapable of doing.

However, since Ye Chui was the Father of Studies, he took the opportunity to start studying the light element.

Although <Light Drop> was recognised as an Intermediate Auxiliary Spell, its main function was to light up an area. Although it might impress others with its cool dazzling display, Ye Chui felt that it was only a mediocre magic spell. After all, when he started to construct the <Light Drop> magic matrix in his mind, he found that it would turn out without fault.

After sightseeing the ancient tomb... no, carrying on their adventure for about an hour, Ye Chui had felt his legs aching from the intense walking. They had finally walked out of the maze-like surroundings of the ancient tomb. In actual fact, navigating around the surroundings was not at all that hard if they were to follow the directions on the map.

Right in front of their path was a big door filled with rust, and in front of the door was a warrior statue wearing an entire suit of battle armour.

“We’ve reached the inner hall!” Alfea exclaimed as she hid the Doria’s Tomb Adventure Guide back into the space ring. In an extremely solemn voice, she said, “Everyone, be careful. Puppet guards can typically be found at the entrance of the inner hall – the battle is about to commence!”

Barely seconds after Alfea spoke, Suo Suo, Suo Suo, sounds of movements played out from the statues in front of the gate as they started to move.

[Great! Things are starting to get interesting!]

# Chapter 46 – Inefficient Attack

---

At the end of the long corridor was a gigantic iron door; and right in front of the iron door was a row of Swordsman statues. Just as the adventure team arrived in front of the door, a trap seemed to be triggered – the Swordsman statues started moving, as they brandished their stone-made long swords towards the adventure team. Intermittent rumbling sounds then reverberated through the entire tomb chamber.

“Get ready to battle!”

As Alfea let out one loud scream, she grasped her long sword with both her hands and swung the long sword forward.

Enchanting attack <Wind Blade>.

A white-coloured air wave emerged from the blade of Alfea’s long sword and swept horizontally towards the row of Swordsman statues.

Zila, Zila

Within an instant, all seven of these Swordsman statues froze in their steps and each of them suffered a cut of about two inches deep.

However, the injuries inflicted on these Swordsman quickly disappeared.

The <Wind Blade> attack released by Alfea was obviously much stronger than Ye Chui's <Wind Blade>.

Of the seven Swordsman statues, four of them on the right seemed to have slowed down significantly due to the injuries they sustained and they were now a distance behind the other three Swordsmen statues.

As Alfea gripped onto her long sword, she said indifferently, "Maintain the formation. Guthem and Bill, you guys are in charge of ensuring the safety of Oberth and Hammer. Don't let any of the puppet guard get near them. Debbie and I will deal with these four Swordsman statues on the right, while Damon and Athol will deal with the other three. Balmain, try to sneak attack them and find out their weaknesses! Oberth, maintain the visibility within the tomb chamber!"

At the speed of a bullet, she rattled out her orders and for the first time, started her battle with the four Swordsman statues on the right.

As the strongest Swordswoman of the adventure team, she had to step up and be responsible for dealing with the four Swordsman statues. On the other hand, Debbie assisted Alfea in her attacks. Due to the narrowness of the corridor, she could not display her Giant Spinning Top attacking move, but due to her talent in battling, she could adapt to the circumstances and work perfectly with Alfea.

A loud bellow could be heard from Athol at the other side, as he portrayed the incisiveness of Beastmen Warriors intrepidly. Similarly, Damon, the experienced Mercenary, displayed the expertise of his profession – extremely powerful close combat capabilities. Together, the both of them guarded the three puppet guards closely.

Balmain, on the other hand, displayed the swift and deft movements that Dual Swordsmen specialise in, as he launched his unwavering swift and merciless attacks on the three Swordsman statues.

“The skill level of the Swordsman statues is comparable to that of a level two Swordsman and they are activated using only magic matrixes. If we don’t destroy the revolution puppet array, there’s no way we can defeat them!”

“Do take note that these Swordsman statues only attack and not defend, so do not deal with them using your usual protocol.”

“The core of the magic array isn’t in their brains, so try attacking the other parts of their bodies and find their weakness quickly!”

“Be careful of their sweeping attacks! Their actions are pretty much fixed – after carrying out their chopping attack move; they will display their mightiest sweeping attack.”

Balmain’s voice could be heard constantly. He had proved to be useful to the team during the battle with the Swordsman statues – summarising the attacking and defending characteristics of the

Swordsman statues.

Ye Chui and Oberth retreated quickly and distanced themselves from the main adventure team. With Guthem and Bill defending them from the back and front, both of them stood in the centre while watching the exciting combat with their eyes peeled.

Intermittent clashing sounds between weapons could be heard within the dimly-lit corridor of the ancient tomb.

Bang!

Pong!

Piang!

Ahhh! – this was the roar of Athol the Beastman Warrior.

It was Ye Chui's first time encountering such a battling scene in this world. It barely took half a minute for the activation of the puppet guards' attack to evolve into the chaotic situation that Ye Chui witnessed. At this moment, Ye Chui had finally experienced the excitement of an ancient tomb adventure. It was to the extent that he could not recover from his daze – his mind had been too engrossed in a world of astonishing battling scenes. In simple words, he was dumbstruck...

Zila the airborne sound that a flash of lightning made Ye Chui recover from his daze immediately. The lightning was actually a

magic spell cast by Oberth.

It was a magic spell which used lightning element, but it was not the same as the <Lightning> magic spell that Ye Chui knew about. After Oberth cast the magic spell, the lightning condensed into the shape of a spear gun, shot towards a Swordsman statue which Athol was battling, and penetrated its rock-like forehead.

Elementary Offensive Spell <Thunder Spear>.

Similarly, this magic spell was classified as an Elementary Offensive Spell, but its destructive power and difficulty of execution were visibly more than the magic spell, <Lightning>.

Although the lightning spear penetrated the Swordsman statue's forehead, it did not collapse. Instead, the wound on its head started to heal on its own, indicating that its forehead was not its weakness.

Ye Chui looked at Oberth subconsciously.

“Trash!” Oberth snorted as he noticed Ye Chui's glance. Following that, he continued to cast another magic spell. As another Magician in the adventure team, Oberth felt very superior being able to still cast magic spells to help the team in the battle, under the protection of the two Swordsmen.

Ye Chui swore in an instant. [WTF? are you bad in math or something? Can't you see that your actions are even more



inefficient than mine?]

Ye Chui then raised the front piece of his magic long gown and grabbed a bunch of magic scrolls, before throwing it out in a suave manner.

“Magic scrolls?” Oberth was momentarily dumbfounded when he saw Ye Chui’s actions. He then said in a despising tone, “You little piece of trash, do you think these magic scrolls are bricks? How can you throw them out without activating them? You...”

Oberth paused in his words.

Obviously, he did not know about Ye Chui’s speciality.

Instead of landing on the ground, the magic scrolls which Ye Chui tossed out mystically remained afloat in mid-air due to a current of cool breeze. With a wave of his magic wand, all the magic scrolls flew towards the Swordsman statues which Debbie was battling. All was within his control.

Bang!

Just as that Swordsman statue held up his stone dagger in the air and was about to stab towards Debbie, a lightning magic scroll, which was four times as strong as the original one, suddenly exploded. The destructive impact of the explosion totally destroyed the statue’s arm and caused it to crumble into dust.

As Debbie was slightly dumbstruck, she turned her head and looked towards Ye Chui. Immediately after, she jumped into the air with her hands gripping her great sword and chopped the sword in the direction of the Swordsman statue's head. Following the activation of the <Wind Walk> magic array on one side of her great sword, her sword became mightier. The head of the Swordsman statue's head was chopped into half in an instant.

Debbie had spent the past 10 days mastering the control of the <Wind Walk> magic array on her great sword.

However, the attacks on the Swordsman statue did not seem to have any effect on him. His broken arm and smashed head slowly pieced themselves together, as though they had not been hurt.

Ye Chui's brows were knitted as the attacks the adventure team rained on the seven Swordsman statues did not seem to have any effect on them. All of them had the ability to recover quickly and their battling prowess does not seem to decrease one bit – this was a tricky situation.

Ye Chui could no longer be bothered with Oberth, as he started to concentrate on assisting the five people who were battling the Swordsman statues by tossing magic scrolls. Under the influence of his <Breeze>, various magic scrolls flew across in all directions and exploded occasionally. By providing timely blows to the Swordsman statues, the five people on the team had their burden greatly reduced.

It seemed to Ye Chui that he was in an auxiliary position in some kind of game.

Oberth, who was standing beside Ye Chui, stood there in shock. [How can a Magician play with magic scrolls just like that?]

[Which Magician in their right mind would actually master life spells, such as <Breeze>?!]

Sensing that his dignity was at stake, a thought evolved in Oberth's heart. [How can I lose to that little rascal?]

Hence, Oberth brandished his magic wand and attacked the Swordsman statues by casting magic spells.

Just as Alfea blocked off an attack by a Swordsman statue with her long sword, she noticed Oberth casting magic spells like nobody's business and frowned. [Since Ye Chui is using <Breeze>, a magic spell that does not require much effort, he is definitely able to last for a long time without feeling exhausted. But how can Oberth use the attacking magic spells freely? These spells are sure to drain his energy. What if he uses up all his magic power? We might still need his help when we reach the inner hall!]

Moreover, it was obvious that Oberth did not intentionally cast the magic spells. Not only did his magic spells fail to assist the five people on the team who were battling the Swordsman statues, they even disrupted the order in the attack...

“Ehh...” Ye Chui suddenly made a discovery about the Swordsman statues, “It seems like the speed of recovery for different parts of their body is different...”

## Chapter 47 – The Statue's Weakness Is Its Left Thigh!

---

Based on the combat strength of the Swordsman statues, they can be classified as level two Swordsmen. However, even against five Swordsmen: Debbie, a level two Swordsman (the strongest Great Swordsman in her level); Alfea, a level five Swordsman; and three level four Swordsmen, the statues still managed to stand their grounds. If this was a fight with seven level two Swordsmen, they would already be exterminated. Unfortunately, these statues have the ability of regeneration, enabling them to recover after every inflicted injury. This simple ability caused an increase in difficulty in the battle.

On the other hand, Balmain, the agile Dual Swordsman, casually walked around the battlefield. His role in the adventure team was to analyse the battling scene and pinpoint the weakness of the Swordsman statues. However, being engrossed in the battle, he fell short of his expectations and did not have a clear view compared to Ye Chui, the onlooker.

While Ye Chui was manipulating his magic scrolls to attack the Swordsman statues, he quickly discovered something new, [Wait a second... When I hit certain parts of the statue's body, it doesn't heal as fast...]

Under the barrage of the adventure team's attacks, the statue continuously broke down and restored itself. It could be deduced that there were Magic Matrix around its body, which were controlling their movements. If Ye Chui had guessed correctly, this was a high level earth elemental magic. Otherwise, there was no

way to explain the possibility of forming a Swordsman statue with this level of strength. Therefore, destroying the magic matrix, which transfers magic power from a magic stone within its body, was the only way to finally end it. Unfortunately, from the start of the fight till now, Balmain and the others could not manage to find the core of the array. They tried the forehead, chest and other general locations thinking it would be fatal to the statue but all their efforts were fruitless.

However, Ye Chui managed to discover that the different body parts of the statue was recovering at different rates. The restoration of the forehead was slower than the chest, while the restoration of the chest was slower than the restoration of its abdomen...

[Since these Swordsman statues must have been activated by a magic stone, the magic stone should be together with the core of the magic matrix. The core of the magic matrix has to be close to the body part where the speed of restoration is the fastest...] Ye Chui deduced and continued to further examine the swordsman statues for the magic core. Suddenly, his eyes brightened up as though he had been enlightened. [Its the thigh!]

After a series of analysis and deduction, Ye Chui thought that the core of the magic matrix was hidden on the inner side of the statues' left thigh!

“Alfea!” Ye Chui yelled immediately, “Everyone, focus your attacks on the left thighs of the statues!”

While shouting out instructions, Ye Chui started to manipulate

his magic scrolls and focused his attacks on the Swordsman statues' left thighs.

Ye Chui chose to shout Alfea's name, as he knew that Alfea was the only one person out of the five who is able to accomplish the task with ease. On the other hand, if he got the others to attack, they might disrupt the order in the attacking formation.

Ye Chui's sudden yell startled Guthem, Bill and Oberth, who were nearby him. Guthem held his long sword in an alert manner and said indifferently, "What nonsense are you spouting? Does Lady Alfea require your guidance?"

Oberth glanced at Ye Chui with an unsatisfied look – this kid was starting to be out of breath, since he had continuously cast magic spells just to spite Ye Chui.

However, there was something about Oberth that Ye Chui admires. [This genius Magician, a level three Magician, does actually have much more stamina and magic power than I do. I could at most cast three to four Elementary Offensive Spell, but he has managed to cast at least 20 magic spells up to now?!]

This was the disparity in their capabilities.

Of course, battling requires intelligence.

Alfea and Debbie was now a little exhausted, after pitting themselves against the four Swordsman statues. Alfea had

encountered Swordsman statues in her previous adventures, but those adventures were carried out with some other experienced people, who were able to discover the weakness of the statues quickly. Thinking about it now, she was pretty scared at that time and it slipped her mind to ask her team members about the method of figuring out the weakness of the statues. She even naively thought that the weakness for every Swordsman statue is the same. But now, the statues that she encountered were largely different than the ones she met the previous time.

Upon hearing Ye Chui's words, Alfea subconsciously felt dissatisfied, as she thought deeply. [Do I need you to teach? Why must I attack the left thigh of the statues? Ok... I guess there's no harm in trying.]

As her train of thoughts paused, Alfea moved in an agile manner, dodging the attack of a Swordsman statue. As her body slid past the statues, she extended her long sword and stabbed in right into the left thigh of the statue.

"Ehh?" Alfea's eyes lit up, as she saw a flash of blue light within the black crushed rock.

[That's the magic stone!]

[I found the right spot!]

"The left thigh is the weakness of the Swordsman statues!" Alfea exclaimed in excitement.

While declaring her discovery, Alfea contracted her long sword, before stabbing into the Swordsman statue once more. With a piak! sound, the magic stone, which provided the Swordsman statue with magic power, broke into pieces. The magic stone was about the size of a quail egg – if one were to attack aimlessly, it would take forever to find out the fatal weakness of the statues.

After Alfea crushed the magic stone, a ray of pale blue light quickly overflowed from it, as just like blue smog. This was an indication that the magic power was leaking out of the magic stone. Following that, the gigantic Swordsman statue disintegrated into grains of sand particles.

One Swordsman statue has been taken down.

The left thigh was indeed the weakness of the Swordsman statues.

Ye Chui actually managed to get it right.

Guthem, Oberth and Bill looked at Ye Chui in disbelief. What they could not comprehend was how Ye Chui managed to figure out the weakness of the Swordsman statues.

But this was not the only thing Ye Chui did that made them stare at him in disbelief – after Alfea managed to destroy one Swordsman statue by following Ye Chui's instructions, Ye Chui mimicked Alfea's actions and found out the exact location of the magic stone in the left thigh of the other Swordsman statues. Following some zzaa! and boom! sounds, lightning and flame



attacks were concentrated on the left thigh of the Swordsman statues. In the blink of an eye, the magic stones from the three statues were exposed.

As Ye Chui moved the magic wand in his hand slightly, the miniscule magic stone was picked out from their thighs, using <Breeze> magic spell.

Without the magic power that the magic stone was providing, all the three Swordsman statues disintegrated into sand instantaneously.

Concurrently, Athol, Damon, Balmain, Alfea and Debbie all worked together to take down the remaining three Swordsman statues in no time.

From the encounter of these Swordsman statues to the end of the battle with them, a total of five minutes were used. The adventure team spent majority of the time in deadlock with the Swordsman statues; it was only in the last half a minute when there was a breakthrough – Ye Chui figured out the weakness of the statues. Out of the seven Swordsman statues, three of them were destroyed single-handedly by Ye Chui.

Through this incident, the members in the adventure team began to see Ye Chui in a different light.

Ye Chui could not be bothered about their change of perspective towards him, as he dashed towards Debbie. Seeing her head full of perspiration, he stretched out his hand and wiped it off for her,

“Did you injure yourself?”

Debbie shook her head and looked at Ye Chui with a surprised gaze, “Hammer, how did you know the weakness of the Swordsman statues?”

Guthem, Oberth and Bill also walked over to them. Upon hearing Debbie’s question, Guthem interrupted in a dissatisfied tone, “Hammer, you must have known the weakness of the Swordsman statue beforehand! If you already know about it, why didn’t you declare to the team? This caused us to waste lots of time!”

[WTF?!]

Ye Chui turned his head and looked at Guthem. [This guy is bent on insulting and mocking me! I swear!]

Just as Ye Chui was about to speak, something caught his eyes, “Be careful!”

A disintegrated Swordsman statue suddenly restored itself and emerged right behind Bill.

Alfea quickly went into action.

Just at this moment, the star splendours on the walls of the tomb chamber flickered, before turning dim rapidly.

The <Light Drop> magic spell happened to lose its effect at that moment!

“Oberth!” Alfea yelled in an infuriating tone. Maintaining the visibility in the tomb chamber was a task given by Alfea to Oberth. Just at this critical moment, the <Light Drop> magic spell actually lost its effect and caused everyone to fall in darkness!

“Light Drop...” Oberth started chanting in a shaky voice, trying to cast the magic spell.

Then, a ball of light emerged from the tip of his magic wand, before darkness resumed almost immediately – the magic spell has failed!

Due to his eagerness to show off to Ye Chui previously, most of Oberth’s magic power and spiritual power had been depleted. Thus, he was now unable to cast this intermediate light magic spell.

At that instant, a zi! sound was heard.

It was the sound of a stone dagger piercing through human flesh.

Accompanying that sound was Bill’s pitiful cries.

# Chapter 48 – Intermediate Auxiliary Spell

---

The revolution magic array core within the Swordsman statues acts as a magic stone which provides magic power, as well as a magic crystal which provides magic matrixes.

Alfea had contributed to the destruction of two Swordsman statues – she first crushed the magic stone of a Swordsman statue, before ruining the magic array of another one. On the other hand, Ye Chui had used magic scrolls to blast the left thigh of three Swordsman statues and used the <Breeze> magic spell to keep the magic stones of the statues into the space ring, while Balmain destroyed the magic stone of one Swordsman statue, using his nimble and deft movements.

The magic stone of the last Swordsman statue was hit by Athol's sword, but it did not get destroyed. Instead, it was hidden in the thick layer of sand on the ground.

The magic crystal core of the Swordsman statue was not damaged. When the magic stone makes contact with the magic crystal in hidden within the sand, a new Swordsman statue would be generated.

Bill's pitiful cries seemed to become increasingly grating in the darkness.

Alfea was originally charging towards the newly-formed Swordsman statue, but the darkness forced her to stop in her tracks. She was afraid that the statue would hurt Bill out of the

blue.

Everyone in the adventure team was filled with terror and fear.

“I... I don’t have sufficient magic power...” Due to his panic and helplessness, Oberth stumbled in a shaky voice.

Just as he finished his sentence, light engulfed the cave once again.

Intermediate Auxiliary Spell <Light Drop>.

The situation in the corridor suddenly became clear for all to see. A stone dagger was pierced through Bill’s chest, as the newly-formed Swordsman statue stood behind him. With streaks of blood flowing down his pale face, Bill was constantly gasping for breath – his vital signs were diminishing rapidly.

Guthem and Oberth, who were formerly standing at Bill’s side, had already shunned the statue at a distance and were posing in a vigilant manner.

Just as Damon was about to retrieve an illuminating magic item from his chest pocket, the tomb chamber was suddenly illuminated. He then proceeded to return the magic item back to his pocket, while looking at the Swordsman statue in anger.

Athol’s angry roar echoed through the tomb chamber.

Alfea had already dashed to the side of the Swordsman statue at that time. She squat down, before sweeping her long sword and accurately dealt a fatal blow to the left thigh of the statue. After the blue magic stone was revealed, her long sword chopped it into pieces instantly. After the discovery of their weakness, the level two Swordsman statue was not Alfea's match.

The Swordsman statue disintegrated into sand.

Bill's limp body collapsed to the ground.

Damon was an experienced Mercenary. Although his social ranking was not high, he had the most abundant first-hand experience among the adventure team. He quickly dashed towards Bill and took out some medicine from his pocket in an attempt to save his life.

Oberth looked at the suffocating Bill and subconsciously touched the space ring on his finger. He had a healing magic scroll within his space ring – the healing magic scroll was light magic scroll that was painstakingly carved by Basgen. The healing magic scroll was much more valuable compared to other types of magic scrolls. This healing scroll was supposed to be for him to protect his life; it was impossible for Alfea to even have it. If he was willing to use it on Bill... It could save his life.

But he started to hesitate.

[This tomb chamber is full of danger; what if I get seriously

injured... My life is definitely more valuable than that Mercenary. I can't take this risk to use my life-saving item on him...]

These thoughts kept circulating in his head.

Before Oberth managed to make up his mind, Alfea's sorrowful voice could be heard, "He's dead..."

Bill was the first sacrificial victim in the adventure team.

As it was Debbie's first encounter with death, her complexion turned pale all of a sudden. She pursed her lips tightly and subconsciously sought comfort in Ye Chui's embrace. However, as she looked at Ye Chui, she realised that his face was even paler and his body was swaying, as though he was about to faint.

"Hammer, are you ok?" Debbie hurriedly supported him. She then wondered. [Does Hammer has the fear of witnessing death?]

Debbie's words made heads turn towards Ye Chui.

Guthem was somewhat in a bad mood and he wanted to mock at Ye Chui habitually, but he was suddenly dumbfounded.

Most of the others were dumbfounded too.

Debbie was also shocked.

“Hammer... Did you cast that <Light Drop> magic spell?”

Light suddenly overwhelmed the former darkness of the tomb chamber. Although Oberth declared that he had insufficient magic power to cast the spell, most of the people still subconsciously thought that he was the one who cast it.

However, they now discovered that Ye Chui’s magic wand left behind traces of star splendours after the spell was released. His pale complexion and lethargic condition confirmed one fact – Ye Chui was the one who cast the <Light Drop> magic spell.

“I’m not very skilled in this magic spell... This magic spell has almost drained all of my magic power and spiritual power...” Ye Chui leaned against Debbie’s petite figure, as he said lifelessly. At that moment, Ye Chui finally understood the disparity in magic talent – the talent of a Magician is distinguished by the magic power and spiritual power of the Magician. Ye Chui just happened to have slightly poorer talent compared to others and was only able to just make it as a Magician. While Oberth seemed to be able to cast this spell continuously without feeling exhausted, the release of the Intermediate Auxiliary Spell almost drained all of his magic power and spiritual power,. Other than the difference in Magician level, the disparity in their talents played a big part as well.

Debbie held Ye Chui and made him sit on the ground against a stone wall. She then stretched out her hand to wipe off the sweat on his face with a concerned look on her face. She was so worried about Ye Chui to that extent that she did not think about the reason why he was able to cast the Intermediate Auxiliary Spell.



But the others had many questions in their heads.

Ye Chui was a Magician with ordinary talent. Alfea only let him join the adventure team because he is also an Enchanting Master. In the eyes of Guthem and Oberth, Ye Chui was merely a burden who needed protection. However, in reality, the adventure team only managed to destroy the Swordsman statues due to Ye Chui's <Light Drop>, the Swordsman statue, which did not require the use of its vision, would have a huge advantage over the adventure team in the darkness. The entire adventure team could have fallen at that point in time.

It was not the adventure team who protected Ye Chui, but it was the other way around.

Choosing Ye Chui to join the adventure team was a wise decision.

This Magician... was really extraordinary.

Oberth stared at Ye Chui with a complex gaze. When he met Ye Chui for the first time today, he was misled by Guthem to think that he was a trash Magician. However, even without Guthem's badmouthing, Oberth would not have regarded Ye Chui as a decent Magician.

Oberth was the son of the Magician Guild Master; and he was the only boy in Stan City who was the son of the Advanced Magician. He had great talent and could possibly become the disciple of a level nine Magician – he could easily disregard Ye Chui based on

his social standing.

When Ye Chui had used magic scrolls to attack the Swordsman statues, Oberth did not think much of it. He only felt that it was some gimmicky technique that the weak Magicians would use to battle.

And now, Oberth finally realised that Ye Chui's standard had far surpassed his – the <Light Drop> magic spell was not something he could release when he was a level two Magician. Even as a level three Magician, he could not do it until he sought the guidance of Basgen, who specialised in light magic...

The gaze Guthem had towards Ye Chui revealed his astonishment, as he realised that he was mistaken about this young boy. Ye Chui was actually unordinary. As Guthem thought of something he said to mock Ye Chui when they just entered the ancient tomb, 'do you plan on casting a light magic spell?', his face suddenly became hot.

If Guthem were to read Ye Chui's mind at that instant, his face would become hotter.

Ye Chui thought in his heart. [The last minute construction of this light spell seems to have some problems. The amount of magic power drained when releasing the magic spell is too much and it isn't as stable as Oberth's. There's still room for improvement...]

The <Light Drop> magic spell, which Ye Chui released just now, was actually constructed from nothing. He only spent half an hour

doing it after watching Oberth cast it once!

## Chapter 49 – Idiot! Coward!

---

“Let’s rest for half an hour to restore our energy, before entering the inner hall!” Alfea said in a cold voice, lacking any form of emotion while she returned her long sword back to her waist. Walking to Ye Chui’s side, she spoke to him in a solemn voice, “Thank you... if it weren’t for you, we would probably end up dead. We all owe our lives to you. When this adventure ends, I will make sure that you earn enough treasure and gold to reward you for your heroic acts.”

Alfea’s words caused Guthem’s expression to turn sour instantly. Since Ye Chui’s portion of the treasure was going to increase, there was no doubt that Guthem’s portion was going to be reduced. However, he did not rebuke nor comment on this decision.

“It was also because I wanted to save myself. So, please do not think of me as such a noble person...” Ye Chui said in a hoarse voice, as a smile was plastered to his face. Although he appeared as though his increase in portion of money and treasure did not matter to him, joy was blooming in deep inside his heart.

Debbie took out a water bottle from Ye Chui’s travel bag and passed it to him. She sat beside him and examined him out of concern. She appeared as though she was bothered with Ye Chui’s increase in portion. Although it might seem that her portion of treasure had diminished, she would eventually be the biggest beneficiary.

Meanwhile, Damon, Athol and Balmain were all reorganizing Bill’s travelling bag. Since they were still in the midst of their

adventure, they could not take Bill's corpse with them. They could only carry along his armour and weapon – an adventure rule for paying respect to the dead. Knowing that the reminder of Bill's status would damage the group's moral, the three of them worked in silence.

Suddenly, a loud Bang! rang out as Alfea's left hand grabbed onto Oberth's collar. Forcing him against the wall, she scolded in an ice-cold and angry voice, "You caused Bill's death, so you will be fully liable for it! Maintaining visibility in the tomb was your responsibility! But you were clearly too lacking to carry out your responsibility! If not for the short period of darkness, Bill might be able to dodge the attack and... I might be able to save him!"

Oberth's face turned red as he tried to raise his voice, "I...I..." However, due to him being utterly exhausted by using too much of his magic powers, his whole body was weak. Facing the enraged Alfea, he desperately shouted out, "It wasn't my fault! I've used up too much of my magic power to help!"

Damon, Athol and Balmain all gave Oberth a look of displeasure and rage as they thought in their hearts. [Oberth said that he had released a spell to attack the statue, but what use was it? It merely added to the chaos! Ye Chui's use of magic scrolls was much more effective than everything that he did!]

The only one to console him was the man standing nearby, Guthem. "Miss Alfea, in that kind of situation, no one could have anticipated such a thing to happen. Who would have expected that an attack would occur exactly when the effect of <Light Drop> dissipated? In my opinion, Oberth shouldn't be blamed for this

incident... If you think about it, Hammer is the one at fault. He was the one who led an attack using his magic scrolls, causing Oberth to be blinded when he released his spells!”

The words used by Guthem were obviously meant to flatter Oberth. It was clear that Guthem took great importance to his friendship with Oberth.

However, those words incited rage within the rest of the group.

Whiz

Alfea pulled out the long sword from her waist using her other hand. Before anyone was able to respond, the blade of the sword was already placed against Guthem’s neck. When she spoke, she made sure she was cool and collected, “When I ask for the accountability of the members, no one is supposed to interrupt! Otherwise, I can use my position as team leader to expel you from the group and execute you!”

Alfea was visibly enraged. It was at this moment that she displayed her aura and poise as the team leader.

Guthem immediately turned mute.

It was at this moment that a weak voice came from Ye Chui, “Recently, I’ve read a book about adventuring. From these books, I’ve learnt something. The first thing was the certainty of members in their ability to accomplish their task or roles. An

adventurer must be clear and objective in what he does. When I used the magic scrolls to assist everyone in attacking, it was because I knew that I would be able to sustain the <Breeze> spell for a long time. Likewise, I have an abundance of scrolls to use continuously. Therefore, I was fully capable of assisting in attack. However, Oberth refused to work with me, and wished to compete with me. He had used his magic powers in a fruitless attempt, and that was the most retarded thing he could do!”

Oberth’s face transformed to rage. He was comparable in strength and ability to Alfea, and in his own arrogance, he despised Ye Chui. [This good for nothing magician has just had achieved something using the easy way! What rights does he have to insult me like this? Just what qualification does he have to accuse me as being retarded!?!]

Noticing Oberth’s enraged expression, Ye Chui took a deep breath to calm down and scolded, “Idiot!”

“Then what about you?!” Ye Chui’s gaze focuses on Guthem, “When the statue first appeared, you were the closest to Bill! You managed to notice the attack first, way before Bill managed to notice. If you actually went ahead and fought with the statue, allowing Alfea to join up in time, then perhaps Bill would not have been stabbed and died! But what did you do in that crucial moment? You ran away!”

Guthem’s face immediately turned red, as what Ye Chui said was the truth. However, he needed to defend himself, so he quibbled, “At that point in time, I instinctively defended myself.”

“Well, you are right. You can call it instinct.” Ye Chui said with a shameless smile, “You, by instinct, are a coward!”

[Idiot!]

[Coward!]

After saying these words, Ye Chui seemed to have lost the interest to continue the conversation. He then closed his eyes and started to meditate – meditation was a method used to restore spiritual power and magic power. In reality, it clears one’s mind so as to enable effective restoration.

Tranquillity was restored in the corridor.

Both Guthem and Oberth were slightly pissed at Ye Chui’s insults, ‘coward’ and ‘idiot’, but they did not have the means to rebuke him. They could only scold him secretly in their hearts and pledge that they will exact revenge on Ye Chui one day...

It could be seen that Alfea’s anger was reaching its peak. She did not want to let Guthem and Oberth off just like that, but after Balmain’s persuasion, Alfea let go of Oberth’s collar. After giving him a stern warning, Alfea walked towards Debbie and sat crossed-legged beside her, as her long sword was placed across her knees.

With a face as pale as a sheet, Oberth sat on the ground leaning on the wall. He also started meditating to restore his spiritual power.



The rest of the adventure team also spent the remaining time resting, as they get ready for the upcoming adventure.

20 minutes later

Ye Chui opened his eyes after his meditation. Although he felt that most of his spiritual and magic powers had restored, he was still irritated. He also realised at that moment that his words had probably angered Guthem and Oberth. But... He did not regret one bit. Instead his heart had the desire to kill these two people. As Guthem's brother's place in the adventure team was snatched away by Debbie, Guthem had always pitted himself against Ye Chui. On the other hand, Oberth was the vengeful kind of person who will remember all the things anyone did to him; and Ye Chui definitely did not want to be remembered by Oberth...

While Ye Chui thought of these words, he suddenly noticed something in the sand and took it in the heat of the moment.

It was a magic crystal.

Swordsman statues depended on magic crystals and magic stones to be activated – magic stones provided magic power, while magic crystals controlled the nodes.

The magic matrix which enabled a Swordsman statue to regenerate and attack was hidden within this magic crystal.

“I wonder how the magic matrix operates...”

In line with his ‘Father of Studies’ nickname, Ye Chui’s consciousness entered the magic crystal.

# Chapter 50 – My Giant Spinning Top Is Required At The Critical Moment

---

The magic crystal which Ye Chui found was an ordinary low-grade magic crystal. If Ye Chui were to use his vision to view inside the magic crystal, there would be about 10 metres of space available. This magic crystal was a lot worse than the magic crystal which the Magic Guild 'gave to him generously', but the interior of the magic crystal was filled with all kinds of magic arrays and these magic arrays were arranged categorically just like files.

The magic arrays were mainly divided into three categories.

The magic arrays belonging to the first category were meant for dealing with any provocation from outside. They triggered the magic matrixes within the magic crystal or kept them dormant; hence they acted as master switches.

The magic arrays belonging to the second category dealt with the regulation of the movement of the Swordsman statues, including how the statues moved and the sequence of their actions. The battle efficiency of the Swordsman statues could be portrayed here, hence it could be said that the battle experience of a level two Swordsman was part of the magic matrix.

Lastly, the third category of magic arrays was related to the earth element array which helped to regenerate the Swordsman statues. These types of magic arrays determined the looks of the statues. The exterior image, height and looks of the Swordsman could be altered by these magic arrays... These magic arrays seemed a little high-end.

The advanced applications of the earth element were probably the most abstruse things in the magic crystal.

As Ye Chui entered the 'Father of Studies' mode, he pondered for a moment, before trying to understand the second classification, which were the magic matrixes which controlled the actions of the statues. This portion was the most important to Ye Chui, as the study of it was probably helpful in the manufacturing of his Iron Man warrior suit.

"These magic crystals were manufactured by the Doria Family. To preserve these magic crystals, a special imprint method was used. The things on the interior of an ordinary magic crystal can be eliminated and reused. However, the magic arrays in these magic crystals are fixed, thus rendering them useless and worthless." Alfea's voice could be heard near Ye Chui. She stood before Ye Chui and pointed at the magic crystal in Ye Chui's hands, while explaining.

After the destruction of the seven Swordsman statues, most of the magic stones within them also perished. On the other hand, no one seemed to care about the magic crystals and the reason was simple – they were worthless and dangerous. Once these magic crystals got into contact with any magic stone, a Swordsman statue would be regenerated.

"I'm interested, so I'll research a little." Ye Chui laughed.

"Don't place this thing together with a magic stone." Alfea

reminded Ye Chui. He noticed that Alfea's mood had turned for the better and she was much calmer now.

“I know. Thanks for the reminder.” Ye Chui laughingly said.

Although he thanked Alfea, Ye Chui was not going to heed her advice. Magic stones and magic crystals could be placed together because the activation system within the magic crystal would automatically meet the magic stone and activate the magic matrix in the magic crystal. Ordinary people would definitely separate these two items, but Ye Chui was the Father of Studies, so how could he be like the ordinary people?

In the viewpoint of the Father of Studies, deleting the activation system of the magic crystal would do the trick.

Therefore, Ye Chui permeated his consciousness into the magic crystal within to scout for a second. Unfortunately, his first entry into the crystal triggered a safety feature, which initiated the delete sequence magic matrix. Since the deleting magic matrix was activated, some of the mysterious records within the magic crystal were deleted; even the whole space of the magic crystal was shrinking – causing the storage memory space of the crystal to be permanently reduced. However, Ye Chui was not bothered with this. After all, he had only wished to enter the magic crystal to learn about the magic matrix responsible for the statue's movements. After he was done with his task in the real world, he entered the crystal to study again.

Seeing that Alfea had already packed her stuff and was ready to set off, Ye Chui kept the magic crystal together with the other

three magic stones in the space ring in an unhesitant manner.

“Everyone, get ready to set off!” Alfea shouted.

The other members in the adventure team stood up as they prepared to move off.

Alfea pointed at an iron door which leads to the inner hall and gave orders, “Athol, go and force the door open. The rest shall prepare for battle and anticipate for any danger that could be present behind the door!”

Shng, shng

Damon, Balmain and Guthem all took out their swords.

Debbie also brandished her great sword in the air to display her vigilance.

Ye Chui patted Debbie’s shoulder and proceeded to the back of the squad. Magicians needed to have their own self-consciousness at this time.

Oberth stood beside Ye Chui with an indifferent expression.

“When the adventure is over, I will have a good talk with you.” Oberth whispered into Ye Chui’s ear.

Hehe Ye Chui laughed, “I will too.”

As the most muscular of the team, Athol kept his sword back at his waist and stood at a distance of five metres away from the iron door. With a loud arghh!, he charged towards the door just like a bull – Beastmen talent skill <Barbaric Charge>.

All kinds of talent abilities were hidden in the bloodlines of different races. For example, the Dwarves were geniuses at enchanting; the Elves were talented in archery, while Beastmen specialised in <Barbaric Charge>.

Of course, these kinds of talent skills could only be stimulated when they trained.

What was worth mentioning was that there was an ability named <Battle Cry> among the Beastmen. It worked through a loud roar, which stimulated their instinctive desire to fight. Athol, who was previously engaged in battle with the statues, let out the <Battle Cry>. However, that was instinctual. He has still not mastered the art of activating <Battle Cry>.

Bang!

Athol, the Beastman, charged and collided with the iron door using his shoulder. The powerful charge had left the whole tomb shaking fiercely. The rest who were watching could feel the strength of the charge and was left speechless from shock.

However, it was even more shocking that after that forceful blow, the iron door did not even budge an inch!

After the charge, Athol was thrown back by several meters. He fell onto the ground and rubbed his cheeks with doubt, “My <Barbaric Charge> could not even make the door move?”

“Athol, are you alright?” Alfea asked in a dignified tone of voice.

“Yeah. I’m fine.” Athol rubbed his sore left shoulder while trying hard to stand up. Unable to accept the results, he asked permission again, “Miss Alfea, please stand aside. I want to try it again.”

Bang!

Bang!

The iron door was struck by Athol’s charges repeatedly. Finally, after a few attacks, it showed signs of loosening. Unfortunately, the door could not be opened completely and seemed like it would not budge even if they attempted another 10 times.

Athol was already panting from exhaustion. <Barbaric Charge> required sword aura, as well as a strong body to maintain, thus Athol could not last for long.

Members of the adventure team displayed surprised looks on their faces.



[This is weird. The door to the inner door is actually that hard to break open?] Alfea thought to herself. [Athol is the strongest amongst us. If he can't make the door budge...]

“Why not let me try?” A young girl's voice could be heard suddenly.

It was Debbie's voice.

Everyone looked at Debbie.

[Even our strongest man, Athol can't break the door open, on what basis does this smallest girl in the team, Debbie, think she can do it?] Guthem immediately thought of what he could insult and mock Debbie with, but he managed to shut his mouth before it is too late, after he recalled something.

The others were also sceptical, but after thinking Debbie as a young Great Swordsman, Alfea eventually let her give it a try, “All right...”

“Please make way for my ultimate move. I'm afraid someone might get hurt, as I myself am scared of it as well.” Debbie told the team in a responsible manner.

Feeling doubtful, everyone in the adventure team moved a few steps back. Ye Chui stood the furthest from Debbie, as he recalled what happened to the southern wall in Anthony's Magic Cottage.

Guthem, on the other hand, did not think highly of Debbie's skills as his brother was also a level two Swordsman. He thought that he had completely understood the attacking level of a level two Swordsman, thus he stood nearest to Debbie. He also had a smirk plastered on his face, as though he was prepared to watch a joke happen before his eyes... Then he broke out in sweat.

The young Great Swordsman took one deep breath and started to spin crazily. The spinning got faster and faster... to the extent that one would not know if that was a spinning top or a human. The friction between the air and Debbie's' spinning body created a constant woong, woong sound, as the people on the ground trembled with fear. The sandy soil on the ground started spinning in the air as well, just like a tornado had swept past this tiny and cramped corridor.

A moment later

Woo

The great sword flew like an artillery shell, taking some sandy soil along with it. It was as though a great dragon had circled in the air, before ramming into the tightly-shut iron door fiercely.

Boom!

A loud slam could be heard.

The ground shook.

The iron sword clashed against the iron door and produced blinding sparks.

Sand particles started to spread in all directions.

A foggy scene appeared in front of everyone.

“Dust Removal!” Ye Chui raised up his magic wand and shouted.

Basic Life Spell <Dust Removal>.

The sand particles floating in the air immediately fell to the ground and tranquillity was resumed.

Although Debbie, who was covered in dust, squatted on the ground and panted heavily, her face was red with excitement.

The iron door right in front of her had opened. Her force was so impactful to the extent that the door became distorted and her great sword had pierced through right iron door and penetrated it...

“...” Everyone was speechless.

Everyone looked at Debbie and then looked at Ye Chui, who cast

the <Dust Removal> life spell, before being deep in thought. [The abilities these two have are extraordinary...]

# Chapter 51 – This Ancient Tomb Is A Little Unusual

---

<Dust Removal> is no doubt the simplest magic spell. Magicians would be trained and skilled in this magic spell when they first acquire the title of a ‘Magician’. However, it is no easy feat to be able to command all the floating sand particles to suddenly fall to the ground – Ye Chui was definitely the only one who was able to pull it off easily. From a certain perspective, Ye Chui’s release of this magic spell was even more astonishing compared to Debbie’s breaking of the iron door using her strange move.

But... no one would be jealous of his skills.

A same thought flashed through everyone’s mind. [Who, in their right mind, would go and master such a life skill? Of what use is it?]

After the moment of astonishment, Alfea immediately became alert and dashed in front of Debbie, who was squatting and panting on the ground after she released her exhausting move. This was to anticipate for any unforeseen danger that could appear from the inner hall.

Athol, Balmain, Damon and Guthem all followed closely behind, as they surveyed the dark inner hall in a vigilant manner.

On the other hand, Ye Chui rushed to Debbie at lightning speed and asked with concern, “Are you okay?”

Debbie nodded her head, “I’m just a little dizzy...”

“ ... ”

After Ye Chui held Debbie up, his eyes glanced at the inner hall. The inner hall was pitch-black and no one was able to see what was hidden inside. Hence, he looked towards Oberth, trying to imply something. [Release <Light Drop> quickly. Don’t just stand there in a daze and be self-conscious about your responsibility as a human torch.]

Oberth obviously knew what he had to do.

But after having eye contact with Ye Chui, Oberth felt dissatisfied, as he felt that Ye Chui was teaching him what to do.

“Oberth!” Alfea yelled impatiently, “Light!”

“...” Oberth gave a cold snort and stood at the back of the Swordsmen in the adventure team. He then waved his magic wand in the air and cast the <Light Drop> magic spell in the inner hall.

Light descended upon the inner hall and the team was now able to see the situation within the inner hall.

Alfea held her long sword in her hand as she led the pack into the inner hall. As she entered the inner hall in a vigilant manner, the

others followed behind her.

Under the light emitted from the star splendours, everything in the inner hall was clearly visible at one glance.

However, after surveying the situation in the inner hall, Alfea's facial expression became somewhat strange, "This... inner hall seems a little different from the ones I've seen during the ancient tomb adventures that I've participated in... Even the Doria's Adventure Guide doesn't seem to have records of this type of ancient tomb."

"It's indeed a little strange..." Balmain concurred in a serious tone, as he held his sword with both his hands and scrutinised the surroundings.

He and Alfea were the only ones in the adventure team who had participated in ancient tomb adventures.

While Ye Chui helped Debbie get up, he heard the conversation and immediately became curious. Holding Debbie's hand, they approached the entrance and saw the interior of the inner halls. It was big, about the size of a palace. Even Oberth's <Light Drop>, which affected a wide area, could not even cover half of the whole place. But even if the other half was still shrouded in darkness, with the half that was lit, it was sufficient to guess the construct of this inner hall. It was an open, circular space, with a stage in the middle – most likely what all adventures were seeking for was on top. Meanwhile, the circular walls covering this place were abundantly decorated with iron doors.

There were dozens of iron doors, which were identical to the one Debbie broke open.

The origins of the paths leading to the iron doors are unknown, but all of them lead to the inner hall eventually.

“What’s the matter with these iron doors? Why are there some more iron doors here? Doria’s Adventure Guide didn’t record this design of the ancient tomb within it...” Alfea felt a little anxious at that instant. As she recalled that Athol was unable to break open the iron door using brute force, she felt that something was amiss.

“I guess there might be many keys that lead to this ancient tomb. I believe that each key will lead one to a single channel behind the iron door.” Ye Chui made a guess after he took a good look at the surroundings.

“How do you know?” Oberth questioned Ye Chui in an indifferent tone.

“The route from we came from moments ago was in accordance to the Doria Tomb Adventure Guide. There were surprises along the way but there wasn’t really much harm dealt as per those recorded inside the guide. In other words, this place is still linked to the records inside of the Adventure Guide. Along the way, there are many branches of routes that we could have taken but chose not to because we assumed that they would lead to a dead end. So, we took the route that we took and ended up here, in front of that iron door. But if the other irons doors within this inner hall are not



ornaments, it's highly possible that they will lead to the other routes that we have avoided. Thus, everything is linked here, and ends here." Ye Chui narrated calmly, with one eye looking at Oberth hinting of ridicule.

Unless one was an idiot, anyone would be able to understand this concept easily.

Recalling that Ye Chui had called him an idiot previously, Oberth face reddened with fury, "Perhaps this type of ancient tomb has a novel structure that no one has ever seen."

"Since the start of our adventure, we have followed the Adventure Guide and easily avoided all the traps in the area. This proves that the outside path we took that leads to this ancient tomb had been experienced by another group before us. Therefore, the path we took isn't new. This ancient tomb is probably made up of the designs and structures of different tombs combined." Speaking in a cool and calm voice, Ye Chui points to somewhere close by and further explained, "The biggest proof is over there!"

The object he was pointing to was a skeleton clad in a suit of armour!

It was obvious that this deceased corpse was an adventurer that came to this tomb a long time ago. Defeated and left to die, the skeleton laid far away from the opened iron door, and was at a dimly-lit area. Therefore, not everyone managed to notice the skeleton. It was only while Ye Chui was talking to Oberth that Balmain noticed and alerted the rest.

“There were other adventurers that came here before!” Balmain spoke with a sinking voice, “It seems like what Hammer said is true. There’s more than one key that leads to this ancient tomb... This ancient tomb is a little unusual!”

“There’s another skeleton at the other side!” Athol exclaimed his discovery, “There as well!”

Under Alfea’s request, Oberth released a few <Light Drop> magic spells in the depths of the inner hall. Very soon, the adventure team discovered dozens of skeletons, which were scattered over the surroundings of the inner hall just like stars in the sky.

“Everyone, please do not act rashly. There’s something amiss here!” Alfea ordered, as she acted responsibly as the team leader of the adventure team.

At that point in time, everyone was standing at the entrance of the inner hall. Due to their cautious attitude, no one made a step into the inner hall. After hearing Alfea’s order, the team became even more alert and vigilant.

“The ground is a little strange!” Damon said in a deep voice.

After hearing his words, everyone unanimously stared at the ground within the inner hall.

The ground seemed to be made up of rocks and stones, and there

were several strange patterns across the ground. Everyone had already noticed the patterns on the ground, but after Damon's words, everyone scrutinised the ground even more carefully. Oberth was the first one to shout, "Those strange patterns on the grounds are carvings of magic arrays... Oh my, the entire ground of the inner hall is filled with magic arrays."

"The scale of the magic arrays is unbelievable..." Alfea looked wide-eyed at the seemingly huge inner hall, as she could not believe her eyes, "Is the owner of this ancient tomb a level nine Swordsman?"

Magic arrays were even more advanced than magic matrixes.

Magic scrolls were basically carved by recording magic spells onto parchment using magic ink, while enchantment was basically done by engraving magic spells onto armours or weapons using Mithril and magic arrays were made by carving magic spells onto other objects using the foundation of magic. Although the use of magic arrays was not as intricate as enchanting, it still requires abstruse magic ability to pull it off.

Typically, magic arrays come in the size of a space ring, or at its largest, the magic mirror kept in the Magic Guild Hall that was used to store the magic crystal.

The dense carving of magic arrays on the ground of the inner hall was not a feat that any ordinary Magician would be able to pull off easily.

A lot of effort had been put into the construction of this ancient tomb.

The entire adventure team broke into cold sweat simultaneously. Debbie suddenly thought of something and walked over to the iron door at the side, before she pierced her great sword through the door and removing it. After sensing danger, she went back to Ye Chui's side to protect him... or maybe it was Debbie who required the protection of Ye Chui.

On the other hand, Ye Chui was examining the dense carving of magic symbols on the ground.

Oberth was doing likewise.

“These are space magic arrays!” After observing for tens of seconds, Oberth shouted in excitement, while forcefully rubbing his hands. Since he had been studying space element magic, Oberth felt that it was his time to shine.

Ye Chui looked at Oberth indifferently, as he already knew that these were space magic arrays the moment he saw them.

However, his humility refrained him from speaking up.

As Ye Chui looked at the skeletons from afar, he could not help but frown, “Adventures are rarely done alone. But... why are these skeletons lying alone? Don't they have adventure partners?”

# Chapter 52 – The Game Has Started

---

Dozens of iron doors surrounded the perimeter of the inner hall, some of which were already broken. Before their adventure team had arrived, there were already a few batches of adventurers that had been there. And it seemed like all of them had perished here.

The skeletons, which were scattered all around the inner hall, indicated many problems. Judging from the severity of the damage of the armour and clothes of the skeletons, they were at least dead for 100 years. The skeletal frames beneath the armour had all disintegrated into sand; even the armours had spots of rust on them. On the other hand, there were other skeletal corpses that were only dead for several decades, just that... Why were the skeletons scattered all over, when it seemed like they were from the same adventure team?

[There's a few skeletons that are placed together, while the rest are scattered all over.]

[How did they get scattered; and how did they die?]

[The most important point was that the scattering of these skeletons had a certain fixed pattern to it...]

Ye Chui pondered over these issues.

At that moment, Ye Chui suddenly heard Oberth's voice, "I see it! This is a space transmitting magic array, which seems to be linked to somewhere else!"

“Oberth, can you figure out where it’s linked to?” Guthem hurried asked.

Oberth tried to appear as an expert and replied, “I currently don’t know where, but I can try activating a small portion of the magic array to test it out...”

From Oberth’s arrogant demeanour, Ye Chui already knew that it was just an act he put forth.

Despite the worried looks of Alfea and the rest, Oberth confidently reassured, “You don’t have to worry. I will soon be a disciple of a level nine Magician, who specialises in space magic! He saw the great talent that resided within me and is fully prepared to take me as his apprentice.” Oberth spoke nothing but nonsense. However, since he knew that those who were listening had no knowledge of the real truth, he continued on in glee. “Although I don’t know the purpose of this huge magic array, please trust that I will be able to lead you all to the final chamber of this tomb!”

After saying his piece, Oberth felt a sense of heroic aura descend upon him, before initiating the magic array on the ground.

Just as Oberth was bragging and convincing the adventure team, Ye Chui’s focus returned from the skeletons on the ground. As Oberth was about to make contact with the magic symbols on the ground, Ye Chui’s heart skipped a beat. He then screamed, “Stop! That’s not your normal teleportation space array! It is an array

that is going to teleport and split us into different locations!”

It could only be described as forlorn, as Ye Chui’s words did not prevent Oberth’s hand from making contact with the magic array.

Immediately, the dimly lit hall became bright. It was as though Oberth had flipped a switch and turned on the lights. However, this light was not caused by the magic spell <Light Drop>. The light, which were golden yellow, covered the entire walls and floor of the tomb chamber in characters. Obviously, Oberth had triggered the countless concentrated magic arrays within this hall.

“What’s going on?” Oberth spoke in shock. He had only planned to activate a small array; and according to his knowledge, the effects should not have been so huge. So, what exactly did he do wrong?

Here, we can learn that this is the result of an amateur mimicking the actions of the Father of Studies...

“Retreat!” Alfea was quick to respond, as she shouted at the top of her lungs, running towards the stone-paved road.

However, it was too late.

A yellow wall made out of air came down, blocking the path to the stone paved road. In attempt to break through, Alfea brandished her long sword and activated <Wind Blade>, but it was all in vain. As the air waves collided with the air wall, a Puff sound

was produced. It was as though the air wave produced by Alfea had landed on cotton; to produce such a soft sound but leaving no a single scratch on the yellow wall of air.

“My god! It’s <Space Isolation>! A type of space imprisonment magic spell that can only be used by advanced Magicians!” Balmain recognised the yellow wall of air and said in pure shock as his face paled in fright. Turning to Alfea, he hurriedly said, “Young Lady, I believe our adventure is beyond our expectations. I think it is time we quickly withdraw!”

“...” Alfea hesitated for several seconds but once again looked at the yellow wall of air around her. Finally, she took out a worked-out linen cloth – similar to the key required for the entrance of the ancient tomb, this was the key for exiting the place. Once activated, the entire team will be teleported out using space magic.

Unfortunately, even after placing the cloth on the ground and piercing it with her long sword, nothing happened.

“Space is completely isolated in here. Any form of spatial teleportation is impossible!” Ye Chui explained in a dignified tone while he recalled the information he had learnt from the magic crystal. Arriving at a side of the yellow wall, he gently placed his hand on it. He could feel a soft sensation wrapped around his palm. If he were to apply some force, his fingers would be slightly indented into the wall, although to a certain limit. It was as though the steel wall was wrapped in a layer of cotton. “This is an extremely advanced level of space magic. I’m afraid, as long as you are below the rank of an advanced Swordsman, you won’t be able to break through it.”



“What does a level two Magician know? Stop spouting nonsense!” Oberth roared as he took glaring glances around all corner of the yellow walls of air to fall stupefied.

Ye Chui released a deep breath, trying to calm down. He looked at Oberth and reprimanded, “Idiot! If not for you, would we be in such a state?”

“Yo-You!” Oberth moved towards Ye Chui as though he planned on making a move.

Of course, Ye Chui was not afraid... Even so, he stood by Debbie as he continued to casually accuse Oberth, “The magic array, which we saw previously, was meant to trap us. It was probably due to the old age of the magic array that it lost its effectiveness and wasn’t activated the moment we entered. But you! You’re such an idiot, yet you acted like you were the professional. If not for the accidental activation of the entire magic array, which was due to the activation of the small portion you did just now, we wouldn’t be trapped in here right now!”

After hearing Ye Chui’s words, everyone else in the team could not help but stare at Oberth in anger.

Indeed, it was Oberth’s adamant desire to activate a small portion of the magic array that led to all the magic arrays here being activated. Therefore, everyone, including Guthem, had a furious expression on their faces.

“I-I, It was an accident!” Oberth came up with the excuse frantically.

Alfea, on the other hand, felt her head in pain. Having known Oberth for a long time, she knew that Oberth was a little arrogant, as he was the son of the Magician Guild Master, but it was not to the extent of being overboard. However, Alfea now felt that Oberth was such an imbecile and blamed herself for choosing such a person to be on the team. She then looked towards Ye Chui with subconscious anticipation, “So, what should we do now?”

The rest of the team also looked towards Ye Chui.

It is undeniable that, under such circumstances, all of them pinned their hopes on him to unravel or deactivate this magic array. Since it was a fact that Ye Chui and Oberth were the only magicians in this group and that Oberth was an horary idiot, all their expectations could only fall on Ye Chui’s shoulders.

“This magic array should perform its next move soon...” Ye Chui voiced out his thoughts. Having thought of something suddenly, he grasped Debbie’s hand.

Debbie, who was caught by surprise, muttered out, “Hammer?”, as she held a strange expression on her face, unable to understand what Ye Chui was planning at all.

Ye Chui did not respond nor bother to explain. Instead, he tucked his magic wand back to his waist in a hurry and held Alfea’s hand.

The rest, unable to verify what Ye Chui had in mind, just stood there dumbfounded.

“This magic array will soon teleport us out of here individually! So try to keep as close as possible to each other!” Ye Chui yelled.

Everyone continued to look at the boy in bewilderment, as their brain could not even begin to process what was going on.

Without any time for Ye Chui to speak another word, dazzling light began to accumulate below their feet suddenly.

This scene was the beginning of the space teleportation due to the activation of the space magic array!

Although the ultimate purpose of the ancient tomb master was unclear, the sight of the scattered skeletons indicated that the magic array in the tomb chamber will teleport and split the adventurers into different small boxes of the hall, which were created by the magic array.

It could be noticed that some skeletons were placed in pairs, meaning that if they were close enough to each other, they will be teleported together to the same location.

Ye Chui did not wish for Debbie to leave his side so he quickly held onto her hand. Meanwhile, he chose Alfea to get teleported along with him due to her strength being the strongest out of all the members of the group.

No matter what happened after the teleportation, they held a higher chance of survival with the strongest person at their side.

Engulfed by the light, all eight members teleported without a trace. In the next instant, all eight of them were split into smaller groups and isolated within the inner halls by the golden yellow wall of air. Everyone else was isolated alone, except for Ye Chui's group which consisted of Debbie, Alfea and himself.

“Dear Adventurers, the game has just started! Yay!”

A somewhat child-like voice suddenly reverberated through the entire hall.

## Chapter 53 – Rules Of The Airplane Chess

---

The yellow wall of air created by <Space Isolation> made the inner hall of the ancient tomb seem as though it was extremely grand. The entire space had been split into countless individual checkered rooms, each with a floor area of about 20 square feet. Each and every adventurer was teleported individually into a checkered room of their own, with the exception of Ye Chui, Alfea and Debbie, who teleported together into a single checkered room thanks to the sufficient preparation done by Ye Chui, who foresaw this happening.

Although the three of them were isolated together in one room, they were still able to see the other team members through the translucent yellow wall. Of course, they were visible to the others as well.

The sudden and drastic change of environment inevitably caused everyone to be in a state of panic. Making matters worse by fueling the fear within their hearts was the child-like voice which said, “Dear Adventurers, the game has started.”

“Wait a minute. Who is the one speaking? Is there anyone else present in this ancient tomb beside us?” Debbie said in a trembling voice as her arm wrapped around Ye Chui.

Despite Alfea being the strongest, as well as the leader of the team, she understood that the dangers of the unknown in this adventure was far beyond her expectations and were not what her ability was able to handle. She then subconsciously also took a few steps closer to Ye Chui’s side. Grabbing her long sword as tightly as

possible, she tried to explain, “The voice that we heard is probably not of a human, but of a conscience stored within a magic crystal...”

“Conscience?” Debbie stared at Alfea in a daze, completely exposing her lack of understanding, “What is that?”

“A magic crystal can serve several purposes. One of them is to store a person’s spirit inside as an imprint. When the magic crystal has sufficient storage space and the imprint is clear enough, the imprint can gradually evolve with its own intelligence.” Ye Chui explained. He thought of the magic crystal which he had just obtained from the Magic Guild Hall, which contained 32 magic symbols. Each and every one of these magic symbols, as well as the comprehension of the Magician manufacturer towards these magic symbols, were considered as spirit imprints. If Ye Chui had any doubts, he could always seek clarification from these imprints.

At that moment, Ye Chui had a faint hunch. [If the Magic Crystal had a storage space big enough, I might be able to create an artificial intelligence...] With this child-like voice currently speaking, it was literally a confirmation that his hunch was right.

After hearing his explanation, Alfea gave Ye Chui a surprised gaze. Magic crystal intelligence was considered expensive, to the extent that many advanced Magicians do not even have this in their possession. Likewise, a book or record about such an object is rare. So, it begs the question, how did Ye Chui know so much about magic crystals?

Of course, there were more pressing matters to address at the

moment and she had no time to entertain such thoughts.

The child-like voice continued. “I know all of you are curious as to the reason why you have been trapped here. In reality, the reason is very simple to understand. This is my tomb and I had tasked the Doria family to help me construct it when I was reaching the end of my life. This is because I knew very well, that after hundreds or thousands of years after my death, there would be people who would find their way here. I never once believed that there would be an ancient tomb that would deter adventurers from entering, as I was too an adventurer who took part in exploring the ancient tomb of the founder of magic. If even the great founder of magic had his tomb ransacked, then I don’t have to explain about my pathetic tomb of a small time swordsman.”

[The magic founder he is referring to must be the genius who awoke the innate talent of magic in humans 13,000 year ago. He was recognised as the man who took magic to the furthest level. But I believe many of us have never heard that his tomb had been ransacked by others before!]

The Child’s voice continued, “I believe that the ancient tomb created by the Doria Family can never be perfect, and one day, it would be intruded upon by others. Therefore, from the beginning till now, I have been waiting for you adventurers to arrive. So far, you are the fifth batch to enter my tomb. Of the four batches before yours, there were two which never got the opportunity to reach this part of the tomb. Meanwhile, the other two that entered are dead, with their corpses over there. Well, now that you are here, I will be frank. I am somewhat disappointed. Out of all the groups that have entered my tomb, yours is by far the weakest. So, I don’t expect much before your life force extinguishes.”

“What do you want from us?!” Guthem let out a roar, but due to the <Space Isolation>, his voice was muffled.

“What I want is something simple... Since you guys are the intruders, which disturbed my tomb, I would naturally want to annihilate you. But of course, like I have mentioned earlier, this is just a game. I love playing games, so if you guys are willing to play this game with me, you might have a slim chance of survival.”

“What kind of game do you want us to play with you?” Balmain asked.

“During my era, there was a game called Airplane Chess. I’m not sure if this game still exists in this day and age, so let me explain the rules. The rules of Airplane Chess is very simple – within a disc-shaped chess board, participants will start from the perimeter. Once you enter a check, you have to battle the warrior within it. After emerging victorious, you can choose whether to move eastwards, westwards, northwards or southwards into another check. The first person to get into the check in the centre of the chess board wins the game, but of course, the warriors that you will face closer the middle of the board will be stronger. In addition, you won’t be able to enter the check which others have already cleared. There are only four checks leading to the middle check, so once others clear these four checks the game will end and the remaining players will be eliminated from the game.” The child-like voice explained, “Elimination would mean getting destroyed by the chess board. This magic array within the inner hall was created and designed by a Specialist Realm Magician for a month. So, you small Swordsmen have the slimmest chance of escaping the fate of getting destroyed by the chess board.”



“In other words, only four people can live?” Balmain calmly asked.

“No.” The child-like voice replied in a sharp tone. “This is only the first stage; and it is in this stage that four people gets to pass. But in the nest stage, it is uncertain how many of you will get through safely... Oh, of course, there’s this member within you all that is really intelligent – before the space teleportation array was activated he grabbed the two girls who had the best destructive power and the strongest combat ability of the team respectively. I expect much from this team of three people, even if they die, the boy would be able to die in the embrace of these two girls, isn’t it a nice image?”

Upon hearing his words, the other team members were either filled with amazement or rage as they stared at Ye Chui.

Clearly, the intelligent person which the child-like voice was speaking about was Ye Chui.

“Do you have any more questions?” The child-like voice asked.

“Is there a time limit?” Ye Chui asked.

“Of course, there isn’t. As long as you defeat the guards through battle, you can forever keep your position for safety precautions, and there will be no penalty for you decision. If you manage to reach the middle with four members, then you win. The child-like voice showed obvious interest in Ye Chui and directly asked him,

“smart person, do you have any other questions?”

“No.” Ye Chui thought for a second, before shaking his head.

“Very good. Although I can’t say much to interfere in this game, I still wish all of you the best of luck.” The child-like voice continued to speak, “Oh, there’s something I’ve to inform you – in order to construct this tomb, I have squandered all my savings. So this adventure of yours will never yield any form of harvest. However, you can still hope that you will receive the rights to leave this place alive... So, let the games begin!”

After the voice stopped speaking, Ye Chui, Debbie and Alfea all noticed an energy-filled aura appear within the space they were in. In the blink of an eye, the stream broke off into different branches, tapping into the different isolated space, and gradually condensed to form up many human-like bodies; each made of different elements, each holding onto a sword.

There was a different type of opponent to deal with in each person’s space. Athol had to face a swordsman made of fire; Damon and Guthem had to each face a swordsman made of stone; and Balmain had to face a swordsman made of wood. Each of their opponents had a facial expression that looked grim and menacing. However, the one with the worse luck of the draw had to be Oberth, who received a swordsman that was made of lightning, which seemed the most menacing of them all.

The fight commenced, as both Debbie and Alfea stared vigilantly at the swordsman made of water.

“Time for you girls to shine.”

Ye Chui patted Alfea and Debbie’s shoulders with his hand, before tactfully retreating to the corner of the isolated space...

## Chapter 54 – You Really Are An Idiot

---

The water Swordsman that was condensed from thin air looked light. With its translucent body, and the obvious element it was made out of, the three could tell that this was going to be an uphill battle. Therefore, Ye Chui purposefully gave the opportunity of direct combat to Alfea and Debbie, while he stood in the corner of the isolated space to keenly observe.

A true man battles using his brain, not brute strength...

Instantly, Debbie and Alfea screamed out and charged towards the water Swordsman. Although the water Swordsman seemed to have similar combat capabilities as the stone Swordsman spawned outside the isolated space, it was clear that it was going to be more troublesome to deal with. With its non-fixed form and translucent body, it was practically impossible to detect the magic crystal and magic stone within its body. Perhaps the constitution of the water Swordsman varied largely with that of the stone Swordsman – any damage dealt to stone Swordsman could not be easily seen, but it might not even be possible to injure the water Swordsman.

During the exchange of blows, Alfea and Debbie were mostly parrying and evading the blows coming towards them.

“The water Swordsman’s source of magic power could be the magic array on the ground. Debbie, try to destroy it.” Ye Chui suddenly uttered while frowning.

Debbie followed his orders as soon as she could, while Alfea

swung her long sword and temporarily forced the water swordsman to retreat. Debbie took this small time frame to jump high into the air, before starting to spin her body. Soon, her motion reached an explosive level of centrifugal force. Finally, when she was about to land, she released her attack to the ground. BANG!

This was the move that Debbie spent the past few months inventing and perfecting and it was referred to as <Oblique Giant Spinning Top...>

Sparks from the collision splattered everywhere, but the magic array on the ground seemed to be unharmed.

“Genius!” The child-like voice murmured, “You really are the smartest. I’m impressed that you actually managed to figure out that these Swordsmen were formed by the magic array on the ground; and that you have to destroy the magic array on the ground in order to defeat these Swordsmen. But it’s a pity that this magic array was carved by a specialist level Magician. Even after a thousand years, it’s still not within the means of you low-level Swordsmen to destroy it.”

Ye Chui tilted his head upwards and looked at the golden yellow wall of air that isolated them from the world, and asked, “Since you consider this as your game, then I believe that these Battle Guards are not invincible.”

“You’re right.” The child-like voice joyously replied. “It’s indeed more satisfying talking to intelligent people. Then tell me, how can you actually manage to solve the problem of these Battle Guards?”

“I’m guessing that their weakness is either their supply of magic power or time.” Ye Chui explained, revealing that he is not that smart a person actually. In actual fact, it was the experience in his previous life, whereby he had played numerous games and could roughly guess the intent the creators had with each game they made.

The child-like voice did not respond this time.

It was obvious that his silence meant a lot of things.

“Alfea and Debbie, each of you stand on one side of water Swordsman and take turns to attack it!” Ye Chui ordered immediately.

“Why must we each stand on one side of the water Swordsman?” Alfea asked, while trying to catch her breath.

“The professional term for this tactic is called ‘drawing aggro’.” Ye Chui answered. The water Swordsman only had basic fighting capabilities. It would attack whoever attacks it and ignore other parties around. This tactic was commonly used in boss fights, which proved even more effective here since the water Swordsman did not have the attack flexibility of a boss character.

However, such a term, ‘drawing aggro’ was obviously unfamiliar to Alfea. But after considering his performance at the stone-paved road, she hastily did as he had requested. With a leap, she swung her sword across the back of the water Swordsman, and as Ye Chui

had anticipated, the water Swordsman immediately turned around to face Alfea. It too swung its water-made long sword towards her.

But Debbie dived forward and struck its head before the attack could land. With Debbie's attack, all attacking functions simply ceased as it turned around to face Debbie this time; completely ignoring Alfea's existence.

Alfea seemed to have understood something, as she carried out her attack once more and shifting the target of the water Swordsman to her once again.

If these two girls were able to coordinate their attacks well enough, the water Swordsman could only turn left and right without a chance to attack.

"So that's your plan." Alfea muttered out as she completely realised Ye Chui's intent but could not help but look at him in bewilderment. "We can't defeat it, even if we continue doing this."

"We only need to drain all its energy or time." Ye Chui answered with a tone filled with self-confidence, "Keep the tempo going; it will disappear soon." He then looked towards the other adventurers and shouted. "Don't bother trying to look out for the Battle Guard's weaknesses. It's the magic array on the ground, which you cannot destroy. So, the only way to make them disappear is to drain them of all their time and energy!"

Earlier on, everyone heard the conversation Ye Chui had with the child-like voice. However, only Guthem and Balmain managed

comprehend Ye Chui's words that the Battle Guard's weaknesses were its energy and time. Now, after Ye Chui clarified his words, it became a lot clearer to the team.

Out of everyone, Oberth was the most pitiful.

He was a magician, but was facing the most powerful lightning Swordsman. Due to its human form being condensed from lightning, it held a terrifying appeal. In mere seconds after they both exchanged moves, Oberth was already filled with distress, as his body was already burnt. Quickly, he took out his magic puppet from his space ring, which was made of iron. It had decent battling capabilities and could temporarily fend off the lightning Swordsman. Since he was the son of the Magician Guild Master, he definitely had some treasures with him. This gave him some time to recuperate.

Struck by lightning, Oberth's entire body felt numb. His left arm seemed to no longer hold any feeling and his whole body was riddled with wounds. Feeling that his life was under threat, he did not hesitate to take out a Light Heal magic scroll to use. Once activated, a white light wrapped around him, causing his injuries to heal gradually.

Meanwhile, Guthem, Athol, Balmain and Damon were facing off with their own individual opponents. It was not too difficult for them as they were Swordsmen as well. Although their opponents were not as formidable as the lightning Swordsman, they still received some light wounds from their exchange. However, when they noticed that Oberth pulled out a magic puppet, and used a Light Heal magic scroll, their boiled with rage.



“You had a Light Heal Scroll this entire time!” Damon was the first that roared out, “Why didn’t you take it out earlier?! Bill would not have died if we used it on him!”

“You selfish BASTARD!” Athol, the Beastman roared, “It’s an utter disgrace to have you on my team!”

Balmain spoke out, “Shameless! You have completely disgraced your father!”

It was a basic principle that team members on an adventure should help each other in need. Firstly, they only fell into such a conundrum due to Oberth triggering the magic array. Now, after discovering that he had the opportunity to save Bill’s life, their boiling rage had reached its peak. This act was simply unlawful, and even Guthem expressed his anger.

However, Guthem’s expression completely changed in just a mere second.

“How can the worthless lives of you Swordsmen compare to that of mine? I am the Magician Guild Master’s son and I have exceptional talent that you all can only hope for. So why would I even care about your petty values! Those values are worthless in my eyes!” The white light shrouding Oberth had completely dispersed and the wound on his body was completely gone. Standing beside the wall of air, he calmly spoke as he took a breather. “All of you will end up dead anyways. After studying space magic for these past few days, the only one with any chance

of leaving this place is me! Hahahaha! I will certainly not envy your demise!”

“Oberth! Please, you must take me with you!” The man who had previously made accusations towards Oberth, immediately pleaded with all his might. “As long as you can allow bring me out of this place safely, I’m willing to become your servant and bodyguard for life!”

“What Hammer said was right. You really are a coward!” Damon breathlessly shouted.

“So what if I’m a coward?! It’s better than being dead!” Guthem managed to parry the stone Swordsman’s strike and retreated back by a few steps. In that small time frame, he spoke without a hint of humiliation on his face.

“Well said! After I manage to unravel the space magic that is trapping us here, I will definitely bring Guthem along!” Oberth laughed. Due to Guthem’s sudden dependence on him, Oberth’s level of confidence (or arrogance) rose through the roof. He turned his attention towards Ye Chui, who was sitting down on the ground in deep thoughts as Debbie and Alfea took turns attacking the water swordsman. With a sudden burst of hatred laughter, Oberth yelled, “Hammer! Didn’t you call me an idiot just now? I’ll give you an opportunity, right here, right now, as long as you acknowledge your idiocy, I will rescue your pathetic life.”

Ye Chui turned his head around and squinted his eyes. Staring at Oberth with a gaze of derision, he spoke, “I didn’t say anything wrong. You really are an idiot!”

“What did you say?!” Oberth clenched his teeth after roaring.

“This magic array was made by a specialist realm Magician. Even if your precious level nine Magician comes to the scene, he might not even be able to unravel this space magic. So, in what aspect do you think you can pull it off?” Ye Chui mocked and allowed himself to cool down.

Without bothering to respond to Oberth provocations any further, Ye Chui fully dedicated himself to studying <Space Isolation> – the spell that created the golden yellow wall of air. Ye Chui concluded that unravelling this spell’s mystic would not be too difficult of a task. After all, he had the magic crystal that he had obtained from the Magician Guild, and could read through information about space magic.

Being able to sense an epiphany coming, Ye Chui entered ‘Father of Studies’ mode!

## Chapter 55 – Calling You An Idiot Doesn't Seem To Be An Insult Now

---

“If your precious level nine Magician was present right now, he might not even be able to decipher this magic array made by a specialist realm Magician. So, on what basis do you think you can do it?” Ye Chui’s ice cold words shook the inner halls.

His words had made Oberth stare back blankly, as he had no confidence in deciphering any space magic related problems. He had previously taken many days to figure out the space magic array left on the mirror but to no avail. Therefore, what hopes did he have of understanding and unravelling the mystique of this large scale magic array <Space Isolation>?

In reality, he had absolutely no confidence. The comments which he made earlier was just a show to disguise his hidden fears. However, the performance he put on was all in vain, as his pale complexion had shown that he too had feared the worst.

Then, he saw the Ye Chui which entered the ‘Father of Studies’ mode – he sat at the side of the isolated chamber, studying the golden yellow wall made of air, as though he had the same plans as Oberth... Rage, or maybe a weird sense of dignity was once again expressed on his face. [It could indeed be the case that the level nine Magician can’t even decipher this magic array, but what capabilities does Ye Chui have to pull it off?]

[At the very least, he should have better talent at space magic than Ye Chui, right?]

Unable to contain himself, Oberth roared, “Hammer! What are you doing? Are you still thinking of deciphering this magic array? Hahahaha... You’ve said it yourself. Even a level nine Magician can’t decipher this magic array made by a Specialist Realm Magician. If he and I can’t decipher it, then who do you think you are to do it?”

In response, Ye Chui simply covered his ears and thought. [Talking to this idiot is simply wasting my breath...]

However, Oberth’s ridicule continued on for a period of time. It was only till he noticed that no one was listening to his rants that he stopped. After all, the three who labelled him as shameless, Athol, Balmain and Damon, as well as the man bootlicked him, were all in complete concentration in their battle with the Battle Guards currently. This implicitly made him feel like an idiot, ignored by everyone.

After receiving Ye Chui’s tips, they were now clear on what they needed to do. In order to defeat the Battle Guards, they must endure for a period of time and consume its energy. Therefore, there was no need for them to further exhaust themselves by using their sword aura. All they needed to do was dodge the attacks made by the Battle Guards.

With this method, the pressure all of them faced was immediately lessened by a few degrees.

Oberth’s whole face became pale as a sheet, after recalling the

fact that he could be able to stand safely at the corner of this isolated space was thanks to his magic puppet stalling the lightning Swordsman. However, this puppet could only last for a few more hours. When the magic stone it used was completely depleted, he would have to fend against the lightning swordsman on his own. Thus, there was not a lot of time left for him to study and uncover the secrets of <Space Isolation>.

He quickly took deep breaths, diligently trying to calm himself down. From birth, Oberth had demonstrated excellent talent in magic, but with regards to the comprehension of magic, each breakthrough that he had was under his father's inspection and pressure. As long as he was pressured, he could release extraordinary abilities. He had always believed this trait that he had from young. Now that it was a matter of life and death, so long as he was focused, unravelling the secrets of this magic array would not be a problem at all...

“Ayy. You’ve finally stopped shouting?” Ye Chui said with a smile plastered on his face, “During the time when you were supposed to make use of every second, you actually had the spirits to leisurely scream and shout out to vent your own anger. Calling you an idiot doesn’t seem an insult now, does it?”

“You!” The calm mood which Oberth had worked so hard to create had utterly been thrown into chaos.

However, his words were met with silence as Ye Chui returned back to his ‘Father of Studies’ mode to study the magic array.

Time gradually passed by, as Ye Chui continued sitting on the

ground, while staring at the golden yellow wall of air. With his brows slightly pressed, he appeared as though he was in deep thought.

To unravel all of the secrets from a magic array created by a Specialist Magician was literally impossible for Ye Chui. Therefore, he did not attempt to undermine the magic array. Instead, he sought another method.

Although the magic array left by the Specialist Magician was powerful, it had been left unattended to for a thousand years. When they just entered the hall, its faults were apparent, as it was not activated immediately. If Oberth did not supply magic power to the array, it would definitely not have been activated. This indicated that the magic array was damaged to a certain extent.

From this aspect, it was possible to decipher how the magic array operated.

Meanwhile, Debbie and Alfea still encircled the water Swordsman and took turns to attack, as Ye Chui suggested. They had already coordinated with each other on the timing to attack. However, even with such an easy fight, it was still draining – they could not rest. Being incapable of putting an end to it, all their hopes were pinned on Ye Chui, and as they saw his facial expression, they were expecting something worthwhile to occur.

When Debbie could not help but yawn, the Battle Guards in each isolated space suddenly stopped moving and dissipated into thin air.

“Time’s up!” the child-like voice said. “Congratulations on being able to live past the Battle Guards. You can now decide to remain in your isolated space to rest, or continue on to the next check. If you decide to proceed, you can choose to move northwards, southwards, eastwards or westwards into the next check. But do note that once you enter the next check, you will be facing a brand new Battle Guard. Just a gentle reminder that your ultimate objective is to reach the middle of the hall. Now, you can make your choices.”

Athol and Damon were both slightly wounded, while Guthem and Balmain were unscathed. Of course, they couldn’t hope to be in the same condition as Ye Chui’s group. The two girls were not even heavily breathing, and Ye Chui himself, he did not even partake in the battle! For the entire time, he sat at a corner.

Oberth, on the other hand, was frightened and apprehensive. He feared for his puppet’s expiration, leaving him to deal with the lightning Swordsman. But now, at this point in time, he could finally relax and completely put his mind into researching space magic.

All the members of the team chose not to move to the next check immediately, instead they chose to rest in their respective isolated spaces.

“Hammer, how is it so far?” Debbie’s small face contained traces of depression as she sat by Ye Chui’s side; leaning her body against his.



“I have some ideas but I’m unsure if it works... It all depends on fate!” Ye Chui replied.

“Haiz... To think that we actually ended up in such a situation in our first ever adventure... It’s such a pity...” Debbie sighed.

Ye Chui immediately smiled back at Debbie, whose complexion grew darker by a few tones. “What’s so pitiful?”

Seeing that small little girl sigh, Ye Chui felt as though she was upset about the fact that she has not tasted the feeling of love, when she is about to be trapped and murdered in this isolated space. If that is the case, Ye Chui did not mind putting in more hard work for Debbie to feel the love, despite the terrible environment...

Then Ye Chui heard Debbie’s murmur, “It’s such a pity that we haven’t gotten the chance to spend all of the gold coins we got from Busca...”

Ye Chui was completely speechless.

It seemed like he was overthinking it.

“I got it!” Oberth suddenly yelled out, catching the attention of everyone around. When Oberth finally continued on to explain, Guthem’s eyes lit up in hope. “I’ve researched on the arrangement of these magic symbols! It’s actually an intermediate space spell called <Earth Cage>! I only need one spell to unravel <Space

Isolation> created by space magic!”

After yelling out in high spirits, Oberth fished out his wand and aimed it at the golden yellow wall of air. At this very moment, Ye Chui stared with much curiosity as he saw Oberth’s face flushed with excitement and self-confidence. Forming up a magic matrix in his heart, Oberth gently raised his magic wand and a white light shot out to hit the golden yellow wall of air.

Then...

Nothing happened.

“How can this be?!” Oberth stared in bewilderment. Unable to accept the outcome, he hastily placed his hand on the golden yellow wall of air to examine.

Just as his hand made contact with the wall, BANG! a huge opposite force was produced, directly hitting Oberth. It was strong enough to make him fly back a few feet, leaving him only capable of groaning.

“Hahahahaha!” The child-like voice laughed. “You really are an idiot. Since you manage to tell that you are trapped within a spell called <Earth Cage>, then you should very well realize how rare it is to get a chance to encounter this spell. Most advanced level Magicians can’t unravel this spell, let alone someone who is only an elementary level Magician! Laughable! This is truly laughable! You this huge idiot!”

Hearing such ridicule, Oberth's face turned pale, and incomparably depressed.

It was at this moment that Ye Chui stood up and decided to test something he had thought of just now.

“The genius!” The child-like voice immediately called out, “Are you looking for trouble as well?”

Ye Chui supinely looked towards the top of the inner hall and stared directly into the darkness. He understood that somewhere there, the ‘artificial intelligence’ was watching him. Therefore, he continued to look up and speak, “How about we make a bet? If I manage to destroy the space magic trapping us here, you will open the door to allow us to escape. Doesn't this sound interesting?”

# Chapter 56 – The First Transformation Of The New Iron Swordsman

---

“Let’s make a bet. If I’m able to destroy the space magic array keeping us here, you have to open an exit for us to leave.” Ye Chui raised his head towards the elevated position and smiled. He sounded as though he was cracking a joke.

Meanwhile, everyone else stared at Ye Chui in curiosity, as his words had made everyone feel his self-confidence.

Athol, Balmain and Damon were all preparing to face death. Since the moment when they were trapped, they all prepared themselves mentally for the fate that was forthcoming.

Guthem, on the other hand, cherished his own life, but knew in his heart that it was unlikely for him to escape this isolated space. Therefore, when Oberth said that he could deliver a life-saving chance to Guthem, the latter knew the chances were slim, but that was enough to make him accept turning sides, and play the villain. Due to this, the darkness within his heart had been completely exposed.

The flame of hope within everybody’s heart was now reignited with Ye Chui’s confident words.

Oberth stared at Ye Chui with red eyes filled with disdain and loathing. He hated Ye Chui so much, to the point that it was driving him insane. But currently, Ye Chui was his only hope of survival, so he had to control his emotions.

Meanwhile, Debbie and Alfea stared at Ye Chui in anticipation.

The child-like voice did not respond for a long time...

“Coward.” Ye Chui shook his head in disapproval.

“I’m not a coward!” The child-like voice suddenly screamed in an angry tone, “I’m just... not sure what does betting means.”

“...” Ye Chui was speechless.

“But I can now sort of guess how the bet works.” The child-like voice continued in an interesting tone, “Try and destroy the space magic array. If you manage to succeed, there’s no harm giving you some advantages in escaping.”

“Heheh. Mark your words.” Ye Chui placed his hand on the golden yellow wall made of air; and within an instant, the wall suddenly vanished from sight. This was not Ye Chui’s doing but rather a natural function made for the game. When a player of the game managed to survive a round of battle with the Battle Guards, the player was allowed to enter into another check to prepare for the next battle. Thus, when Ye Chui placed his hand on the wall, the system registered him as moving toward the next check and unlocked the wall.

As Ye Chui made eye contact with Alfea and Debbie, they hastily followed him and entered the next check.

Once they entered, the air seemed to turn stiff for a second before conjugating towards a single point. In just a mere instant, a wooden puppet was formed. It seemed to be the same wooden Swordsman that Balmain formerly fought with, but this time; it had sickles in its hands rather than a sword. It looked like a ferocious evil ghost, which had fast movements and quick injury recovery.

The wooden puppet immediately attacked Ye Chui once it appeared.

Alfea and Debbie both rushed in front of Ye Chui and parried the wooden puppet's attack. Following through their former defensive maneuver, they got into position and took turns attacking the wooden puppet; confusing it just like they did with the water Swordsman.

In the meantime, Ye Chui continued towards the golden yellow wall made of air in front of him and placed his hand on it.

At this point in time, everyone, including the 'artificial intelligence', had no clue on what Ye Chui was planning to do.

A few moments later, everyone was shocked.

After Ye Chui placed his hand on the wall and did something, the wall and the wooden puppet disappeared into thin air.

“It seems like my method works!”

Ye Chui had a grin on his face as he turned his head to refocus on Debbie and Aflea. Watching their stiff expressions, Ye Chui kindly reminded, “What are you two staring at? Come on, we’ve got to carry on to the next check.”

When they finally regained their senses, they hurriedly moved on to the next check with Ye Chui.

A stone Swordsman appeared this time.

Debbie and Alfea went to intercept the swordsman, while Ye Chui moved to one of the golden yellow walls made of air and placed his hand on it. Once again, the wall and the stone Swordsman vanished.

The exact same scene happened in the next check.

And the next check...

Althol, Guthem, Damon, Balmain and Oberth were all dumbfounded. They stared blankly at Ye Chui, who was like a tsunami, rampaging through these checks along with the two ladies by his side. These walls seemed to be even weaker when in confrontation with him. With a gentle placement of his hand, Ye Chui easily broke open the wall.

<Space Isolation> was not considered a spell. It was rather, a

classification of spells made by space magic, which was used to imprison people in it. All spells that could be classified under <Space Isolation> tended to be an insurmountable challenge to destroy by using physical force. The only small possibility of destroying such of spells with pure force, was if the one attacking the walls was in the Advanced Domain of Swordsmen. Therefore, how could it be that Ye Chui could simply destroy a whole entire wall by just placing his hand on it?!

In actuality, Ye Chui was not doing anything that impressive. All he did was simulate the signal that was used to unlock/open the golden-yellow wall.

This so-called signal was, in fact, programmed into the magic array through magic symbols. When the water Swordsman disappeared, this signal was spread throughout the walls. When this signal came, Ye Chui, who was staring intently at the walls, noticed it and could understand it. With his own knowledge of space magic, he was able to re-form the same signal and use it as a key to unlock the walls.

In reality, it was almost impossible for a level two Magician to notice such a signal. This standard also applied to Ye Chui of course. However, it was only thanks to the number of years that the magic array had to withstand, that numerous bugs had occurred, which resembled a hardware turning slow due to its years catching up to it, that gave Ye Chui a chance to catch a glimpse of this signal.

Since this signal was composed from magic symbols, re-creating it was not that hard for Ye Chui. Therefore, using this trick, Ye



Chui passed through multiple layers of walls.

Everyone dully stared at Ye Chui. From his original check, he had completely decimated all the walls in front of him, and stampeded over the numerous checks to finally reach the last check – the center of the chessboard.

Ye Chui was able to clear everything so effortlessly, to the extent that everyone was dumbfounded.

Finally, Guthem regained his senses and yelled, “Hammer! Hammer! Please save me! I will pledge to be your eternal servant! I will even give you all of my valuables and wealth! All that I ask is that you save my life!”

After landing himself in the most important check with Debbie and Alfea, and hearing Guthem’s cry of help, Ye Chui could not help but smile as he faced Guthem with a taunting expression, “You’ve said these words to Oberth just now. Oberth will be very embarrassed if you repeat these words to someone else...”

Oberth turned mute.

At this crucial junction, feeling embarrassed was the least on his mind. Right now, the most important thing was for him to preserve his own life! Therefore, he screamed, “Hammer, save me! I am the Magician Guild Master’s son. My life is more important than the average person’s. As long as you save me I pledge that my father would be grateful and bestow upon you anything!”

“Don’t think that you can use your status as the Magician Guild Master’s son to persuade him! You idiot, if he were to face any danger afterwards, won’t it be a wiser choice to have a capable Swordsman at his side?!” Guthem screamed, “Hammer! Oberth, the idiot, will only hinder your progress!”

“You coward!” Oberth reprimanded Guthem immediately, “There are many magic items in my space ring, which my father gave to me; and these items are definitely more useful than a level four Swordsman!”

“Idiot!”

“Coward!”

Listening to the constant bickering between Oberth and Guthem, everyone in the team was speechless. Previously, Ye Chui had accused them of being a coward and an idiot respectively; now they both were furiously using these two words against each other, in attempt to win the favour of Ye Chui.

Alfea tapped on Ye Chui’s arm and reminded “Hammer. Although I don’t know what you did, but since you are able to decipher the magic array here, why don’t you save Athol, Damon and Balmain first, before considering Oberth and Guthem?”

“All right. I’ll try.” Ye Chui nodded, “We’ll leave from here and pick up Athol and the others on the way out, before leaving through the iron door we came from. As long as <Space Isolation> is not in effect, we should be able to leave this place with the

ancient tomb key.”

“It is not that simple.” The child-like voice suddenly made a sound. In his voice, which contained a sound of frustration, he explained, “Smart one, I never expected you to decipher the space magic array. Your attainment in space magic is indeed fierce. But since you all have managed to reach so far, you have attained the qualification to enter the second level of the game. Well, doesn’t it sound interesting?”

“Exciting? My foot!” Ye Chui tilted his head up to stare at the darkness above him, “We give up our qualifications to move on to the next level of this game, so stop pestering us!”

“Don’t you want to know the rewards of completing the next level?” The child-like voice asked.

“No!”

“Why?!”

“Didn’t you say it yourself? Since constructing this entire ancient tomb took up all of your wealth, the reward would definitely not be anything valuable. So, why would I be interested?” Ye Chui replied indifferently. In actual fact, he was not completely disinterested. According to the novels which he read in the other world, the rewards of clearing an ancient tomb would definitely come with some form of prize. It could be a good magic weapon or a powerful spell, long lost by the passage of time. However, right now, his current priority was to leave this place. [Staying here for

any longer would just create complications, so we should just leave while we are ahead.]

Unfortunately, even after Ye Chui's refusal, the child-like voice had no plans on releasing the group, "Sorry, but since you are the first to have accomplished so much in a thousand years, I can't just let you leave."

"WTF?!" Ye Chui frowned.

In the next second, a bright light started to accumulate under Ye Chui, Alfea and Debbie's feet. It was a sign that they were about to get space teleported.

Alfea and Debbie both quickly stood by Ye Chui's side and held onto his arm.

Finally, with a bright flash, the three disappeared from the center platform.

When Ye Chui finally woke up, he found himself lying on an ice-cold ground, with both Alfea and Debbie lying beside him. He quickly jumped up from his position and scanned the area to find that they were all teleported to a stone chamber; with numerous magic lamps placed around the walls transmitting out a spooky light.

"I do not know where we are, nor do I know why we were teleported here..." Ye Chui looked around and determined that

both Alfea and Debbie were knocked out. Since the greatest obstructions were gone, he felt a great sense of relief and sneered, “This is the perfect opportunity to TRANSFORM!”

After careful deliberation and his own discretion, Ye Chui had no intent to expose that he was the Iron Swordsman. Before they entered the Inner Halls, Ye Chui felt that the suit was unnecessary. However, the current situation called for an increased level of vigilance; and thus the need for the Iron Swordsman suit. With a high level of excitement, Ye Chui took out the armor suit from his space ring.

At this point in time, he imagined he was inside an anime series, undergoing a transformation sequence. With music blasting and a cool background which made him seem much cooler than he originally was, he shouted [Iron Swordsman! Transform!]. Of course, his voice did not travel out of his vocal cords, but still, the shout made him feel a sense of power and prestige.

But in reality, the situation was not as such.

Ye Chui had to manually put on parts of his armour suit, piece by piece. When it came to his boots, he had to sit down. Instead of a cool background sequence, he tried his best to not look clumsy...

“Damn it! I’ll definitely research on the technology on auto-equipping this suit just like in the movie, Iron Man!”

# Chapter 57 – Iron Swordsman V.2 Goes Online!

---

“Why are you putting on an armour suit?” Within the spacious room, the child-like voice suddenly spoke out, “Aren’t you a Magician? What use is an armour suit for someone like you?”

Ye Chui paused in his movements for a brief moment before continuing to wear his armour suit, “Who ever said that an armour suit is useless for a Magician... And why did my two companions faint?”

“I purposefully made them faint.” The child-like voice replied.

“Why?”

“I have lost to you in the bet we made earlier on, so as per our agreement, I have prepared an exit for you.”

Ye Chui was busy inserting his foot into one of the boots but when he heard the child-like voice spoke, he paused for a second, “What do you mean?”

“I’ll give you a chance of survival. Smart boy, if you vow to be my servant for life, I’ll let you off.” The child-like voice continues to explain.

Ye Chui could not bear to smile, “What about the others?”

“I don’t plan to provide an escape route for them; this exit is only meant for you.” The child-like voice continued.

“ ... ”

The child-like voice’s words made Ye Chui truly unable to contain himself. As he kept his grin from revealing on his face, he said, “I’m sorry. Besides these two companions, I’m unable to see the rest of the adventure team perish in this place, especially Debbie... This is probably something an artificial intelligent being like you will probably never be able to understand.”

“I’m no different from a human being now!” The child-like voice scolded. Although he did not understand the term, ‘artificial intelligence’, it was obviously not a pleasant word used to describe a person, “That’s why I wish to have you as my servant. As long as you accompany me, I will be able to gain knowledge and intelligence from you and become a true human being.”

Ye Chui movements came to a halt once more as he solemnly spoke, “WTF?! Is your so-called exit a chance for me to stay here and accompany you forever? You might as well kill me now; who in the world would like to stay in a place like this?”

The child-like voice was completely enraged, “You don’t even know what you are about to face! Earlier on, you could only pass through that stage due to your understanding of space magic! The obstacle you are about to face is not a feat that can be accomplished by intelligence and only advanced Swordsmen would be able to

pass through. Do you get it now?!”

“How would I know if I don’t try?” Ye Chui confidently replied as he put on his helmet.

At this moment, Ye Chui had completely worn the entire armour suit. The armour suit was coloured in striking red and gold; it was fully armed; its helmet had floral prints on it; thus it looked kind of peculiar and was definitely different from that of any ordinary man. Right in the middle of the chest plate of the armour was a disc; and above that disc was a layer of transparent crystal, which had hues of blue-coloured rays emitting from it. The blue rays were actually from a high-grade magic stone obtained from Busca’s space ring. Its function was to supply the armour suit with the magic power it required. Moreover, the transparent crystal could be easily opened, meaning that the magic stone could be replaced anytime.

The design of this part of the armour was done by Dove, the Dwarf Enchanting Master, upon Ye Chui’s request. Due to Ye Chui’s talent in enchantment, he had garnered Dove’s respect. Thus, Dove was more than willing to help Ye Chui with this small matter.

Furthermore, Ye Chui had invited Dove to modify the interior of the helmet. Ye Chui had requested Dove to add an additional concave area within the helmet, so that he could place the magic crystal obtained from the Magic Guild Hall in it.

The magic matrix that proliferated in the entire armour suit was connected to the magic crystal in the helmet by means of the vein



marks, which were carved using Mithril. On the other hand, Ye Chui's consciousness could enter the magic crystal directly. In other words, he could use the magic crystal as a transmission point to directly control all the enchanting arrays on the armour suit.

“A Magician will always be a Magician. Even if you wear an armour suit, you are still a Magician.” The child-like voice shouted out in an enraged tone.

With a faint smile plastered on his face, Ye Chui said in a soft tone, “Iron Swordsman V.2 goes online!”

His words had no purpose; it was merely for the sake of looking cool.

Ye Chui's consciousness thus entered the magic crystal. A plethora of items were still densely placed in the magic crystal, including the explanation of the 32 magic symbols, articles about space magic and a few magic arrays. Ye Chui deleted some items in the magic crystal to clear up some space, so that he could place a series of his self-invented magic arrays into it.

The series of magic arrays acted as an interface, allowing him to better control the magic arrays that were enchanted onto the armour suit.

Following the words ‘Iron Swordsman V.2 goes online’, the transparent crystal in front of his chest lit up suddenly. The magic stone underneath the transparent crystal then started supplying magic power to all the magic arrays on the armour, making all the

magic arrays enter into the ‘preheating’ condition.

Zing Ye Chui brandished his long sword from his back.

Dense silvery floral patterns were carved onto the sword blade.

<Wind Blade> was enchanted onto the long sword.

In reality, the number of enchanting arrays that Ye Chui knew were very little, of which, there were barely any that served the function of attacking. Therefore, he enchanted <Wind Blade> on his sword, which was the same as that on Alfea’s long sword. But of course, he made some modifications – he increased the might of the <Wind Blade> on his long sword.

Such a modification was not difficult to execute, but ordinary Swordsmen who enchant their swords would not do this, as the doubling of the might of <Wind Blade> would increase the magic power needed to use this enchanting array by at least three times.

Thus, the loss would be more than the gain.

But... Energy, or in other words, magic power, was no longer an issue for Ye Chui.

The high-grade magic stone in front of Ye Chui’s chest was able to continuously provide magic power to Ye Chui.

As he grasped onto the long sword with both his hands, his consciousness entered the ‘interface’ of the magic crystal. Almost immediately, continuous magic power started to transmit from the magic crystal to the long sword in his hands. Following that, <Wind Blade> was activated and the long sword slashed against a wall nearby.

Zila

A terrifying white wave of wind suddenly appeared in the air and smashed onto the wall with a loud bang. Even the ground involuntarily shook slightly. Almost immediately, a huge scratch of at least half a metre was indented on the wall.

This destructive power far surpassed what the <Wind Blade> on Alfea’s long sword could do. Such a skill could prove useful for ordinary Swordsmen in life-threatening situations, but what Ye Chui aimed to do was to demonstrate to the child-like voice that he had sufficient supply to execute this enchanting array.

Of course, the immense destructive power was not the most impressive feat. Ye Chui’s consciousness once again interacted with the interface of the magic crystal and ordered it to activate the <Wind Walk> magic matrix. A strong gust of wind emerged from the ground, causing Ye Chui to float up into the air in a swaying manner.

“Now, do you still think that I’m an ordinary Magician?” Ye Chui questioned the child-like voice in a cocky manner.

## Chapter 58 – He Stole The Magic Crystal From The Mirror's Space Magic

---

In a stone chamber that wasn't considerably large, Ye Chui, who wore a suit of battle armour, miraculously floated in mid-air. Other than his hand which was holding onto the long sword, every other inch of his body was totally concealed by the battle armour. Be it the image of him floating in mid-air or his cool look, a strong sense of mystery exuded from him.

The attack which he had made by brandishing the long sword was already of the standard of an advanced Swordsman. However, even the best of advanced Magicians or Swordsmen could not make themselves float in mid-air. Using wind magic, advanced Magicians could only make themselves glide or their bodies seem lighter than they actually are. But floating is an entirely different level that only Specialist Realm Magicians or better could achieve.

Ye Chui's attack and flotation in mid-air was enough to astonish many people.

There were many people in the world, called Magic-Swordsmen, who were trained in both magic and swordsmanship. But Ye Chui had far surpassed the standards of an ordinary Magic-Swordsman.

The child-like voice stopped talking for a period of time, as though he was shocked by Ye Chui's feat.

Although Ye Chui could easily get a continuous supply of magic power through the magic stone in front of his chest, the magic

power was limited. Very soon, he spatially landed from his floating position. He then tilted his head upwards and said to the child-like voice, “You once said that if anyone manages to overcome all the obstacles set by your master, the person would be able to leave this place safely... So, start quickly. I want to challenge the hurdles that you master has put in place.”

The child-like voice sounded out, “Are you certain? Even if you are very formidable, it is very likely that you won’t be able to clear all the obstacles set by the master of this tomb.”

“I won’t know until I try.” Ye Chui replied confidently. Seeing Debbie and Alfea, who were both unconscious on the ground, Ye Chui suddenly thought of something and continued, “One more thing. Can you promise me that you won’t spill the beans on my identity to the both of them? I don’t want them to know the relation between me and this battle armour.”

In actual fact, Ye Chui did not mind Debbie having knowledge of the relation between him and the armour suit. He had previously hidden the fact from Debbie because he wanted to give her a surprise. Another important reason as to why he hid the truth from Debbie was that the set of battle armour was crafted using the treasures found from Busca’s space ring. If Debbie knew about it, she would have confiscated all the money...

The encounter with such a greedy wife made Ye Chui understand the importance of a little strongbox.

“Why should I promise you?” The child-like voice asked in curiosity.

“You have lost the bet previously. If you don’t want to go back on your words, just do me this little favour.” Ye Chui laughed.

He was not expecting the child-like voice to agree to his request, but the child-like voice proved him wrong. After a moment of silence, the child-like voice replied, “All right. Since it’s the price I’ve to pay for losing the bet, I’ll help you keep the secret.”

Ye Chui was dumbfounded, as though he thought of something. [I must say that this artificial intelligence is rather reasonable.] He then shook his head and walked to Debbie and Alfea’s side. As the both of them merely fainted, it was rather easy for Ye Chui to wake them up. As soon as Alfea opened her eyes, she immediately jumped up, held onto her long sword, scanned the surroundings and looked at Ye Chui in vigilance – this proved that she has indeed encountered many risky experiences.

Debbie’s sense of vigilance was slightly poorer... or maybe it was a lot poorer. It was as though she just woke up from her bed – she rubbed her eyes, yawned with her mouth wide open and mumbled some words, “Hammer, I’m hungry... When are we having our meal?” Quickly, she regained her senses and realized the situation she was in. She thus jumped up and held her great sword in her hand, “Hammer? Hammer, where are you?”

The stone chamber was clear for all to see. The little girl looked around, before fixating her eyes on Ye Chui’s back view, “Hammer?”

Ye Chui coughed and said in a hoarse voice, “There’s only the three of us here.”

Alfea looked at Ye Chui in an alert manner, “Who are you?”

“Me?” Ye Chui said in a pale face, but quickly realized that the others could not see his face. Thus, he continued in a light tone, “My name is Iron Swordsman.”

“Iron Swordsman?” Both Debbie and Alfea were dumbstruck.

Alfea then questioned, “Are you the mysterious person who claimed to be an advanced Swordsman, although your skill level isn’t that high?”

Debbie continued, “Are you the narcissistic Swordsman who likes to add a long string of prefix before your title?”

Ye Chui, “... Yes, I am.”

“Then, where’s my Hammer?” Debbie asked in a loud voice.

“Err...” Ye Chui did not expect Debbie to be so concerned about him. He had already prepared a logical explanation to fool Alfea and Debbie, “It seems like Swordsmen are the only ones who get teleported to this room. The Hammer, which you are referring to, has probably been teleported into some other room. I’ve just confirmed that all of us are safe for the time being.” After saying his piece, Ye Chui looked upwards, “Am I right?”

“Yes, the others are safe for the time being.” The child-like voice replied. It seemed to know how to coordinate with Ye Chui.

Debbie’s worry could still be seen on her face, “Why don’t you let Ye Chui remain by our side?”

“Only Swordsmen can be teleported here, as the next obstacle is targeted at Swordsmen.” Ye Chui explained.

Alfea’s voice proved to be vigilant, “Then who are you? Why are you here?”

“I’m carrying out an ancient tomb adventure.” Ye Chui hurriedly explained, “I don’t know if you girls realized that this ancient tomb is a little strange. It seems like the master of the ancient tomb purposefully made many keys for entering this tomb.”

Alfea’s face still had a vigilant expression plastered on it. Although she lowered the long sword in her hand, her alertness towards Ye Chui did not seem to reduce. She scanned the surroundings, before talking to the air, “Why did you teleport us here? What are you going to do to us?”

“Hehe...” The child-like voice laughed in satisfaction, “The interesting part is about to come next.”

Following the child-like voice’s words, a ray of blinding white light appeared from one side of the stone chamber. This was an



indication of spatial teleportation. Following the disappearance of the white light, a tall and muscular Swordsman in a suit of battle armour appeared from thin air...

“Hammer! Hammer! Can you hear me? I beg you to save me! Please save me at all cost...”

Within the inner hall, Oberth’s hoarse voice could be heard all around. He leaned against the wall of light with a pale expression.

Everyone else was solemnly silent.

Guthem sat crossed-legged on the ground in a pathetic manner, as he tried to recover all his energy. There were a lot of frustrations in his heart that he could not speak out. [Why did I have to go against Hammer from the start of the adventure? If I had maintained a good relationship with him, then this would not have happened.]

On the other hand, Damon had a crestfallen expression on his face.

Athol and Balmain were both very serious. As City Lord’s Guards, Alfea was their master and they had followed her since young. If Ye Chui could save Alfea from this predicament, it would not be a bad result after all, thus both of them were not feeling so depressed at this time.

At this instant, Oberth suddenly shouted, “I remembered... It’s

him! The person who stole the magic crystal from the mirror's space magic is Hammer... It's actually him!"

After the magic crystal in the Magic Guild Hall got stolen, the guild carried out a thorough search. As Ye Chui was a level two Magician, he was cleared of all suspicion by Oberth. Now thinking about the dazzling performance Ye Chui gave during the space array challenge, Oberth finally regained his composure. [The person who stole the magic crystal is Hammer! I can't be wrong about it!]

# Chapter 59 – The Difference Between Skill And Style

---

Just as Oberth suddenly recalled the relationship Ye Chui had with the magic crystal in the Magic Guild Hall, the fully-armoured Swordsman standing in front of Debbie, Alfea and Ye Chui launched an attack towards them.

This armoured Swordsman was obviously some kind of puppet. This puppet had excellent battling capabilities, swift movements and violent attacks.

At this moment, Debbie was still worried about the safety of Ye Chui, but once she felt the mighty and threatening aura exuding from this Swordsman, she immediately brandished the great sword in her hand as her expression became more serious.

Alfea, on the other hand, has been alert from the start.

Within seconds, Alfea and Debbie were embroiled in an exchange of attacks with this Swordsman.

As for Ye Chui, he stood at a far corner of the stone chamber in a cool posture. He looked as though he was deep in thought, as he was trying to analyze the weakness of this Swordsman in silence. But in reality, he did not know how he could help these two girls in the battle.

After all, Ye Chui was a Magician who does not have any prior

Swordsman experience. Although his set of battle armour could increase his battle efficiency significantly to the standard of an advanced Swordsman, he had zero experience in close combat battles. Moreover, he was concerned that his addition in the battle would disrupt the perfect coordination between the two girls and he might end up wounding them accidentally.

Alfea and Debbie soon realised that dealing with this Swordsman was an energy-draining feat. However, both of them did not lament Ye Chui for the decision he made, as although they stood on the same line, they were not companions for the time being.

After several minutes...

Debbie suddenly let out a soft yelp. Fresh blood started flowing out of her shoulder, as her shoulder had been accidentally scratched by the sword of the armoured swordsman. Although Ye Chui revealed a look of sympathy on his face, he did do anything immediately.

Following that, Debbie's abdomen was pierced by the same sword once again.

Both injuries were not considered serious, but her armour suit started to turn red from the blood; causing Ye Chui to feel restless.

In the next second, Alfea was injured in her left thigh, as the sword of the Swordsman punctured the greaves of her left leg.

After approximately three minutes, the armoured Swordsman stopped attacking them suddenly. It walked to the side of the stone chamber, before disappearing into the white ray of light.

Although the Swordsman left the stone chamber, it did not lose the battle.

“I will give you 10 minutes to rest and recuperate.” The child-like voice could be heard almost immediately, “The Swordsman will continue its battle with you 10 minutes later and will end its attack in 30 minutes.”

“Why must you do this?” Ye Chui questioned him in curiosity.

“You are a smart boy. Why don’t you make a guess?” The child-like voice said in a mischievous tone.

“Smart boy?” Both Alfea and Debbie suddenly stared at Ye Chui in a peculiar gaze, as ‘smart boy’ was a term used by the child-like voice to call Ye Chui.

Ye Chui’s heart skipped a beat, before he continued, “How would I know what tricks you have up your sleeves? Why don’t you go and ask the intelligent Magician?”

“Hehe...” The child-like voice laughed cunningly, but refused to comment further.

Upon hearing Ye Chui’s words, Alfea and Debbie’s suspicion

lessened. Both of them then walked towards a corner of the stone chamber and started to treat their wounds. Seeing Debbie remove her battle armour carefully and take out the ointment, Ye Chui naturally walked over to help her.

Debbie became alert all of a sudden, “What do you want?”

“I just want to help you...” Ye Chui said naturally.

“Boys and girls shouldn’t get so close in contact with each other!” Debbie clenched her teeth and shouted.

“...” Ye Chui was silent.

He took a glance at Alfea, who was beside Debbie, and confirmed that she was treating the wounds on her thigh. He then cleared his throat in a low tone and thought that it would be a good hint for Debbie to realise that he was Ye Chui.

But...

“Why are you coughing?!” Debbie stared at him.

“Oh, nothing...”

Ye Chui walked to the side in embarrassment and thought in his heart. [It seems like Debbie and I don’t understand each other well enough...]

With minor wounds, both Debbie and Alfea could manage to patch themselves up quickly. Once Alfea was done, she went to confront Ye Chui with moods of unrest and anxiousness, but when speaking, she tried to guise it with a tranquil expression, “What did you manage to see? Since we are standing on the same side, I don’t think you should hide anything from us.”

Ye Chui stared at Alfea with a strange expression, “What do you mean?”

Knitting her brows, Alfea explained, “Since you have been observing from the side, you should be able to notice the weakness of this puppet warrior. This specific puppet is unlike those water and stone puppets we have faced outside and is most likely at the level of an Advanced Swordsman. If we want to defeat it, the only chance we have is when we team up!”

Ye Chui understood and immediately replied, “He is indeed very powerful.”

“So, do you have a plan?” Alfea asked.

“No.”

“...”

Seeing rage oozing out of both the girls, Ye Chui hurriedly spoke out, “I can’t see his weaknesses, so for the next round, I will go

against it while you two rest.”

In actuality, there were some things which Ye Chui had noticed, but since Alfea and Debbie would probably not understand, he did not bother to inform them.

After being reincarnated into this world, Ye Chui had gradually grown to understand the profession of Swordsmen: in this fantasy world, Swordsmen here only used their skills and not fighting styles in battles.

These skills consist of <Protection of War God>, <Wind Blade> and the <Giant Spinning Top>. By unleashing one's sword aura, it greatly increased the battle efficiency of that person. Basically, it was the ability to explosively increase one's battle capabilities but due to its nature, this is not the 'style' Ye Chui had in mind.

In fiction novels depicting the fights, every movement would produce some kind of an effect; be it through the body's movement or the weapon's. In this world however, a Swordsmen only made simple movements. If they swing their sword, it's just a swing. If they hide, they simply go behind cover.

If a Swordsman was stronger, it directly represented their greater strength and agility. However, this deferred from Ye Chui's expectations, whereby the Swordsman get stronger by perfecting their 'fighting style'.

Currently, as a Swordsman, his movements were extraordinary. It would be described as complex but it's main purpose is to reduce



as much useless moves as possible. This might not be noticeable by both Debbie and Alfea, but Ye Chui could roughly make a guess after observing for a period of time.

Therefore, he felt that this swordsman was using some kind of 'fighting style'

Wishing to confirm his own feelings, he wanted to have a battle with it.

"Are you sure?" Hearing Ye Chui's words, Alfea suspiciously asked.

"If I don't try, I will never be able to find out." Ye Chui casually replied as he raised his sword in preparation to face the armoured Swordsman.

# Chapter 60 – Iron Swordsman's Ultimate Move

---

The Aigen-Dazs Continent only had a traceable history up to 15,000 years ago. However, the fact of the matter was that the continent had been in existence for a much longer period of time, meaning that human beings had lived on this continent for much longer than 15,000 years.

The decline of human beings led to their lives being increasingly tough, as they had to try to survive through the cracks of the world. To combat the lack of strength, the Swordsman profession was thus created.

Initially, all Swordsmen had were attacking skills, and not combat styles. Chopping, slicing, puncturing and piercing were just a few of the many basic movements which they had. Through the strength and speed of these basic movements, Swordsmen were able to gain formidable fighting skills. On the other hand, the way Swordsmen used their sword aura led to humans learning various powerful tactics. It was only after the Magic Emperor discovered magic, that Swordsmen were capable of enchanting their weapons and armour. After that era, the Swordsmen were able to display more tactics with their sword aura.

However, there were few or perhaps no Swordsmen who would seek ways to improve their battle prowess by proactively improving their fighting style. It was to the extent that the phrase 'fighting style' literally did not exist in all books regarding the Aigen-Dazs Continent.

Despite the lack of people researching into fighting styles, there would surely be at least one person in the universe who tended to act vastly different from others; and this person existed 1300 years ago. This specific Swordsman would imagine all kinds of fighting styles. Although his talent was mediocre, he was smart! He was capable of covering for his lack of sword aura, and finally reach the peak of a level nine Swordsman!

To be able to transcend that boundary was virtually impossible for him, as the next boundary would require a great deal of talent to achieve. As he knew that he did not have such a level of talent, he had made do with his status as a level nine Swordsman.

Despite that, he was not discouraged. Through his own research into combat styles, he managed to overcome the boundary. Being able to find a way to improve himself, out of the realm of his peers' paths, he learnt a valuable life lesson, and continued to perfect his different fighting styles.

During that era, he was recognised as the strongest level nine Swordsman, as well as the invincible one amongst all the level nine Swordsmen. Many also felt that he might have had a chance at winning against those Swordsmen who managed to squeeze into a higher tier than him by the smallest margin.

Unfortunately, he harboured a great deal of regret. Although he had perfected various fighting styles, many Swordsmen did not regard his fighting styles highly. Thus, it was even highly likely that no one inherited the flawless fighting styles of his.

In the last few years of his life, he made a firm decision. He had

decided to use up all his wealth to construct a tomb for himself and integrate his thoughts into a magic crystal, awaiting the moment when someone formidable enough would appear to inherit his legacy.

Then, Ye Chui came to his tomb. The armoured Swordsman which appeared in the stone chamber was using his perfected fighting styles!

Only by perceiving and learning its combat styles would Ye Chui have a chance at defeating this armoured Swordsman and pass this obstacle.

[If he can't manage to comprehend these fighting moves, then let him perish in this place...] This was the original plan of the level nine Swordsman.

Dang!

Bang!

Pang!

The armoured swordsman and Ye Chui, who wore an Iron Swordsman suit, were instantly embroiled in an exchange of moves.

Meanwhile, both Debbie and Alfea stood anxiously at the side, vigilantly staring at their clashes. When Ye Chui proposed to take

on the Swordsman on his own, the two got worried, as they had no clue about his level of competency. However, once the battle began, they realised that they have overestimated his capabilities.

Ye Chui's movements... were simply too clumsy.

The speed of his reaction and movement of his sword were too slow, such that it could not even compare to that of a level one Swordsman.

This really far exceeded the realms of their perception. Debbie and Alfea then looked at each other with pure dismay. [This person is seriously too weak. How did he even pass the magic arrays in the inner hall? And where did he get his confidence from?]

“Is he going to hold out?” Debbie's brows wrinkled.

Alfea shook her head and sighed, “I doubt so. Let's prepare to intercept. I'm guessing that he won't be able to last for a minute.”

Then, exceeding her expectations, a minute had passed and Ye Chui was still in the fight.

Then, he passed the two minute mark; then three minute mark and finally, the four minute mark!

When Ye Chui lasted to the ten minute mark, both Alfea and Debbie took note of how Ye Chui was tenaciously holding up and changed their countenance once more.

“This is so strange...” Debbie said, “It seems like he has infinite sword aura...”

“It’s impossible. Sword aura rises in proportion to battle prowess. If he has the skills of less than a level one Swordsman, then how can his sword aura be more than that of an intermediate Swordsman...” Alfea frowned while pondering and muttered, “The reason lies in his armour suit.”

“His armour suit?”

“The enchantment done on his armour suit seems to be very formidable.” The glow in Alfea’s eyes brightened. Due to the armour suit, Ye Chui managed to display strong fighting capabilities, despite his trash skills. However, pondering for a second more, Alfea once again shook her head, “Although he has all of this, he is still not the armoured Swordsman’s match. I’m expecting him to only last for at most 20 minutes.”

Then Ye Chui surpassed the 20 minute mark, again outside of Alfea’s expectation!

However, it was at this point in time that he was showing signs of gradual defeat, as he was continuously retreating. Seeing that he was about to lose, Debbie and Alfea both braced themselves to support him. However, Ye Chui unleashed a powerful move, which made them shocked.

Ye Chui took a huge step backwards and stabbed his long sword

into ground. His left and right legs were left in a bent position while he opened his arms wide and raised them up. It was as though he was about to embrace the armoured Swordsman, which was going to attack him.

The armoured Swordsman suddenly jumped up and slashed its sword towards Ye Chui's head.

Then...

A streak of bright blue electricity column suddenly shot out from Ye Chui's chest. Zila The lightning struck onto the armoured Swordsman's body, causing it to fall backwards and hit the stone wall due to the strong force dealt to it.

The electricity column was still emitting electricity.

Behind the Zizizi sound that could be heard, the armoured Swordsman had actually made a big crater in the stone wall. Its body seemed as though it was on the verge of breaking down.

The electric current continued for another five minutes.

The armoured Swordsman fell face-down onto the ground, like a defeated stone statue, but it recovered quickly. Debbie and Alfea were staring wide-eyed at the scene as this was the first time the armoured Swordsman was injured to this extent. If it was not a puppet, but a human, this armoured Swordsman would have been blown into pieces by Ye Chui's move.

The two girls stared at each other. Ye Chui might have the capabilities of a level one Swordsman, but he definitely possessed the abilities of an advanced Swordsman with the help of this armour suit.

After unleashing his ultimate attack, he showed no traces of exhaustion. Ye Chui paused for a second before picking up his long sword and charging towards the armoured Swordsman.

Thirty minutes quickly passed and the armour suited Swordsman vanished.

Exhausted, Ye Chui went to Alfea and Debbie's side to rest. He sat against one of the walls as both the girls continued to stare at him in bewilderment.

"It's your turn to battle next round. I need some time to think about some things..." Ye Chui said while panting. His whole voice had transformed to the point where even without the voice changer, both girls would probably not recognise it as him.

"What are you thinking of?" Alfea asked with bright eyes.

"Something." Ye Chui wearily replied but still contained traces of delight in his voice, "I might have found a way to defeat that puppet!"



# Chapter 61 – Translating Fighting Styles Into A Magic Programme!

---

Both Debbie and Alfea's perception of Ye Chui had completely changed due to his stellar performance. In the first half of the thirty minute time period, Ye Chui's battling performance was so pathetic, to the extent that it was worse than that of a level one Swordsman, but for the latter half, he displayed his true capabilities; rupturing out the power of an advanced Swordsman with an electric column! Such lethality was simply frightening!

After processing their thoughts, Debbie and Alfea then both looked at Ye Chui's chest in curiosity, wishing to know how he managed to pull off such a feat.

Noticing the awkward and brazen gaze by the two girls, Ye Chui lightly let out a hoarse laughter, "That's a magic matrix which I've modified. It's able to release a great deal of lightning, but I only use it as a last resort. This magic matrix can at most be used three to four times, before the effectiveness expires, so it's highly likely that I won't use it in the next battle..."

"If I were to receive your ultimate attack, I'm pretty sure that I won't be able to survive. It was simply too powerful." Alfea nodded her head in affirmation. Her compliments suddenly stopped and she started to criticise his move, "But this move isn't that flexible... From my point of view, it is rather easy for the opponent to dodge the attack."

"That's why it is used as the last resort to save my life." Ye Chui said with a smile.

“Hey, did you just said that you’ve found a way to defeat the puppets?” Debbie curiously asked.

“I’ve a hint, but I’m unsure if it works.” Ye Chui turned solemn, “I believe that we’ve got to hold out for a few more rounds. So, be careful.”

The two girls nodded in unison. Despite Alfea and Debbie, being the leader of the team and a powerful Great Swordsman respectively, they were instinctively dependent on Ye Chui for some reason right now. This was most probably attributed to their own lack of confidence in escaping from their current predicament. On the other hand, Ye Chui had displayed some level of competence and confidence of being able to solve the problems that they were facing right now.

Ten minutes later

The same armoured Swordsman appeared once again, and Debbie and Alfea rushed towards it to initiate the fight.

While sitting against one of the walls, Ye Chui’s consciousness once again entered the magic crystal in the helmet of his armour suit. He first started with the method he thought of – translating the fighting style of the armoured Swordsman into a magic programme.

Of course, calling it a program would be highly inappropriate as it should be termed as a magic matrix.

A dense number of <Wind Walk> arrays were carved on his armour suit. These <Wind Walk> arrays controlled Ye Chui's limbs and makes it easier for him to perform any movement. Even if he was not wearing the suit, he would be able to use the magic crystal inside to remotely move the suit of armour as long as he was linked to the magic crystal within the helmet. Unfortunately, Ye Chui had to make physical contact with the magic crystal in order to interact with the interface of the magic crystal and was unable to control the armour suit at a distance.

The ability of dispersing one's spiritual power and using it to influence the magic crystal was one that can only be possessed by an intermediate Magician.

All Ye Chui had to do right now was to express all the fighting styles of the armoured Swordsman, using magic symbols.

In summary, the movements that Ye Chui performed, like walking, jumping, bouncing, extending of limbs, opening of palms, clenching of fists and the pointing of the middle finger could be converted into magic symbols within the magic crystal. Hence, any series of actions that the battle armour performed could be expressed as a string of magic symbols.

In other words, Ye Chui planned to convert every fighting style into a magic programme and store it within the magic crystal. By activating this programme, the battle armour would perform the specific fighting style.

In reality, it was thanks to the stone statues at the stone path that Ye Chui got the inspiration to use this method.

The movements of the stone statues were totally controlled by the magic matrix within their bodies. From Ye Chui's perspective, it was not any different from controlling one's body using a magic programme.

Although Ye Chui's consciousness had permeated into the magic crystal, he was still intently staring at the battle between the two girls and the armoured Swordsman. After resting and recuperating for the past 40 minutes, both of them had most of their energy restored and they were able to unleash their utmost potential under such circumstances.

The coordination between Alfea and Debbie became increasingly flawless.

Thirty minutes has passed, but the girls were neither panting in shortness of breath nor injured.

Both of the girls did not manage to figure out any fixed pattern to the armoured Swordsman's attacks. After all, fighting style was virtually non-existent in the eyes of most ordinary Swordsmen, unlike Ye Chui, who was deeply influenced by the eastern knights.

Through the battle between the armoured Swordsman and the girls, Ye Chui managed to trace one of its attack patterns.

It seemed like this attack pattern was one of the most basic and simple ones; and was the most commonly used by this armoured Swordsman. There were a total of three transformations in this attack pattern, including defending, attacking and dodging.

The magic crystal within Ye Chui's helmet had already labelled this set of patterns as 'style number one'.

Once this magic matrix is activated, Ye Chui's armour suit would automatically mimic the movements of this fighting style and Ye Chui would be able to control the transformations it undergoes.

"It seems like my plan is working..."

After 30 minutes ended, Ye Chui heaved a sigh of relief, while his heart harboured an implicit sense of excitement. He felt as though he had returned to his previous world where he was a hacker who could translate various programmes, all at the same time. [But there are more than ten fighting styles that this armoured Swordsman displayed, and each fighting style is more difficult than the previous one. I wonder how long I would take to express all of its fighting styles as a magic programme. More importantly, I have to learn how to apply these fighting styles, instead of only learning the theory of these styles. This, to me, is the hardest part...]

In the story of the knights, all disciples under the same master learn the same things and possess the same set of skills, but there are some people who manage to apply the fighting styles easily, while others can only forcefully display the fighting styles. Thus, the difference in standards could be easily seen.

The most critical point about learning fighting styles is to be adaptable to the changes in the opponents' way of attacking.

At the moment, the utmost priority for Ye Chui before he could move onto the next step was to quickly learn all the fighting styles that this armoured Swordsman possessed.

Debbie and Alfea sat beside Ye Chui in exhaustion, as they looked at Ye Chui.

“I’m sure that my method works, but I need some time.” Ye Chui explained.

Alfea laughed, “Where there’s a will, there’s a way. It doesn’t matter how long you take; Debbie and I will persevere to the end. Anyway, it seems like the ghost puppet won’t hurt us directly as there are limits to its killer moves. However, the standard of your Swordsman skills are really too low, so much that it isn’t even at the standard of a level one Swordsman. If this continues, I’m afraid that you will collapse soon. If you’re unable to battle against the armoured Swordsman, Debbie and I can continue battling with it in the next round.”

“No, I am capable of persevering on.” Ye Chui shook his head.

He knew that these two girls were very exhausted. If they were to continue battling for another round, they would not be able to take it.

Speaking about his standard as a Swordsman, Ye Chui suddenly thought of something. He then took out a magic crystal from his space ring – it was the magic crystal of one of the stone Swordsmen. As his heart fluttered, his consciousness permeated into the magic crystal and found a part of the magic matrix that controlled the movements of the stone Swordsman. Then, he earnestly duplicated everything onto the magic crystal in his helmet.

These magic matrices possessed the battling skills of a level two Swordsman. By inputting these magic matrices into the magic crystal and using it on his battle armour, his armour suit would have the skills of a level two Swordsman!

## Chapter 62 – The Combat Plug-In Installed Within The Magic Crystal

---

As the puppet swordsman re-appeared in no time, Ye Chui stood up from the ground and brandished the long sword from his waist.

Alfea and Debbie looked at Ye Chui and said in unison, “Be careful.”

Ye Chui nodded his head in appreciation of their kind warning, as he dashed towards the puppet swordsman with the sound of his armour suit, ding, dang, playing in the background. He held the long sword parallel to the ground with both his hands and had his body slanted towards one side, as he was prepared to launch an attack towards the puppet swordsman – these actions made up ‘style number one’.

As Ye Chui made these movements, the puppet swordsman followed suit.

Both the puppet swordsman and Ye Chui had identical movements, except at the moment when both of them came face to face. The armoured Swordsman suddenly lowered its body, drew a semi-circle in the air with its long sword and swept it towards Ye Chui’s thigh – this was the first transformation of the first fighting style.

Not only did Ye Chui progress in his attacks, his body suddenly leaped into the air and made a 360 degrees turn. At that moment, the <Wind Walk> magic array on his body suddenly lighted up.



Given his level of capabilities, it was impossible for him to wear this set of armour suit and jump so high into the air; and it was more impossible for him to do an air-borne 360 degrees turn, however, such movements were made easier thanks to the magic array. It could even be said that he did not put in any effort at all, since all the movements that he displayed were the doings of the programme within the magic crystal.

All he needed to do was to choose which movement does he want to activate next – this was very similar to playing games, where one can choose what moves to do next.

Ye Chui suddenly jumped into the air and spun his body around – this was the second transformation of the first fighting style: dodging.

While Ye Chui was still air-borne, he converted from the second transformation to the first one. He held his long sword with both his hands, and with the aid of the centrifugal force brought by the 360 degrees' revolution, swept his long sword towards the puppet swordsman harshly.

The puppet swordsman hurriedly retreated, as it held its long sword vertically, trying to fend off horizontal attacks by Ye Chui's longsword.

Clang!

Crisp sounds could be heard as the long swords clashed against each other.

Now, the puppet swordsman displayed the third transformation of the first combat style: defending.

This transformation helped the puppet swordsman fend off Ye Chui's attacks.

Following that, the armoured Swordsman moved back half a step, bent its knees slightly, drew a semi-circle in the air with its longsword, avoiding Ye Chui's longsword, before slashing it towards the side of Ye Chui's body – this was another move.

Ye Chui thus tilted his body sideways and converted from the first transformation to the third transformation. He did the same defensive movement as what the puppet swordsman did just now. Clang!, Ye Chui managed to fend off the puppet swordsman's sword.

However, at this time, Ye Chui did not have the means to display another set of moves. Hence, before the puppet swordsman changes from the second transformation to something else, he quickly moved a few steps back, widening the distance between him and the puppet swordsman.

At this instant, both Alfea and Debbie were dumbstruck.

They looked at each other mutually, as though they somewhat figured out what Ye Chui was planning.

In reality, when these girls fought with the puppet swordsman previously, they had already felt something strange about the movements of the puppet swordsman. However, since the girls were still quite young, they did not know anything about fighting styles. Even if they figured something was strange, they would not be able to accurately guess the purpose of each of its movements; until they saw Ye Chui using the exact same fighting style as the puppet swordsman.

The clashes between Ye Chui and the puppet swordsman only happened within the span of two to three seconds, of which was filled with incomprehensible mystery. The girls now know that there was an abstruse and profound principle behind the ‘strangeness’ that they felt.

“These movements seem to be fanciful, but useless. However, the perfect extension of the speed and strength of the sword can be formed within these sets of movements. Be it attacking, defending or dodging, these movements are able to make them seem coherent. If one is able to apply these sets of movements well, the destructive power can definitely be increased by several times...” Alfea said in a low voice, as though her mind was occupied.

Although Debbie was only a level two Swordsman, her talent in Swordsmanship was not much lower than that of Alfea’s. She also managed to sense something, “These movement patterns are indeed very formidable, but I guess it would take a really long time for an ordinary person to learn all of these. At least for me, I believe that I would definitely not be able to grasp all the techniques within such a short period of time.”

As she spoke, her gaze at Ye Chui's back view became more surprised.

“I really... can't understand this person.” Alfea continued by saying, “So, the ‘hope’ this mysterious person was referring to was to learn the movements of this puppet swordsman... And the main reason as to why we haven't been able to defeat it is that this puppet swordsman portrays the weirdest moves that one can imagine. If we learned the movements of the other party, we could at least be on par with it for the remaining time.”

In the previous round, Debbie and Alfea were not injured, but it does not mean that they are on equal standing with the puppet swordsman. The reason is because the movements of the puppet swordsman had limitations to them, thus giving the girls much leeway to attack it.

Until now, the girls had not understood the true meaning of defeating the puppet swordsman, but at least Ye Chui found a way that will keep them undefeated.

[Perhaps... the ultimate goal of this battle is for us to learn all the movements of the puppet swordsman?]

Alfea and Debbie both got excited.

“We have to give our best shot and provide him (Ye Chui) with a chance to learn its movements!” Alfea clenched her teeth and said.

Debbie also nodded her head in agreement.

Ye Chui was able to perform the first fighting style effortlessly, but when facing other attacks by the armoured Swordsman, he could only choose to retaliate using the skills of an ordinary Swordsman. At this moment, he had completely entered the zone of a level two Swordsman, meaning that he had handed the controlling power of most parts of the battle armour to the magic matrix found from the magic crystal of the stone Swordsman.

Then, Ye Chui could spend a large amount of time trying to research the methods of using other fighting styles.

Debbie and Alfea, who were spectating from the side, suddenly became a little surprised.

“Debbie, did you realise something?” Alfea inquired, “His skill level wasn’t even at that of a level one Swordsman previously, but it seems like he now has the capabilities of a level two Swordsman!”

“Yeah... His previous battling format was total chaos.” Debbie exclaimed as well, “How is it possible for him to improve so fast?”

“Did he hide his competence previously?”

The two girls would never think that the actual fact was that Ye Chui’s magic crystal had undergone an upgrade, as a combat plug-in was installed within it...

Thirty minutes soon ended and the puppet swordsman vanished into thin air.

Ye Chui stepped down from the battle in exhaustion.

His exhaustion did not really come from the physical battle with the puppet swordsman, but rather the mental work he had to do during the battle.

In actuality, Ye Chui did not exert much of his physical strength during the battle, as all the movements which he displayed relied on the supply of energy from the magic crystal in front of his chest. He was exhausted due to the amount of mental energy he used to perceive the fighting styles of the puppet swordsman – Indeed, men rely on intelligence during battles.

However, after the mentally-arduous thirty minutes of battle, Ye Chui learned many things. At least, he learned that a single fighting style could have several transformations. He would be able to perfect these fighting styles when he translated these movements into a magic programme. In chivalric fiction novels, absolute geniuses would need to repeatedly practice the same move in order to perfect it, thus the thought of being able to completely grasp the know-how of the fighting skills just by programming them was simply interesting...

[If this carries on, I'd be able to translate the movements of the puppet swordsman into a magic programme.] Ye Chui thought in his mind, as he placed his longsword back at his waist and walked

towards Debbie and Alfea.

## Chapter 63 – The Magic Programing For Fighting Style Has Finally Been Completed!

---

After fighting the puppet swordsman for a full thirty minutes; even after taking turns confronting the monster, the two girls were already exhausted. Each had wounds on their body, which fortunately were only superficial.

Killing off this puppet swordsman was a task that could be considered impossible. After all, it was not built to be defeated but instead, to pass on the knowledge of the sword fighting styles contained in it. This was obvious twelve rounds later, about an approximate time of 8 hours, whereby the puppet swordsman no longer respawned.

“Alright. I’ll give you all eight hours of rest before we continue again.” The child-like voice said. “I hope that you all will be able to restore your strength to peak condition in these eight hours.”

Hearing the child-like voice’s words, Ye Chui and the two girls were overwhelmed with a sense of relief. To continue fighting nonstop for twelve rounds was a tiring matter. If no break was given, they could probably not last much longer. Therefore, it was a great and fortunate opportunity that had fell upon them, to finally allow them to rest up and recover.

Exhausted, the three of them sat against the wall close to each other.

“I thought that fight would never end...” Alfea sighed as her



beautiful face released all tension.

Since she was the City Lord's daughter, even at the tender age of 15-16 years old, she bore huge responsibilities and expectations. She was expected to be a genius swordsman, as well as pressured into the responsibilities of her role. As such, she grew to have a mature appearance; not able to be represented by her age.

However, appearances can be deceiving. At the end of the day, she was still a little girl. When facing problems that she herself could not fathom to handle, she would rely on others. Therefore, after she wiped the perspiration off her forehead, she looked towards Ye Chui with eyes of anticipation, seeking for his opinion on the matter; or at least some form of comfort.

"I have almost uncovered all of the puppet swordsman's attack patterns. By tomorrow, I can assure you that it will be completely defeated." Ye Chui said in a low voice.

For the past few hours, Ye Chui had been figuring out the puppet swordsman's entire set of moves; twelve in total. Unfortunately, the last ones that Ye Chui had noticed more difficult to master. Even with his experience and knowledge of programming, which gave him an edge in understanding, a single glance of the move was not enough for him to fully memorize the move set.

These few moves had him pondering for a long period of time, which after doing so, was still confusing to him. The last of the twelve attack patterns left him especially bewildered. It had eight swings, with each taking on changes that were complex and unpredictable. If he were to create a magic program to recreate this

one move, it would certainly take up a large amount of space.

The 128MB magic crystal, which he had received from the guild, had some spare capacity but that was far from enough. Therefore, Ye Chui decided to delete some of the things inside. Since he had already mastered all 32 magic symbols, they were the first to go. All that was left inside was a few space magic theoretical records and a few advance magic matrixes; knowledge that he had yet to touch, and planned on doing so at a later date.

The space magic theoretical records were particularly important to Ye Chui. After he had entered this inner hall and got trapped, experiencing a small sample of what space magic was like, he felt that these records were extremely important; it could even be said that they were more important than the records on the 32 magic symbols.

[The Magic Guild is really too generous... to think they would allow someone to have a chance of taking something as priceless as this.] Ye Chui thought and sighed. If anyone from the Magic Guild was actually read this boy's mind, they would certainly cry due to grief.

In the meantime, both Debbie and Alfea smiled after hearing Ye Chui confident declaration. Since they were currently only able to endlessly fight without any expectation of escape, hearing such hope dangled in front of them was like a breeze lifting their spirits.

“Iron Swordsman...” Alfea mutters as her eyes glowed with a brighter intensity of light, unable to hide her strong anticipative mood. “Since we are both enduring such hardship together,

sharing both happiness and sorrow together, can't you at least tell me your real name?"

"My name?" Ye Chui gawked. He still wished to hide his true identity from Alfea so the thought of admitting he was Hammer was immediately executed from his mind. Even his real name, Ye Chui, was not something he wishes to disclose. After serious consideration, and taking into great account that he was currently in a fantasy world, Ye Chui opened his mouth and replied, "Tony Stark."

[Tony Stark, the original person who wore the Iron Man suit. Well, since this is a fantasy world, using his name should not be an issue.]

"Tony Stark?"

## Chapter 64 – The Self-Cultivation Of Becoming A Master

---

Upon witnessing tears flow down Debbie's forlorn face, Alfea became flustered momentarily, before she managed to calm herself down to comfort Debbie, "Debbie, don't worry. Hammer will be fine. Just wait till we're able to escape from this place tomorrow and save Hammer. I once lost my way in a dark forest and starved for seven days, but I managed to survive, so Hammer will definitely persevere through these few days of starvation."

When Debbie heard Alfea's comforting words, she cried even louder. As her tiny hands wiped the tears off her face, she spoke in a nasal tone, "How can my Hammer compare to you? His body is so weak that even a gust of wind can make him sick. What if he gets starved to death?"

Ye Chui burst out in a head full of sweat, while thinking to himself. [Although my body is indeed weaker than the average person's, I don't think I'm so weak to that extent...]

Alfea was visibly not an expert at comforting people. As she started to panic and was unsure what to do, she went to ask for help from Ye Chui.

Ye Chui pondered for a few seconds before speaking, "Debbie, I think that you don't have to worry about Hammer. He won't starve to death."

"Why?" Debbie looked at Ye Chui and asked.

“Before I was teleported to this stone chamber, Hammer was teleported to the chamber I was at. I had left a bag of belongings there, which included some dried products and potable water, so Hammer will definitely be fine for these few days.” Ye Chui said after choosing his words carefully.

Debbie looked at Ye Chui with a pair of red eyes, “Are you telling the truth?”

“Of course, I am” Debbie’s anxious face made Ye Chui’s love towards her be expressed in an inexplicable manner. He then patted her shoulders and assured her, “Trust me, he’ll be fine.”

“...” Debbie tightly pursed her lips and gradually nodded her head. But after a second, she said, “... Take your hand off me.”

“... All right.”

After removing his hand from Debbie’s shoulder in embarrassment, Ye Chui continued to sit against the wall, at a position half a foot away from her. Debbie was visibly slightly upset at the proximity this stranger, but due to the food and drinks that this stranger provided Hammer with, she decided not to bicker with him. She even took out a water bottle from her bag and passed it to Ye Chui, “Drink some water.”

“Thanks!” Ye Chui laughingly exclaimed, before proceeding to open the mouthpiece of his mask and drink the water. The mask that he was wearing had a rather flexible design – while keeping

the top part of the mask unmoved, he could open the bottom part of it to drink and eat.

Similarly, Alfea brought along some food, which was stored in her space ring. The food that she brought was of higher standard than that of Debbie's, thus it was naturally more delicious. The food was probably prepared by the City Lord's Manor chefs. Ye Chui held no qualms against eating Debbie's food; and he ate it in big portions. After filling their stomachs, Alfea once again took out several blankets from her space ring, allowing the three of them to rest on it.

Tranquillity was restored in the stone chamber.

Ye Chui sat between the two girls, leading Alfea to suspect that he did it on purpose. Moreover, the distance between Ye Chui and Alfea was very small, to the extent that they almost made skin contact.

Indeed, Ye Chui did not dislike these two girls, but he wanted to be closer to Debbie instead. After encountering the stare from Debbie which implied 'don't you dare try to get closer to me', Ye Chui could only cancel that thought in his mind.

The interior of the stone chamber was silent.

"I wonder how are Balmain and Athol doing..." Just as Ye Chui sensed that both Alfea and Debbie had both fallen asleep, Alfea's voice suddenly rang, "I had thought that I'd made sufficient preparation for this adventure that I organised. But..." The tone of

self-reprimanding could be heard from Alfea's voice, "Both of them are City Lord's Guards and have followed me since I was young. If anything unfortunate happens to them, I won't be able to face my father or the other City Lord's Guards... It's all my fault that I didn't prepare well for this adventure..."

"There's no one who's able to foresee the dangers in any adventure, so don't blame yourself for it. I believe that if the two people that you mentioned encountered any accident, they wouldn't fault you for it. Adventures, are after all, a platform where adventurers place their lives on the line for the treasures that lie in them. Moreover, I firmly believe that we would be able to defeat the puppet swordsman tomorrow. By then, we would be able to escape this place and save them." Ye Chui consoled Alfea and he turned his head towards her.

This pretty lady also looked at him. Although signs of exhaustion showed on her face, she smiled slightly, "Thank you."

"You girls have also helped me a great deal. Without you two, I wouldn't be able to figure out the fighting styles of this puppet swordsman." Ye Chui laughed.

Alfea smiled at Ye Chui once again, but did not speak. She suddenly moved her body closer to Ye Chui and placed her head on his shoulder, as she went to sleep.

Ye Chui's body was somewhat stiff, but he did not move much. All he did was tilt his head and look at Debbie, while fantasizing the scene if Debbie instead of Alfea was by her side. Debbie, on the other hand, was hugging her knees with both her hands and her

head was buried in her arms. Her tiny body moved occasionally and was most probably asleep already. [Are you still constantly worrying about your beloved Hammer?]

Ye Chui really wanted to tell Debbie that he was actually by her side all along...

Debbie and Alfea's breathing sounds gradually became regular, but on the other hand, Ye Chui was not planning on getting any sleep. Magicians have exceptional spiritual power; thus they do not require much sleep. Most importantly, Ye Chui had something essential to do.

Ye Chui had already summarised and recorded all twelve fighting styles which the puppet swordsman displayed. As long as he triggered the interior of the magic crystal, his battle armour would display that set of movements.

This was similar to playing a wrestling game – once an order was inputted, the game character would display that move. Ye Chui was the one at the helm at the moment. Not only did he need to control all twelve fighting styles, he also needed to manipulate the various transformations of each fighting style to deal with the puppet swordsman. Hence, this was obviously much harder than that of a wrestling game.

An ordinary character in the game would at most have a few moves, so how could it be harder than that of Ye Chui's?

However, Ye Chui has been playing mechanical games since



young in his previous world, thus he had the gift for gaming. With the addition of the pressure of staying alive, he believed that he would be able to familiarise himself with these fighting styles quickly.

Ye Chui's consciousness entered the magic crystal, as he continuously played back the scenes where the puppet swordsman used these moves, before figuring out how to perform these moves in an effortless manner.

In 'Demi-Gods and Semi-Devils', Qiao Feng killed an outstanding hero using a set of the simplest Arhat Boxing moves. It was not the moves that were exquisite, but the execution of the moves that was absolutely perfect.

Familiarising oneself with the moves was a lot harder than learning the moves and it determined whether one had the key element to becoming a master.

And Ye Chui needed to try his best to become that master.

The night passed without any talking.

The concept of day and night was virtually non-existent in the stone chamber. However, after the three of them rested for eight hours, the child-like voice rang once again, "Your resting time is over. Let's continue with our game."

# Chapter 65 – Despite Looking Unusual, The Fighting Style Was Still Formidable

---

Znnng!

The puppet swordsman slashed its longsword downwards towards Ye Chui's head.

Ye Chui hurriedly manipulated the Iron Swordsman battle armour to dodge its attack. He then quickly tilted his body to one side and stabbed his longsword towards the chest of the puppet swordsman.

On the other hand, the puppet swordsman which was holding its longsword with both its hands suddenly changed its stance and brandished its longsword in the air, making a semi-circle before directing its attack towards Ye Chui's waist.

Clang!

Ye Chui immediately positioned his longsword to fend off the attack from the puppet swordsman. He then forcefully stomped his feet against the ground and jumped backwards by half a step, as he pushed the puppet swordsman's longsword away. At the same time, he spun one round at high speed, before using the centrifugal force due to the spinning to slash his longsword towards the puppet swordsman at a cunning angle.

The puppet swordsman hurriedly did a backflip, as he retreated

backwards.

The action of the backflip was not just for show. As the puppet swordsman landed on the ground, its body was slightly slanted with respect to the ground. At the moment when its feet made contact with the ground, its battle boots and the stone ground created friction, which was large enough to send it pouncing towards Ye Chui once again like a ferocious beast...

As both Alfea and Debbie sat against the wall, while watching the absolutely fancy combat exchanges between Ye Chui and the puppet swordsman, their faces were filled with amazement.

The girls had seen many battling scenes, but it was their first time encountering such a situation. The movements of both parties in the battle were kind of mysterious and unusual, thus widening the horizons of the two girls. If one were to briefly summarise the scene, it would be a scene that combined both 'Lord of the Rings' movie and an eastern-knight movie. Such a combination was breathtakingly astonishing to see, as no one knew that battles could progress like that.

In reality, the puppet swordsman had started displaying strange moves since the start of the battle, but the girls used the normal protocol of ordinary Swordsmen to deal with it. Although the girls faced a mounting amount of pressure, they would not be able to comprehend the seemingly-superfluous movements of the puppet swordsman, thus their moves were basically useless.

Up to now, Ye Chui had been countering each of the puppet swordsman's attacks with its same fighting style, giving the

audience a wonderful spectacle. This made the girls have a new understanding of the profession of Swordsmen. Furthermore, the girls had finally managed to figure out the purpose of the superfluous movements of the puppet swordsman and feel the mystery behind that set of movements.

In summary, although the fighting style Ye Chui used in the battle between him and the puppet swordsman looked unusual, it was still very formidable...

The exchange of attacks between Ye Chui and the puppet swordsman in this round has lasted for 20 minutes.

Within this 20 minutes, Ye Chui had been able to defend himself from attacks launched by the puppet swordsman, utilising virtually all of the twelve fighting styles. However, after the 20 minute mark, Ye Chui's execution of the fighting styles became slightly flawed, leading to him almost getting injured.

It was perhaps part of his instinct that the puppet swordsman actually noticed that he gradually comprehended all the twelve fighting styles, as the puppet swordsman did not seem to leave any room for negotiation in the battle, unlike the previous rounds when Ye Chui battled with it. There were a few instances where if Ye Chui's reaction time was a little slower, he would have been seriously injured by the longsword of the puppet swordsman. Of course, Ye Chui could only have such quick reaction time due to the easy manipulation of the magic crystal in front of his chest. When Ye Chui gave the magic crystal orders to dodge an attack, the enchanting array on his battle armour would be activated immediately. Moreover, the speed of transmission of the magic

signal was much faster than human reaction time, thus Ye Chui was able to react in time to defend himself from attacks.

When the battle was about to reach the 30 minute mark, the puppet swordsman squatted down and swept its longsword horizontally towards Ye Chui's legs, forming a continuous shadow of it on the ground. This was the eleventh of the twelve fighting styles of the puppet swordsman, of which there were seven more transformations that it could undergo.

Ye Chui hurriedly displayed the eighth fighting style – he leaped into the air, held his longsword with both his hands and chopped it downwards towards the head of the puppet swordsman.

However, the puppet swordsman did not use the eleventh fighting style for long, as it quickly changed it to the ninth fighting style. This move required the puppet swordsman to swing its longsword upwards, therefore sealing off Ye Chui's downwards attack and allowing the puppet swordsman to dodge his attack.

In addition, since Ye Chui was still airborne at that moment, it was impossible for Ye Chui to dodge the puppet swordsman's move. It did not matter which fighting style Ye Chui was using; as long as Ye Chui lands on both his feet, he would be dealt with a great blow!

“Careful!”

Upon realising Ye Chui's circumstance, both Debbie and Alfea hurriedly shouted at the top of their lungs and jumped from their

sitting positions, as they prepared to assist him.

The current situation was extremely critical!

Then...

Ye Chui's feet did not land on the ground.

His body remained airborne.

Debbie and Alfea, who were making preparations to assist Ye Chui, suddenly froze in their actions.

[He actually managed to stay afloat in mid-air?]

[What is happening?!]

The puppet swordsman was already squatting on the ground, waiting to launch its attack on Ye Chui the moment he landed on the ground. But, in the next instant, it was completely dumbfounded, as though its mind went blank. Perhaps the magic crystal that was controlling its operations did not have any magic array that told it what to do when facing a flying Swordsman...

The 30 minute time limit ended soon.

The puppet swordsman disappeared into a ray of white light.

Ye Chui then landed on the ground in a swaying fashion. Although he had learned the ability to fly now, his flying motions were not nimble. Furthermore, flying required a lot of magic power and it was not easy to control. Therefore, he has not demonstrated this aspect of his skills to others. Flying in the air may look cool, but it was only temporary and did not have any actual worth.

On the other hand, Debbie and Alfea were filled with astonishment, as they ran towards Ye Chui.

“Tony... You can actually fly?!” Alfea exclaimed.

“It’s because of my battle armour.” Ye Chui spoke with a weak tone, “It can’t last for long.”

“There’s no way you can be so formidable, even with the battle armour on... I’ve never heard of any enchanting array on a battle armour that can enable one to fly!” Alfea was impressed.

As Ye Chui shook his head, the two girls held him to the wall to take a seat, “It’s a pity that you didn’t perform well in the last 10 minutes. Otherwise, we’d have passed this obstacle.”

“You’ve already done very well.” Debbie praised Ye Chui with a face of happiness.

Ye Chui sneaked a glance at the small girl, obviously enjoying her

praises, but soon enough, Debbie continued, “That’s great, I’ll be able to see Hammer soon. I want to thank you on behalf of my beloved Hammer!”

“...” Ye Chui expressed his jealousy.

“Smart person! You indeed didn’t disappoint me!” The child-like voice rang again, “Although I’ve no idea how you did that, I’ve a feeling that you’ll be able to pass this test and completely comprehend the ultimate skills of my master.”

“Hehe...” Leaning his back against the stone wall, he looked up to the blank space above, “It really is a package – adventurers who enter the ancient tomb will have to inherit the Martial Arts Secret Manual before they can leave. Although it’s a little old-fashioned, this world is full of novelty.”

Debbie and Alfea were a little puzzled at Ye Chui’s words and were unsure what ‘Martial Arts Secret Manual’ refers to, but they did not speak up.

They only heard Ye Chui’s continuous questioning, “If I manage to completely inherit the Martial Arts Secret Manual, will we be able to escape this place?”

“Completely inherit?” The child-like voice laughed shamelessly, “Don’t kid with me. Do you think that you can easily inherit the Martial Arts Secret Manual completely? My master, who is also the owner of this ancient tomb was a well-known level nine Swordsman, who could challenge Swordsmen who were of higher



tiers than him, hence inheriting his Martial Arts Secret Manual is not as easy as you thought. However, the skill level of the puppet swordsman is only 10% of my master. If you're able to use the skills you learned to practise with the puppet swordsman for 30 minutes, you'd have passed my master's test. Thus, you're eligible to gain a prize for this round of the exploration game."

"There's even a prize?" Ye Chui was caught off guard. [Didn't the child-like voice say that the owner of this ancient tomb had used all his assets to construct this tomb? After spending all his wealth, this ancient tomb adventure was fated to be a wasted trip, but now, this voice says that there actually is a prize?]

Debbie's eyes lit up, "What's the prize?"

"The prize that you all will eventually win is a priceless treasure; one that is even more valuable than any wealth in the world." The child-like voice proclaimed in a satisfied tone. He paused for a moment, "Me!"

"..."

Ye Chui, Debbie and Alfea were all dumbfounded for an instant, before Ye Chui cursed and swore, "WTF?!"

# Chapter 66 – The Critical Last Minute!

---

Countless golden yellow walls of air divided the space of the huge inner hall into many small checkpoints. It would be impossible for any ordinary person to break through these isolated spaces when they are trapped within it, unless they were at the level of an advanced Magician or advanced Swordsman. Those who were unable to break through these walls faced the fate of dying within these isolated spaces.

Tens of hours had passed, and within these hours, Athol, Balmain and Damon carried out their challenges individually and managed to advance several checkpoints towards the middle. They still had not lost hope in completing the challenge.

Balmain, the nimble Dual Swordsman, managed to advance four checkpoints towards the centre, while both Damon and Athol advanced two checkpoints forwards. In their current situation, Balmain was still five checkpoints away from reaching the centre, and had several injuries inflicted on him by the Swordsmen in the checkpoints. Furthermore, ointment for injuries had ran out. As he got closer to the middle checkpoint, the Swordsmen got stronger and more powerful, thus it was likely that he would not have any hope of advancing further in the game.

Beastman Warrior Athol and Mercenary Damon were both facing the same situation, thus the three of them sat down in despair to rest.

“Balmain, I wonder how Lady Alfea is doing... Would she be able to escape this place... If anything untoward happens to her, I won't

be able to give an explanation to Grandfather Eric..." Athol's voice had a tinge of sadness.

Eric was the City Lord of Stan City, Alfea's father, as well as one of the three level nine Swordsmen in the city.

Alfea's talent in swordsmanship was largely inherited from her father.

"Don't worry. Lady Alfea has always been lucky. I believe that she will be able to return home safely." Balmain sighed, while using a piece of blood-streaked cloth to clean a wound at his abdomen, "Hammer isn't an ordinary person. If he's able to escape from Busca's imprisonment for three months, I believe that he will bring good luck to Lady Alfea."

"They're really selfish. How can they leave without us?! Selfish! If I'm able to escape from this place, mark my word that I will spread the news of them leaving their fellow teammates behind!" At this time, Guthem's raging voice rang.

Guthem was still sitting with a soulless look plastered on his face in the same checkpoint he was previously trapped in. When Athol and the rest declared that they would carry on with the challenges, he even made sarcastic remarks, thinking that they were fated to die no matter how hard they try.

Also, it was very obvious that Guthem was lamenting about Ye Chui bringing Debbie and Alfea along with him, as they disappeared from the middle checkpoint. He thought that Ye Chui

shamelessly abandoned the team, thus he cursed that he would receive the punishment of the oath contract.

“Shut up!” Guthem’s words met with Damon’s rebuke, “You shameless fella! Villain! It’s a disgrace to be on the same team as you!”

Guthem let out a few sounds of cold laughter, hahaha, and said in a mocking tone, “What’s more important in this world other than your life?! You must open your eyes to see the truth! Hammer could have saved us and left this place, but he decided to only bring Debbie and Alfea only. You morons, what is the use of Swordsman honour, when you are dead?!”

“I believe that Hammer isn’t such a person!” Damon’s shouted with a flushed face. Damon was not familiar with Ye Chui, but the battling experience he had with Ye Chui made him firmly believe that Ye Chui is not a selfish Magician who would abandon his teammates.

When Ye Chui, Alfea and Debbie were space teleported out of the inner hall, the words which the child-like voice said to them were not heard by the others. Hence, Guthem suspected that Ye Chui had all along planned to abandon them, although Damon, Athol and Balmain all believed that Ye Chui did not have a choice at that point in time.

Guthem snorted in an indifferent manner. Seeing Athol standing up and preparing to advance to the next checkpoint, Guthem’s showed a face of despise, “The most pathetic thing is that you guys actually think that you all can escape this place in one piece. What

a joke!”

Damon, Athol and Balmain did not have the mood to respond to Guthem. They had indeed lost the will to escape out of this inner hall; it could be almost certain that they would be trapped to death in this place. However, they were not ready to submit themselves to fate; they were Swordsmen, and Swordsmen should bravely challenge their fate. Even if they die on the battleground, at least they would not be hiding in a safe zone like a coward, unwilling to try.

Guthem was mocking their futile efforts to escape, on the other hand, all three of them thought in their hearts that Guthem did not have the qualifications to be a Swordsman at all.

At this time, Oberth, the son of the Magician Guild Master, was still stuck in the same checkpoint and was reluctant to continue with the challenge. He seemed to be unwell, with a savage look plastered on his face. Moreover, he was mumbling some words to himself in a low tone, as if he was cursing and swearing.

“Hammer was the one who stole the magic crystal from the Magician Guild Hall... It’s Hammer... No wonder he has such talent in comprehending space magic arrays. He must’ve found a way to decipher these space magic arrays from the magic crystal! I should’ve been the one who obtained the magic crystal, but Hammer, this useless Magician, snatched everything that belonged to me... He deserves to die... I will definitely ask my father to kill him, kill him...”

When Ye Chui left the inner hall, Oberth realised that Ye Chui

was the one who stole the magic crystal from the Magician Guild Hall. It was only due to some space magic-related information inside the magic crystal that he was able to overcome each obstacle with ease.

If this information was in his possession, he would be able to decipher the magic array here!

By this time, Oberth would probably had long forgotten that he had spent countless hours attempting to retrieve the magic crystal from the mirror, but to no avail. Even if he has the magic crystal with him, on what basis, does he have the cheek to believe that he could decipher the magic array trapping everyone here?

These magic arrays, which are carved by Specialist Realm Magicians, might not even be deciphered by that level nine Magician.

This was a concept that was easy to grasp; and Oberth knew that deep down in his heart. However, his emotions got the better of him. He continuously complained about Ye Chui, as though Ye Chui was the one who brought him down.

Within the stone chamber.

Dang!

Ding!

Boom!

Ye Chui, who was wearing the Iron Swordsman battle armour, was sitting against the wall to rest, while the two girls exchanged blows with the puppet swordsman.

Under immense pressure, Debbie and Alfea's swordsmanship have improved drastically. Although this adventure will not yield them any returns, the biggest gift that they will receive is the improvement in their swordsmanship.

Of course, Ye Chui was the ultimate gift to these girls in this adventure.

The 12 fighting styles which Ye Chui has learnt will definitely be a great help to him during the battles. If Ye Chui can perfectly integrate this fighting moves together and use them coherently, the battling ability of the Iron Swordsman battle armour will increase substantially. Perhaps he can become an Iron Advanced Swordsman...

After eight hours of rest, Ye Chui had already battled the puppet swordsman four times. In the first round, he was able to sustain for 25 minutes before losing his foothold in the battle. In the second round, he was able to sustain for 26 minutes. He lasted for 28 and 29 minutes for the third and fourth round respectively.

Ye Chui had the confidence that, in the next round, he would be able to withstand the attacks from the puppet Swordsman for 30 minutes, using the set of fighting styles that he has just learnt.

But...

[Could it be my imagination? The combat capabilities of the puppet Swordsman seemed to be increasing as the battle progresses... The last minute would be a torture...]

Ye Chui frowned as he suddenly thought of a sentence which the child-like voice previously said to him.

“This artificial intelligence... does not seem to want me to pass this test!”



# Chapter 67 – This Darned Ancient Tomb

---

[This artificial intelligence... does not seem to want me to pass this test!]

Ye Chui had such a thought only because before they were teleported to this stone chamber, the child-like voice said something about giving them a chance to live if Ye Chui agreed to be its slave. But he rejected its proposal in the end.

Ye Chui had already understood that as long as he is able to display all of the 12 battle techniques that the puppet Swordsman would use, after intensive replays of each one of them; he would have accomplished the goal of this test. Hence, he will, in the end, be rewarded with this artificial intelligence and have the chance to be its new master.

Ye Chui could not determine the nature of this artificial intelligence. However, what he is able to confirm is that this artificial intelligence is very self-centred. Since it is self-centred and has harboured the thought of making Ye Chui its slave, it would definitely have some objection against being the slave of Ye Chui. It is very likely that it will create some difficulty for Ye Chui in the upcoming test.

Apart from that, from what Ye Chui had gathered from the conversations he had with the child-like voice, he speculated that this artificial intelligence, made from a level nine Swordsman, will take up a lot of memory space. At the very least, it was impossible for him to store it into his 128MB magic crystal!

A magic crystal that is able to store something so large must be priceless!

From the information that he had gathered, he could tell that the magic crystal which stored both the fragment of will from the level nine Swordsman and the 12 battle techniques that he had created will take up at least 1GB.

From Ye Chui's own understanding, it would be impossible to find such a huge magic crystal in a place like Stan City.

Even if the level nine Swordsman had the ability to take on a Sword Master, it was still impossible for him to be so rich to the point that he could afford two of such crystals and still had spare to create this tomb. Therefore, in the ancient tomb, there could only be this one magic crystal.

If such was the case, the crystal would not only contain the battle techniques created by the level nine Swordsman and his will fragment, it will also contain the puppet Swordsman!

With the stone chamber being completely different from that of the inner hall, and the constitution of this puppet swordsman being completely different to that faced in the inner hall, it could be deduced that it was not created by a magic array on the ground. Without such an array, its power source must have been something else! It must have been the magic crystal, which contained information that was able to fabricated this puppet Swordsman to display its 12 battle techniques. This means that this priceless magic crystal is stored within the body of the puppet swordsman!

In other words, the puppet swordsman is carrying the child-like voice which was speaking to him for all this time.

Since Ye Chui, Alfea and Debbie were all space teleported to this stone chamber, it can be almost certain to say that there is only one of such puppet Swordsman around.

In the previous few rounds of battle with the puppet Swordsman, all three of them had dealt various degrees of damage to the puppet Swordsman; Ye Chui even used his ultimate move to injure the puppet Swordsman to a large extent. However, they had not noticed the difference between this puppet Swordsman and those stone Swordsmen in the stone pathway; this was the only thing they had neglected.

If the child-like voice had planned for Ye Chui to remain trapped in here, the only way to attain victory over it is to destroy the puppet Swordsman and snatch the magic crystal within its body.

From the start, Alfea and Debbie had actually thought of the plan to destroy the puppet Swordsman and retrieve the magic crystal within it. Based on the constitution of an ordinary puppet Swordsman, the magic crystal and magic stoned within it form its magic core array as long as this core array is destroyed, the puppet Swordsman will be defeated.

However, executing the plan is an uphill task.

The strength and speed that this puppet Swordsman displays is

approximately at the level of a level four or five Swordsman. However, due to the fighting styles it possesses, its battling capabilities have reached the level of at least an advanced Swordsman.

Due to the disparity in their skill levels, it was already hard for Alfea and Debbie to even attack and defend freely, not to mention destroying the puppet Swordsman. In reality, since the start of the battle, Debbie and Alfea had sustained many injuries, while the puppet Swordsman had only sustained a few. The biggest damage that was inflicted on the puppet Swordsman was caused by the electricity column that shot out from Ye Chui's chest, but even those wounds were not enough as the level 9 Swordsman took little time to recover from those 'scratches'.

As Ye Chui now possesses fighting styles that can keep the puppet Swordsman in check, he had a chance to completely destroy this puppet Swordsman; provided that Debbie and Alfea coordinated well with him.

Ye Chui had also guessed the location of the magic crystal within the puppet Swordsman. [The level nine Swordsman had never thought that there would be a formidable person amongst the adventurers that entered this ancient tomb. As the 'boss' of this test, the magic core array in his body has to be placed at a part that was used the most – the heart.]

The heart is the core of the human body; it is the part which perfectly controls the entire body.

Of course, all these are just Ye Chui's speculations. Although he

thinks that his speculation is around 90% accurate, there might be surprises.

But for now, he is willing to take a risk.

After battling the puppet Swordsman for the 30 minutes, the puppet Swordsman disappeared into thin air once again, while Debbie and Alfea walked back to Ye Chui's side with heavy steps.

Although the both of them were exhausted, they still had a smile on their faces. This was due to the fact that Ye Chui has a chance of holding out for 30 minutes in the next round of battle, when he would have passed the test and was able to leave this darned ancient tomb. This description of the place was very apt, as the child-like voice was, from a certain perspective, some sort of spirit. Moreover, it has a guilty conscience right now.

“Tony, It's all up to you now!” Alfea sat down next to Ye Chui and smilingly said.

As usual, Debbie sat half a metre away from Ye Chui, while giving him a strange stare.

“I'm afraid it isn't as simple as you girls think.” Ye Chui said in a low tone.

“Why?” The two girls stared blankly at him.

Ye Chui beckoned the girls place their ears closer to his mouth.

Alfea immediately did as he requested, but Debbie, on the other hand, had a face of reluctance; her expression probably meant ‘he wants to take advantage of me again’. But after a few seconds, she moved her ears closer to Ye Chui’s mouth.

Ye Chui told the girls about his plan in a low voice.

Both Alfea and Debbie looked at Ye Chui in shock, but out of the trust they had in him, they eventually nodded their heads.

“We’ll coordinate with you!” Debbie said softly.

Alfea said in a concerned voice, “Be careful!”

“This round determines whether we can escape this place or not!” Ye Chui lowered his voice, “That child-like voice possess sufficient intelligence, and has sufficient controlling power over this tomb. If we fail and alert him of our plan, I’m afraid it’ll kill us all!”

The 10 minutes resting time has evaporated after Ye Chui went through the details of the plan in his heart. He then stood up from the ground while holding onto the stone wall for support, before walking seriously towards the puppet Swordsman who appeared from a ray of white light at the other side of the room.

“Our fate depends on this round!”

## Chapter 68 – WTF, The Iron Swordsman Suit's Battery Ran Out...

---

A new round of battle between Ye Chui and the puppet Swordsman has started. After several consecutive battles with the puppet Swordsman, Ye Chui had already grasped the application of all 12 fighting styles like the back of his hand. Of course, his skills of applying these 12 fighting styles into battles are still far from that of the creator of these moves; a level nine Swordsman who existed 1300 years ago.

However, Ye Chui's knowledge of these fighting styles should be sufficient to sustain him for 30 minutes against the puppet Swordsman.

Within the sounds of clashing swords, Ye Chui and the puppet Swordsman were engaged in a serious exchange of moves. Both their movements were executed with the utmost of precision, and the scene of the battle seemed to have a weird sense of beauty to it. In Debbie and Alfea's perspectives, it was as though they were watching an exquisite martial arts movie.

In the blink of an eye, the end of the 30 minutes was approaching.

It was all within Ye Chui's expectations. The attacks of the puppet Swordsman increasingly became merciless. Originally, it did not go all out when launching its attacks, but now, it seemed as though it wanted Ye Chui's life. If it was not for the protection by this Iron Swordsman suit, as well as the activation of the <Wind Walk> arrays – which allowed him to dodge its attacks, there were

a few occasions which Ye Chui could have been severely injured.

29 minutes had finally passed.

As the time remaining dwindled, the murderous intent of the puppet Swordsman became more intense.

In a single moment, the puppet Swordsman performed 'fighting style number 12', which was comprised of the most complicated movements and is the strongest fighting style of all. The puppet Swordsman wielded its long sword with both its hands and slashed three times in the air. Of these three slashes, which were executed at lightning speed, not all of them were actual attacks. All three slashes were aimed at the top, middle and bottom of the opponent; as a preventive measure against any attack that the opponent might launch. This move also has a transformation that can deal with it.

If these fighting style was used flawlessly, everything would go according to plan.

Inevitably, there is not a single perfect move in the martial world, not to mention this fantasy world.

This all-rounded move, which can subdue the opponent easily, could be easily countered. All he needed to do was to use the same exact fighting move.

When Ye Chui sensed that the puppet Swordsman was using



‘fighting style number 12’, he prepared his body and mind to counter its attack. Immediately, he mimicked the puppet Swordsman by using the same fighting style. He wielded his long sword with both his hands and slashed it three times in the air at lightning speed.

In reality, some of these slashes were real, but others were bluffs. The intricate part of this fighting style is the speed at which the person can convert from a real slash to a fake slash. Since these slashes have to be done one after another, the choice between actual and a fake, lies in the Lightning Spark.

Clang, clang, clang!

Three consecutive clashing sounds of the long swords could be heard almost simultaneously.

Ye Chui and the puppet Swordsman’s swords have already clashed three times. As the paths of the two long swords intersected, fakes and actual attacks could be easily be distinguished, thus defusing the crisis brought about by this fighting move. At this very moment, Ye Chui’s silhouette could be seen charging towards the puppet Swordsman with his long sword was aimed at its chest.

This was definitely not a wisest of decision, something even Ye Chui had to admit. However... he had a plan.

Because the move which Ye Chui executed was not a transformation of the twelfth fighting style, he could directly

charge towards the puppet Swordsman and place himself within its attack range.

Just as planned, the puppet Swordsman's long sword swept across the air and chopped towards Ye Chui's shoulder.

“Debbie, Alfea!” Ye Chui shouted at the top of his lungs.

Debbie and Alfea heeded to the instructions Ye Chui gave earlier and were ready to jump into action. Upon hearing Ye Chui's voice, their tiny figures nimbly flew into action.

When Ye Chui was informing the girls about his plan earlier on, he told them that they should join in the battle in the very last minute. All they had to do was very simple – lock down the long sword and arms of the puppet Swordsman when Ye Chui is in deep danger.

Both Alfea and Debbie have talent in swordsmanship. Although they had never coordinated with Ye Chui in any way, In such a critical moment, they were still able to flawlessly manage coordinating their movements with his.

Clang!

Alfea halted the puppet Swordsman attack on Ye Chui's shoulder by sweeping her sword against the puppet Swordsman's.

Boom!

At the same time, Debbie brandished her great sword and smashed it onto the arm of the puppet Swordsman with all her might. This attack was sufficient to destroy the operating system that enabled the puppet Swordsman to cheat; and caused the operating system it to be paralysed for a substantial amount of time.

Ye Chui's long sword, which was not used in any fighting style at the moment, pierced directly into the chest of the puppet Swordsman. On the other hand, there were eight <Wind Walk> magic arrays carved at the back of Ye Chui's armour, which can provide him with a strong propelling force. The propelling force of the magic arrays were large enough to enable him to pierce his long sword completely through the puppet Swordsman's chest plate and push it all the way to the stone wall behind.

The long sword even managed to pierce half a metre into the stone wall, thus pinning the puppet Swordsman's body onto the stone wall.

"Do you think this will suffice?!" The child-like voice shouted at Ye Chui with an exasperated voice.

'Of course not...' Ye Chui displayed a cheeky grin.

Under his signal, Debbie and Alfea retreated to the back.

Ye Chui loosened his grip on his long sword and retreated half a step back before opening his arms wide.

The magic array in front of his chest lighted up suddenly.

The magic crystal, which is placed in front of Ye Chui's chest all along, had a layer of transparent crystal above it. This transparent layer of crystal had a magic matrix enchanted onto it; and this magic matrix is Ye Chui's ultimate move, <Lightning Beam>.

At this time, Ye Chui used all his might to activate his ultimate move. A blue-coloured beam shot out from Ye Chui's chest and rocketed towards the puppet Swordsman.

zi, zi, zi

This magic matrix was modified from the <Heavenly Thunder> magic spell, which was found within the magic crystal. This magic spell is classified as an Elementary Offensive Spell, but it has a speciality. The destructive capability of this magic spell is directly proportional to the magic power supplied to it, meaning that its destructive capability can be limitless if a magic item is able to supply an unlimited amount of magic power to it.

Right now, Ye Chui channelled all the magic power he has into the magic matrix, producing the most formidable attack move that he has ever made.

Under such a strong attack, the left side of the puppet Swordsman's chest plate quickly melted and was destroyed, revealing the greyish-black substance which made up the interior of its battle armour; alas, even this substance could not bear the

might of Ye Chui's attack as it melted at an astonishing speed.

Ye Chui had put all his eggs into this basket and could not afford to slip up. He firmly believed that the magic core array of the puppet Swordsman, which controlled the operations of it, was hidden at its heart!

“What are you trying to do?! What do you want?!” The child-like voice trembled in fear, as it constantly rang in Ye Chui's ears.

Ye Chui did not care about the child-like voice. Instead, he continued to transmit all the magic power he has towards the magic matrix at his chest, while continuing his attack on the puppet Swordsman's chest.

While the puppet Swordsman was pinned onto the stone wall, it had continued to struggle from the restraints and even attempted to use its long sword to attack Ye Chui. However, those efforts were but to no avail. Even as a precautionary measure, Ye Chui had Alfea and Debbie next to him in case a sudden attack were to swing by.

Under the electric light, Ye Chui had an anxious gaze in his eyes, as he stared at the destroyed part of the puppet Swordsman's chest.

He had exerted all his magic powers on this attack. If he had made a wrong judgement, and the magic crystal is not found, he would not have a second chance, as the Iron Swordsman suit might not have the power to be activated again.

Fortunately, Ye Chui quickly realised something. Under the bombardment of the lighting beam, there was already an opening in the left side of the puppet Swordsman's chest plate, revealing two flickering constantly blue-coloured bright spots.

It was a magic crystal, as well as a magic stone!

This was where the core and power of the puppet Swordsman was at.

"It's here!" Ye Chui prepared to snatch those two items into his hands.

Then...

At this moment, something which made Ye Chui curse and swear occurred.

The blue-coloured beam emerging from his chest suddenly turned dim and he felt his body become much heavier – this was a sign of magic power failure.

At this anxious and critical moment, the magic crystal in front of Ye Chui's chest suddenly ran out of magic power!

# Chapter 69 – You Shall Be Called Jarvis

## Starting From Today

---

The most common scenario that happens when Ultraman is battling with small monsters is that his energy would suddenly run out at the most critical moment of the battle. Then, he would activate the auto-kinetic light waves to defeat the small monsters and attain victory, behind the guise of children's screams.

In the Ironman movie, there was a similar situation. Ironman would always face the problem of insufficient energy nearing the end of every big fight.

Now, it is Ye Chui's turn to experience the same thing.

The moment when Ye Chui saw the magic crystal and magic stone within the chest of the puppet Swordsman; and was about to retrieve those items which manipulated it, his Iron Swordsman suit suddenly lost its brilliant lighting effects. As the blue-coloured glow from the magic crystal dimmed, Ye Chui lost the magic power supplied by the magic crystal and felt his body become much heavier all of a sudden.

Although his particular armour was not that heavy, it weighed at least tens of kilograms. Hence, with his small body frame, he was incapable of fully supporting his entire body.

The sudden change in event caused Debbie and Alfea to jump in shock.

“Tony, what happened to you?!” Alfea yelled immediately.

Debbie also rushed over to Ye Chui, with a face full of worry.

The child-like voice let out a satisfied laughter. Although the puppet Swordsman was still firmly pinned onto the stone wall, but its continuous struggle was about to give it a chance to break free from the trap.

This moment was extremely critical.

At this moment, Ye Chui decided to go all out. In his mind, a ray of light flashed past, as he understood that this was the only way to have a chance at survival!

He dragged his heavy feet and suddenly dashed towards the puppet Swordsman.

The puppet Swordsman’s long sword extended towards Ye Chui’s left arm at lightning speed.

“Be careful!” Alfea did not expect Ye Chui to make this move when his armour malfunctioned, as she screamed. She also attempted to brandish her long sword and fend off the puppet Swordsman’s attack.

But it was too late.



Zila, the puppet Swordsman's long sword had already chopped onto Ye Chui's shoulder. The impact of its attack was strong enough to split open the shoulder pad of Ye Chui's armour and injure him, causing him to feel sharp pain.

After letting out a low roar and clenching his teeth, Ye Chui continued to charge forward.

Ye Chui definitely possesses the tenacity to fight for his life.

If it was not for his tenacious character, how would he even be able to stand at the peak of the hacking world?

He then inserted his hands into the broken left chest of the puppet Swordsman.

His palm made contact with the magic stone.

No one knew what Ye Chui had on his mind; not even the child-like voice. However, the child-like voice sensed that something was amiss, as the puppet Swordsman prepared to launch a second attack on Ye Chui.

This time, Alfea made sufficient preparations and managed to successfully fend off its attack.

He grabbed the magic stone with his hand with a tight clench.

At the same time, Ye Chui was absorbing the magic power from this magic stone inside the puppet Swordsman!

Although Ye Chui's shoulder pad has been destroyed, the magic array which was responsible for transmitting magic power was fortunately undamaged. Soon after, he felt the weight of the battle armour become lighter, as a continuous supply of magic energy flowed through his palm into his body.

Ye Chui continued to endure the immense pain, as he retrieved the magic stone that was providing him with magic energy from the puppet Swordsman's chest.

The magic stone, which was strategically placed within the chest of the puppet Swordsman, had dark-red thin threads resembling blood vessels extending from it, connecting the magic stone to the other parts of its body.

This structure was something Ye Chui could not comprehend, but it no longer mattered, as he had already retrieved the entire magic stone from the puppet Swordsman's body. At the same time, Ye Chui managed to locate the magic crystal which was connected to the magic stone with the same blood vessel-like threads.

“No!!!”

The child-like voice let out a panic-stricken scream.

Within a short period of time, the long sword of the puppet Swordsman has attacked Ye Chui countless times, but Alfea managed to fend off all of it.

A continuous clashing sound of the swords could be heard.

Then peace was restored in the stone chamber.

The puppet Swordsman suddenly stopped in its actions and was transformed into a stone-like material.

With a final blow from Alfea's long sword, the puppet Swordsman disintegrated into sand-like particles.

They have finally won the puppet Swordsman!

“Tony, did we win?” Alfea sounded tired, yet was elated at the same time. When she fended off the consecutive attacks by the puppet Swordsman within that short frame of time, she had already surpassed her original level of Swordsman skills.

Debbie also looked at Ye Chui with joy, as the thought of being able to see her Hammer again flashed across her mind.

However, Ye Chui did not have any sort of response.

While gripping onto the magic stone and magic crystal in his hand, his body dropped to one side and the floral patterns on his

armour formed by the <Wind Walk> magic matrixes started to glitter with a weak light. However, Ye Chui stood there like a statue and did not give any response.

At this instant, Ye Chui's will entered the magic crystal and carried out an intense fight with the intelligent life inside the magic crystal.

This was a battle of the magic matrix.

Perhaps in Ye Chui's perspective, this was a battle of the hackers.

The child-like voice, which was the intelligent life that controlled the entire ancient tomb, was indeed hiding within the magic crystal all along and was merely made up of a group of magic arrays formed by countless magic symbols. Although it was impossible for Ye Chui to comprehend the constitution of these arrays, he could see a chain that revolved tightly around the series of magic arrays, which was formed by a single magic array.

It was a sign that the intelligent life was resisting Ye Chui's control, as it did not want Ye Chui to get hold of one end of the chain.

Ye Chui just had to grab hold onto the chain which will naturally result in him being able to control this intelligent being completely.

As Ye Chui was embroiled in this battle of wills, he thought of the

countless hacking experiences he had in the previous world.

If others were in Ye Chui's shoes at this moment, it was highly likely that they would not have a chance of controlling that intelligent life, which had developed self-centeredness. However, Ye Chui was different. The experience he had gained in his previous world gave him an extraordinary controlling ability that even Magicians in this world lack. In the next instant, he was about to transform into a hacker and intrude into the control region of this intelligent life, so as to entirely control the intelligent life.

This was a conflict of wills.

In this process, Ye Chui saw some fragments.

These fragments belonged to the intelligent life.

1300 years ago, a level nine Swordsman constructed this ancient tomb so as to allow someone to inherit the fighting styles which he invented. He single-handedly designed several obstacles; and with the help of a Specialist Realm Magician, removed a part of his will from his brain and stored it within the magic crystal.

This part of his will that was removed from his brain had the knowledge of the 12 fighting styles in it and maybe a portion of his sentiments.

With the passing of time, the sentiment of this level nine

Swordsman gradually developed its own character and evolved into an all-new intelligent life.

This was a miracle that rarely happened.

For the past innumerable years, the puppet Swordsman, which was activated by the magic crystal, roamed the ancient tomb in solitude. Thus, it had gained its own perspective on the concept of life, existence and freedom.

It understood that the design of the level nine Swordsman made it that if anyone manages to pass the test, it must forever obey that person and be its slave.

This was the purpose of its existence.

However, since it did not want to exist just like that, it learnt how to resist.

“No... No... I want to become a real human being. I don’t want to be a slave. I don’t want... No...”

While engaged in the conflict within the magic crystal, Ye Chui seemed to be able to hear the desperate pleas of the intelligent being.

Thus, Ye Chui yelled back at it.

“You aren’t a human being. Although you are self-centred, you aren’t a human being and will never possess the true meaning of what it means to be a true human. But I can assure you that I will treat you like how I treat the people around me. I will become your master. I refuse to concede defeat. So instead, I will defeat you. Either obey me, or be destroyed by me.”

\*\*\*\*\*

After a long time

\*\*\*\*\*

The conflict within the magic crystal ceased all of a sudden.

“Master...” That voice said.

As Ye Chui firmly held onto the chain, he received the most reverent regards from his slave.

“Starting from today, I will be your master.” Ye Chui responded to it in an exhausted tone.

“Master, my name is...” The voice continued to speak.

“It doesn’t matter what your name was in the past. I have a better name for you.” Ye Chui said to that voice joyfully, “You shall be called Jarvis starting from today.”

# Chapter 70 – Hammer Has Been Right By Your Side All This While

---

“Tony! Tony!”

After relieving himself from the realm of the magic crystal, Alfea’s worried voice rang in Ye Chui’s ears, as Ye Chui felt his arm continuously tugged. On the other hand, Debbie stood at the other side of the stone chamber worried, though words of concern did not come from her mouth.

Realising that Ye Chui’s lethargic body has recovered its vitality, the two girls were elated.

Alfea hurriedly inquired, “Tony, how are you doing? You seemed to have lost consciousness just now. What exactly is going on?”

“Nothing much. I was just having a little interaction with that child-like voice.” Ye Chui explained, as he stretched out his hand to let Alfea and Debbie see the magic crystal and magic stone in his palm. Till now, Ye Chui still has to rely on the magic stone to supply energy to his body. The magic crystal, which was lying peacefully in the centre of his palm, had a dark blue shade to it. Ye Chui then laughingly said, “I’ve now become the owner of the artificial intelligence.”

“You’ve become its owner, meaning that...” Alfea’s eyes lit up in excitement.



“I’m now the owner of this ancient tomb.” Ye Chui laughed.

“Then can you bring us to Hammer?” Debbie immediately grabbed his arm and asked with a face full of anticipation. [Didn’t this girl say that male and female should not have physical contact?]

“I’ll get the artificial intelligence to bring you girls to the rest of your team first.” Ye Chui smiled, “I’ll personally bring Hammer to you girls later on. Alfea, since there is no more space isolation in this ancient tomb, you can directly leave this place using your key.”

“What about you?” Alfea seemed to be concerned about Ye Chui, as she stared at him with big sparkling eyes.

Ye Chui then laughed, “This is an unforgettable adventure experience. I’m sure we’ll meet again in future.”

As Ye Chui replied Alfea, he also prepared to contact Jarvis to bring these two girls to meet up with their teammates.

Alfea suddenly pursed her lips and open her arms widely to embrace Ye Chui, before saying, “I hope to see you again... soon.”

[Mmm... I guess it’s normal for her to give me a hug, since we have experienced life and death together...]

After Alfea released Ye Chui from her tight embrace, Ye Chui

thought of Debbie. [Should I give this little girl a hug as well?]

However, Debbie immediately revealed an expression that indicated ‘don’t you dare take advantage of me’, causing Ye Chui to bitterly shake his head. His consciousness then proceeded into magic crystal to communicate with Jarvis. Soon, a ray of white light appeared underneath Debbie and Alfea, before they vanished in front of Ye Chui.

“Jarvis, have you sent them to the inner hall yet?” Ye Chui seeks confirmation.

“Master, they’re now in the inner hall and the space isolation magic array has been removed.” Jarvis replied.

After getting the confirmation he needed, Ye Chui proceeded to remove his Iron Swordsman suit. Since he only wore underwear underneath his armour, he retrieved a set of Magician robe from his space ring to put on and returned his Iron Swordsman suit back into his space ring. He then cleaned the wound on his arm. Although the cut on his arm was very deep, it was not life-threatening. After affirming that he has not left anything behind in this stone chamber, Ye Chui asked Jarvis to teleport him to the inner hall as well.

Within the inner hall.

Balmain, Athol and Damon were all exhausted and inflicted with many injuries. Damon, who looked devastated, almost died when battling in the third check, but managed to pull through in the end

with just a serious injury.

At this point in time, Guthem was still mocking the three of them for their futile efforts.

On the other hand, Oberth was squatting under the light wall with red eyes, as he continued his attempts to decipher the space magic array in the inner hall.

“I can’t die; I’m the son of the Magician Guild Master; I’m a genius Magician... How can I die... I can’t die...” Oberth chanted continuously, as though he was mentally delirious.

Suddenly, the golden yellow wall in front of him flickered for a moment, before it disappeared into thin air.

“Ehh?” The five people trapped in the inner hall were taken aback. [How did the space isolation disappear all of a sudden?]

All of them looked towards Oberth subconsciously.

Oberth crawled up from the ground with a pleasant look on his face, as he was in disbelief over what he had done. [Did... Did I accidentally pinpoint the weakness of the light wall and deciphered the lock of the space array?]

“Dream on.” Alfea’s indifferent insult rang in the inner hall. Then, she and Debbie both appeared in the inner hall from the ray of white light.

Alfea scanned the surroundings and was shocked at the sight. She then quickly rushed towards all three of them to assess their injuries.

On the other hand, Debbie kept a lookout for a trace of Ye Chui, as her eyes hovered around the inner hall.

“What exactly happened?” Balmain hurriedly asked, as he saw Alfea’s silhouette rushing towards him.

Alfea briefly summarised the story of the artificial intelligence of this ancient tomb and explained the encounter with Tony Stark, the Iron Swordsman.

“Does this mean that you all passed the final test? And that Tony Stark is now in control of the entire ancient tomb?” Balmain inquired in a surprised tone, “I didn’t expect such a secret to lie within this ancient tomb. And I’ve no idea who that Tony Stark is...”

“Lady Alfea!” Guthem dashed towards Alfea and said in an agitated tone, “So, can we leave this place now?”

“Of course!” Alfea glanced at Guthem and realised that he was almost free of injuries. This made it obvious that he had admitted to his fate and did not harbour any thoughts of challenging the puppet Swordsman, thus Alfea was disgusted by his attitude.

“Then let’s quickly leave this place!” Oberth ran over and shouted with a shaky voice.

However, Alfea was still looking around for any sign of Ye Chui. She then frowned and said, “We have to wait for Hammer first!”

“Hammer?” Guthem seemed to have thought of something and suddenly shouted in a strict voice, “Where’s Hammer?”

“He’ll be here soon.”

Just as Alfea’s voice dissipated, a ray of white light appeared in the inner hall. A moment later, Ye Chui emerged from the light and stood in front of everyone. Now, Ye Chui’s acting skills are about to be put to the test.

Ye Chui revealed a panic-stricken look, as though he did not know what had happened. He then scanned the surroundings. Just as he was about to enquire about the happenings, a tiny figure, Debbie, leaped onto his body.

“Hammer, it’s great that you’re alright. I thought that I would never see you again...” A weeping sound came from her embrace.

Ye Chui stood dumbstruck, before revealing a gentle smile on his face and lightly hugging Debbie.

# Chapter 71 – Stan City’s Strongest Swordsman, Eric

---

In the garden at the back of the City Lord’s Manor, a ray of white light suddenly flashed past, causing the fallen leaves to rustle. Then, eight distressed-looking people appeared in the garden out of nowhere.

The servants, who were listlessly arranging the flower pots and sweeping the fallen leaves, all got a shock of their lives. When they regained their senses and realised what had happened, they started screaming in unison.

“Lady Alfea is back!”

“That’s great! Lady Alfea has finally returned safely!”

“Report this to the City Lord quickly!”

Some of the servants hurriedly left the garden and went to inform the City Lord of the return of Lady Alfea, while the rest of the servants rushed towards Alfea and her team of adventurers with looks of concern on their faces. An old supervisor then talked in a voice of agitation, “Lady Alfea, you’re finally back. An ancient tomb exploration usually doesn’t take more than half a day to complete, but you were gone for more than a full day! The City Lord was extremely worried for you and he threw several fits of temper. But fortunately, you’ve finally returned...”

“Enough of all these! Call the doctor here quickly! There are some casualties here!” Alfea shouted.

Balmain, Damon and Athol all had serious injuries, especially Damon and Athol, who looked like they were on the brink of death.

The old supervisor agreed and ran out of the garden.

On the other hand, Debbie was tightly hugging onto Ye Chui's arm, as though her petite body was totally leaning onto him. If it was not for the 50kg great sword at her back, the scene of her hugging Ye Chui would be more perfect...

Beastman warrior Athol sat on the ground with his entire body covered in blood. Although it might seem that his condition was very serious, he was still smiling with his fangs protruded; as though he had managed to narrowly escape death. The look of him smiling definitely had an interesting feel to it...

Damon was lying on one side of his body and seemed to have sustained serious injuries as well, but Balmain and Alfea had already treated his wounds appropriately, so it would not be an issue for him to survive.

At this point in time, Balmain was simultaneously taking care of Damon's injuries and suggesting to Alfea, “Lady Alfea, Damon had performed well and displayed exceptional character in the adventure. So, I propose for Damon to join the City Lord's Guard. Is this agreeable with you?”

“I agree!” Alfea nodded her head in agreement without any hesitation. It was obvious that she was pleased with Damon’s performance in the adventure. She suddenly thought of something and turned her head towards Guthem. Of the entire team, Guthem could possibly be the one with the least injuries. His red battle armour did not have any visible damage to it, although there were some insignificant scratches.

When the few of them were trapped in the inner hall previously, everyone chose to challenge the puppet Swordsman in the next check in attempt to escape; this was all except for Guthem, who gave up immediately at the first check. This was sufficient to allow Alfea to see his true colours and made her look at him in disdain.

Similarly, Alfea also saw the true colours of Oberth, the son of the Magician Guild Master. During the adventure, Oberth acted as though he was an absolute idiot, making Alfea suspect the origin of his ‘genius Magician’ title. When comparing Ye Chui, the level two Magician, and Oberth, the difference was akin to Heaven and Hell.

[Hammer got it right – one of them is a coward, while the other is an idiot.]

Guthem and Oberth obviously did not notice Alfea’s disdainful gaze towards them. Due to the fact that they escaped death, they were both agitated and elated at the same time. Guthem even had the cheek to order the servants to bring some food and water for him.



On the other hand, Oberth got the servants to inform his father to come over.

Debbie and Ye Chui sat on a stone bench in the garden to converse. At that moment, Ye Chui suddenly felt something and tilted his head upwards to the sky. The clock struck noon and the blazing sun was beating down mercilessly onto the earth. Within the blinding sunlight, a black spot appeared suddenly out of nowhere. That black spot grew in size, before Ye Chui realised that it was actually a person, as he cursed and swore.

It was a well-built man wearing a suit of soft armour.

His presence was accompanied by a powerful impact as he landed on the ground of the garden. The impact literally shattered the blue stone ground in an instant, forming a vein mark across the ground. As the servants of the garden saw it, they had their hearts in their mouths.

“Father!” Alfea shouted in joy and hurriedly leaped into the embrace of that person. At this instant, Alfea was no longer a young genius Swordsman, but a spoilt little girl.

In actuality, Ye Chui and Debbie had already known that although this City Lord’s Young Lady looked mature in their daily interactions with her, she still had an immature instincts within her.

“Alfea, you’re finally back. After I realised that there were some problems with Doria’s tomb, I almost went to the auction market

and destroyed the place! The key to the ancient tomb was sold by them. If anything untoward happened to you, how can I carry on living?" On the coarse face of this mature man was a pair of teary eyes which revealed his invulnerable and gentle side.

Everyone else at the scene stood silently as they watched this touching scene.

This well-built man, named Eric, is Alfea's father and a level nine Swordsman; he is also the strongest Swordsman in the whole of Stan City. But for now, he is a simple father, only worried for his daughter.

For a moment, the atmosphere of the garden suddenly became very solemn.

Debbie rubbed her small nose with some force, as she leaned on Ye Chui's shoulder and wept, "Hammer, I miss my father..."

Ye Chui lightly patted Debbie's head and tried to comfort her, but was unsure of what to say to her.

After some time, Eric reluctantly loosened his tight embrace, after realising that Alfea's cheeks were turning rosy. He then scanned the people who were at the scene.

There were several specialist doctors in the City Lord's Manor; and these doctors were tasked to treat the wounds on Damon, Balmain and Athol's bodies. Eric's gaze suddenly focused on

Guthem. Compared to the pathetic state of the others in the adventure team, Guthem's suit of red armour was a little too eye-catching.

"City Lord..." When Guthem made eye contact with Eric, his heart skipped a beat, as he politely addressed Eric.

"Why do you have the least injuries? Don't tell me that you were hiding behind the backs of the others while they were engaged in the battle." Eric asked with a stern voice.

"Err... Of course not. Actually..." Guthem attempted to explain.

"What audacity!" Eric's berated loudly.

Following Eric's words, the fallen leaves in the garden were swept off the ground. And for a particular dryandra tree at the side, all its leaves seemed to have fallen, as they floated in the air in a random fashion. The servants of the garden had their faces turn pale again as the thought of clearing up the fallen leaves flashed past their minds. At the same time, an incomparable imposing aura exuded from Eric's body, as he swung his sword towards Guthem, who was standing more than three metres away.

Clang!

Guthem did not have the means to resist Eric's attack. As he let out a desperate cry, his suit of red armour immediately shattered into countless pieces. Furthermore, the impact of the strike made

him fall backwards involuntarily onto an ornament with a loud thud, as the ornament split into several pieces as well. Once again, the faces of the servants turned pale again.

Ye Chui stared wide-eyed at this scene, as he felt revenge being exacted on such a useless teammate. In his heart, Ye Chui was in awe of Eric's actions. [This is the might of a level nine Swordsman! If the owner of the ancient tomb, who is also a level nine Swordsman, can challenge the Sword Master, then he must be even stronger than the strongest Swordsman of Stan City... if that ghost puppet possessed all the skills of the level nine Swordsman, I wouldn't be able to even pass a single round!]

# Chapter 72 – Are You Certain That You’re A Level Two Magician?

---

Despite Eric being extremely furious, the punishment meted out to Guthem was not considered fatal, instead it was rather lenient. Seeing Guthem still gasping for precious air as he was being carried away, Ye Chui felt a sense of regret.

Ye Chui hated Guthem to the core.

Through the experiences he went through in the previous world as a hacker, Ye Chui had an in-depth understanding of people’s character. During the ancient tomb adventure, both Guthem and Oberth displayed the most despicable side of themselves, causing others to look at them with disdainful gazes after the escape. However, both of them would never reveal their despicable side to Ye Chui, especially since they had lowered their statuses and begged him, an unimportant person, to save their lives. Hence, they now harbored a great sense of hatred towards him.

Although Ye Chui understood this concept, he was not prepared to let Guthem and Oberth off the hook just like this. Unfortunately, Eric only dealt with Guthem leniently, but for Oberth... Despite Eric knowing Oberth’s lackluster performance in the ancient tomb, he did not know how to deal with him, since Oberth is, after all, the son of the Magician Guild Master.

The City Lord’s Manor, as well as the Magician Guild, were considered as the two largest influences in Stan City that maintained peace and stability in the city.

After Guthem was carried away, Eric led everyone to the City Lord's Manor Hall, so as to allow everyone to treat their wounds and recuperate, as well as to inquire more about the experiences they had in the ancient tomb.

Balmain truthfully narrated the process of the adventure in detail, and had great praise for Ye Chui.

Eric, the City Lord, was starting to have a good impression of Ye Chui, as he complimented Ye Chui several times consecutively. Eric's compliments of Ye Chui made Oberth's expression change. Oberth was supposed to be the Magician in the team, while Ye Chui was in the adventure just because he is an Enchanting Master, but Ye Chui managed to rescue everyone in the end with his status as a Magician...

Although Oberth did not get many criticisms due to his status as the Magician Guild Master's son, he could still feel that the people around him looked at him in an inexplicable gaze of derision.

Oberth had originally asked a servant to inform his father to come over, but he could not remain in this situation any longer. So, he directly excused himself from Eric, "Uncle Eric, I believe that my father is anxiously waiting for my news. So, I guess I'll make a move first."

"Sure, you better leave first. I have asked my chefs to prepare for the banquet to celebrate Alfea's homecoming. But since you're going to leave, I shan't invite you to the banquet later on." Eric

said with an indifferent expression.

Oberth stared blankly at Eric. Although Eric was polite with his choice of words, it was obvious that he was biased against Oberth, since he did not even attempt to retain Oberth from dinner. Despite feeling frustrated, Oberth did not dare to be dissolute and left the hall with his head hanging low.

Eric snorted softly, implicitly expressing his displeasure with Oberth.

On the other hand, Debbie used her elbow to nudge Ye Chui at his chest, as she said heartily, “Hammer, Hammer, did you hear that?”

“Hear what?” Ye Chui looked at Debbie with a peculiar expression.

“We’ll get to enjoy a feast for lunch. The standard of the food here in City Lord’s Manor is said to be much higher than that of Moran Flower Restaurant.” Debbie said with anticipation.

“...”

The banquet held at the City Lord’s Manor was indeed sumptuous, and the dishes were much more delicious than that of Moran Flower Restaurant. Many of the dishes featured in the banquet included specially-selected magic beast meat, which contains subtle magic power and is extremely nutritious. Ordinary

people who eat such meat would be able to attain strong and healthy bodies, while Swordsmen could improve their constitution and expand their boundaries. Most importantly, the taste of the meat was indescribable.

Moran Flower Restaurant, the largest restaurant in Stan City, might not even have dishes that featured magic beast meat on the menu all the time, but for the City Lord's Manor, magic beast meat is used daily in many dishes. This was because the City Lord's Guards would patrol around Stan City every month, thus clearing all the magical beasts that existed within the boundaries of the city. Furthermore, it was common for the City Lord's Guards to hunt down several magic beasts each time, of which the City Lord's Manor was able to retain most of it to be used for daily cooking.

“Debbie, you can come along with me the next time the City Lord's Guards conduct a patrol. By then, I will give a portion of our hunt to you as a symbol of gratitude for participating in the ancient tomb adventure.” Sitting next to Debbie at the dining table and having noticed that Debbie enjoyed eating magic beast meat, Alfea laughingly suggested.

Although it may seem like this adventure yielded no rewards, Ye Chui and Debbie could be considered as the greatest beneficiaries from it.

Ye Chui inherited a set of formidable fighting styles and a precious intelligent life, while Debbie forged a deep friendship with the City Lord's daughter, Alfea. After spending good and bad times in the stone chamber, Alfea and Debbie could now be



considered as good sisters.

“Sure, sure.” Debbie nodded her head in fluster, as she spoke while still chewing on her food. She then picked several pieces of meat and put in on Ye Chui’s plate. Seeing the pile of meat on his plate, Ye Chui revealed a helpless expression. [I’m not even certain if this meat is beneficial for me. The only thing I know is that I would be damn bloated if I shoved all of these into my stomach...]

Debbie suddenly thought of another important and said to Alfea in an awkward tone, “But Alfea, I’m just a level two Swordsman, won’t I be a burden if I go patrolling with you all?”

Patrolling is the mission of the City Lord’s Guards, and one must at least be a level four Swordsman to qualify for the position as a City Lord Guard.

Upon hearing Debbie’s words, Alfea laughed uncontrollably, “You’re really a silly girl. After this adventure, how can your skills still be at the standard of a level two Swordsman? You must know that you’ve been battling alongside me all the while, and I have a premonition that you’re at least a level, three Swordsman, now. You might even be a level four Swordsman, who knows? When you return, you can go to the Swordsman Guild to test your swordsmanship.”

Hearing Alfea’s words, Debbie’s small face revealed a stunned expression, as she said in an excited tone, “Alfea, are you being serious?”

“Of course,” Alfea assured Debbie. When Alfea saw Ye Chui concentrating on conquering the pile of magic beast meat in front of him, she burst out in perspiration, “And Hammer, are you certain that you’re a level two Magician?”

Balmain and Athol, who were sitting on the opposite side of the dining table, looked at Ye Chui with curiosity. If Damon was not severely injured and had joined in the feast, he would have looked at Ye Chui with the same gaze.

Ye Chui’s performance in the ancient tomb did not resemble that of a level two Magician.

Even Eric stared at Ye Chui with a curious look.

Upon having eye contact with everyone, Ye Chui blushed, “I’m not exactly sure what level am I at as a Magician. I’ll take a test to confirm my level when I get back to the Magician Guild.”

Actually, Ye Chui lied. He was extremely clear that his capabilities have definitely reached the standard of a level three Magician, but was not yet at the standard of a level four Magician. However, if based on his knowledge of magic theory, as well as his control of various magic spells, Ye Chui could have already reached the standard of an advanced Magician. However, the level at which a Magician is assigned is not entirely based on these two aspects.

The rating of a Magician not only depends on the magic knowledge the Magician has but also the nature of his or her spiritual power.

The nature of spiritual power varies largely from that of an elementary Magician, an intermediate Magician, and an advanced Magician.

The biggest difference in spiritual power between elementary Magicians and intermediate Magicians is that intermediate Magicians could release their spiritual power to explore the outside world, while elementary Magicians were unable to do that.

Unfortunately, Ye Chui's spiritual power and magic power was considered one of the worst among Magicians. To become an intermediate Magician, he must transform his spiritual power. This could not be easily done just by theory alone but was also dependent on his talent. In the traceable history, there were few people with Ye Chui's Magician intelligence who managed to become an intermediate Magician.

Of course, Ye Chui was not discouraged due to that reason.

He still had the determination of the 'Father of Studies'.

# Chapter 73 – Iron Swordsman’s Middle Man

---

On the Aigen-Dazs Continent, the cultivation of Magicians can be classified into three main categories – the Ordinary Realm, the Specialist Realm and the Divine Realm.

‘Elementary Magician’, ‘Intermediate Magician’ and ‘Advanced Magician’ are specific terms assigned to various Magicians who belong to the Ordinary Realm.

Magicians in the Ordinary Realm, unfortunately, know only the basics of magic. Most of these Magicians spend their entire lives struggling to attain a breakthrough to the Specialist Realm, not to mention reach the Divine Realm.

Magicians who lack greatly in magic talent, such as Ye Chui, would normally remain as Elementary Magicians for their entire lives.

Each of the elementary, intermediate and advanced ranks within that of the Ordinary Realm can be further categorised into three sublevels. To promote oneself from a lower level to that of a higher level requires the knowledge of magic and the comprehension of magic spells. For example, To get promoted from a level one Magician to a level two Magician, one will only need to learn more magic knowledge and spells. In addition, the assigning of levels is purely determined by a test at the Magician Guild.

As for the promotion of a lower rank to a higher rank; one would need to have a significant transformation in their own spiritual

power. For example, for someone to get promoted from a level three Magician to a level four Magician, they will also need to grasp a deeper level of magic knowledge in addition to their own talent for magic. Unfortunately, it would not be easy for Ye Chui to transform his spiritual power based on his magic talent. Even if, he has the ability to defeat those level six Magicians by his magic knowledge, he is still a level three Magician after all.

However, Ye Chui was not discouraged because of that. In his perspective as the ‘Father of Studies’, there is no such thing as a bottleneck and he will eventually find the means to breakthrough his level as a Magician.

The banquet at the City Lord’s Manor soon came to an end.

Ye Chui and the others had not changed out of their torn and tattered clothes; this included Alfea, who was still wearing her blood-stained armour. However, no one was actually bothered by their current state of dress, as City Lord Eric did not enforce any formal dress code for this banquet.

When Alfea was narrating how the formidable and intelligent Iron Swordsman was, and how he coordinated with her and Debbie during the battle Within the stone chamber, Eric let out a few loud robust laughs while holding a wine glass in his hand. “Who exactly is this Iron Swordsman? I’d like to meet this person. Hearing from Alfea, it’s interesting that he learnt all the fighting styles of the puppet Swordsman. He seems to be an interesting character!”

“It’s a pity that he seemed unwilling to interact with us. I’m

afraid it'll be hard to arrange a meeting with him, father." Alfea shook her head and spoke in a disappointing tone.

Ye Chui, who was sitting beside Alfea at the dining table, spoke out as his heart skipped a beat, "Actually... I know of a way to contact him."

"What?" Alfea hurriedly looked towards Ye Chui with her eyes lit up. She then grabbed onto Ye Chui's shoulders, "Hammer, are you serious?"

"Yes..." Sensing that this lady's reaction was a little strange, he continued to explain, "When he was leaving the ancient tomb, I had a brief interaction with him at the stone chamber. He then requested that I become his middle man and said that you can look for him through me."

Lady Alfea suddenly shouted in an crazed tone, "I want to find him now!"

Noticing Alfea's strange response, Ye Chui gathered his own thoughts and hurriedly coughed to get her attention. "That can't be done Miss Alfea. The Iron Swordsman mentioned to me that he needs to focus on his training. If there is nothing of great importance, I'd like to not contact him.... He is a very busy man after all. Unless... there are any potentially lucrative expeditions that turn up."

"So that's why..." Alfea replied in a desolate manner but very quickly, her mood changed, displaying a smile as she continued.

“That’s alright. I will wait for another opportunity to do an adventure. By that time, I will certainly invite him to join. That’s right! In a few days’ time, I must lead a patrol around Stan City. I was wondering if Iron Swordsman is interested in participating.”

“This... Well, I’ll have to ask him first.” Ye Chui nodded. Alfea had invited Debbie to participate in the patrol earlier; apparent that the little girl is interested to join, Ye Chui felt the need to join as well to protect her. Going in disguised as the Iron Swordsman would make matters simple for him.

After the feast ended, the couple (Ye Chui and Debbie) left the City Lord’s Manor.

Alfea had specially arranged for a carriage to have Debbie and Ye Chui privately transported back home. However, before they left, Alfea had invited Debbie over once again. She wishes to exchange notes with her fellow friend at the same time, she also wished for Ye Chui to tag along; so that she could draw out some information as to find a method to directly contact the Iron Swordsman.

When the carriage was travelling to Anthony’s Magic Cottage, Debbie seemed filled with a warm comfort as she looked at Ye Chui’s face. However, at that very moment; Ye Chui was struggling to maintain a nonchalant expression as he bore the weight of the 50kg great sword leaning on him.

“Debbie... I have something to say to you...” Ye Chui suddenly opened his mouth to speak. Naturally, the topic he wished to discuss about was nothing to do with the 50kg sword but to do with his alter ego, the Iron Swordsman. Back inside the stone

chamber, there were numerous times were Ye Chui wished to talk about this matter to Debbie. However, it was not a matter that could be brought out easily, especially when the girl herself was trying to avoid him while Alfea was pestering him.

But now, it was the perfect opportunity to finally come clean. “About the Iron Swordsman...”

“Do not! Talk about the Iron Swordsman with me!” Hearing the plague of his name, Debbie immediately became mad, “That old Sex Maniac wanted to corrupt me!”

Ye Chui became speechless. [Did I do something like that?]

“...” Ye Chui tried to process the events that occurred in his mind but as words tried to come out, he found himself merely licking his lips.

Debbie extended her small hands and clenched her fist. With an enraged tone, she spoke, “Just wait until I find out his true identity! Hmmp! How dare he lay his lustful eyes on me! After looking at him for a few seconds, I already knew he wasn’t a good person! But don’t worry! I’m a fair person. On the account that he saved my life, I allowed him to escape. I must make him pay for looking at me in such an absurd manner the next time we meet! When the time comes, I will make sure to show him the might of my great sword and ensure that he turns into a pulp! That’s right... Hammer... Sorry for being carried away... What do you wish to tell me?”



“Nothing... Nothing important...” Ye Chui spoke as cold sweat appeared on his forehead.

Debbie stared at Ye Chui in an awkward fashion. However, even if one had the best imagination in this world, they would still be unable to piece the relation of the Iron Swordsman with Ye Chui. Therefore, Debbie only foolishly giggled as she placed her small head on Ye Chui shoulder, snuggling it.

At this moment, Ye Chui understood that he could not breathe a word of his identity as the Iron Swordsman to Debbie.

Finally, the carriage stopped in front of Anthony’s Magic Cottage.

Both Debbie and Ye Chui departed from the vehicle and thanked the chauffeur who drove them there. It was only after the vehicle left the vicinity, that they arrived behind the yard’s back door. When they had just slightly pushed the door open, they were shocked by their first thing they saw.

Oberth!? who was wearing a brand-new magician gown, stood in anticipation of their return at the courtyard.

# Chapter 74 – That Kind Of Worthless Garbage

---

Upon witnessing the unexpected scene of Oberth standing in their courtyard, Ye Chui and Debbie had a similar subconscious thought. [How dare this idiot appear at our house?!]

Debbie immediately brandished her 50kg great sword in front of her face, while Ye Chui pulled out his magic wand from his waist. At the same time, Ye Chui opened up his magic gown and revealed the abundance of magic scrolls that were hidden on the interior of his magic gown, as he gave Oberth a cold vitriolic stare.

“Calm down.” Oberth hurriedly raised both his hands up, “I just want to make a business deal with you. I’ve no other intentions.”

“You must be joking. Why would you barge into our house? When you’re here just to discuss a business deal?!” Debbie spoke in a vigilant manner.

“I had just arrived, and realizing that the door wasn’t locked when I pushed it, I just let myself in...” Oberth tried to sound friendly.

Debbie furrowed her brows as she spoke, “Excuses! Do you think we’d forget to lock the door when we left our home!?” After Debbie spoke, she then turned to Ye Chui and said in a hushed confidential tone, “Did you forget to lock the door when we came out of the house yesterday?”

Ye Chui, "... I don't think so. What about you?"

"... I don't think so too."

Debbie's face started to turn red with embarrassment, but she decided to put on an assertive front that she and Ye Chui locked the door. She then shouted at Oberth in an indifferent tone, "What exactly were you planning to do?"

During the adventure, Oberth's hatred towards Ye Chui was prominent for all to see; and now, Oberth had stepped on Debbie's tail incurring her wrath.

Oberth's facial expression started to turn pale, but he tolerated Debbie's attitude towards him and said, "You guys have really misunderstood my intentions. I'm really here to discuss a business deal with you... I'd like to purchase the magic crystal which Hammer obtained from the Magician Guild Hall!"

"A magic crystal?!" Debbie and Ye Chui were dumbstruck.

Debbie frowned yet again, "You must be joking... How is that kind of worthless garbage worth your precious time to come down to discuss with us?"

[That kind of worthless garbage...]

Oberth's eyelids started twitching furiously. [That magic crystal is obviously very valuable. How can she say that it is a worthless garbage?] He felt slightly light headed, but tried to maintain his smile, "Since you said the magic crystal is worthless, Then you do not have any reason to reject this business deal!" Oberth fished out a coin pouch from his magic gown and shook it, making cling, cling sounds. He then continued, "Name your price for the magic crystal."

Ye Chui frowned and glanced at the coin pouch, before saying to Debbie in a low voice, "What do you think?"

"I'm certain that the coin pouch contains gold coins," Debbie said in a serious tone.

Ye Chui, "..."

[Forget it. I can't help it that I'm stuck with this greedy lady.] Ye Chui then looked at Oberth and said, "It seems like this magic crystal is very valuable?"

Oberth lightly nodded his head, "The magic crystal is very important to me, just ask for how much you want!"

Ye Chui deeply pondered. Ye Chui was not an idiot, in fact, he had long ago sensed that there was something peculiar about that magic crystal. Furthermore, the spiritual imprints of 32 magic symbols stored within it, as well as some space magic-related articles were definitely priceless treasures. He had suspected for a long time that the origins of these items were extraordinary... It's

simply not possible that I accidentally obtained these items?

Ye Chui's mind slightly wavered; he had completely comprehended all the magic symbols stored within the magic crystal and had a relatively good understanding of all the magic matrices. The only thing he had not grasped was the several space magic related articles. However, all of these items could be duplicated easily. As for the magic crystal at the center of the Iron Swordsman that operated its entire system. Ye Chui had obtained a high-grade 1.5GB storage in the ancient tomb. Therefore, Ye Chui had no use for the magic crystal right now.

Ye Chui did not have any favorable impression of Oberth. He had wanted to get rid of this enemy of his at the right time., but since Oberth sent himself to his doorstep it made things much easier for Ye Chui.

Hence, Ye Chui's eyes lit up. As he looked at Oberth, he said, "I can make a deal with you, but I have no need for your gold coins."

"Then what do you want?" Oberth frowned in uncertainty. [Does this lad want to seize this opportunity to join the Magician Guild?]

"I would like to exchange my magic crystal for magic stones." Ye Chui said laughingly.

"Magic stones?" Oberth was surprised at his response.

"That's right. I want high-grade magic stones." Ye Chui

confirmed. The ancient tomb adventure made Ye Chui fully utilize the magic stone which he obtained from Busca's space ring; while the other magic stone obtained from the puppet Swordsman didn't have much power left. Hence, Ye Chui urgently needed to get a new one.

Oberth's eyes lit up all of a sudden. Magic stones were easily obtainable from the Magician Guild. Although high-grade ones are very expensive, Oberth definitely had a way to lay his hands on them. He then replied, "How many do you want?"

"Hmm ..."

Ye Chui was actually prepared to request for five magic stones, but after some careful deliberation, he estimated that one magic stone would cost around 50 gold coins, which meant five magic stones would cost around 250 gold coins. If he were to convert it to the currency from his previous world, it would cost around 2.5 million dollars, which was considered a huge amount of money. However, seeing Oberth heave a sigh of relief when Ye Chui said he wanted five magic stones, he immediately added a few more words, "... Can never be enough. I want at least ten of those."

"Ten" Oberth felt his heart skip a beat as he revealed an awkward expression on his face.

"Hammer, what do you want the magic stones for? It's not as valuable as gold coins." Debbie was perplexed about Ye Chui's decision.

“Iron Swordsman requires these magic stones. Having these magic stones would enable the Iron Swordsman to help us in times of need.” Ye Chui hastily reasoned with Debbie.

Hearing the name ‘Iron Swordsman’, Debbie let out a snort, expressing her displeasure, although she did not say anything.

On the other hand, Oberth finally ended his deliberation and nodded his head, “All right, I’ll give you ten magic stones, but I’ll need three days!”

There were not many high-grade magic stones in the whole of Stan City and the only place which has stock of it was the Magician Guild. The magic stone obtained from Busca’s space ring was only possible due to careful planning and execution. He had actually planned to bribe the Magician Guild with this, as it could be used as an activation for a large-scale magic array. There was a large-scale defensive magic array that surrounded Stan City, which helped to keep out magic beasts which may invade the city from the dark forest. However, since the establishment of this magic array tens of years ago, it had never been activated.

The magic stones stored at the Magician Guild were merely used for the daily armed forces preparation and were rarely used on a daily basis. As the son of the Magician Guild Master, Oberth could easily get in contact with those magic stones...

Ten high-grade magic stones were worth at least 500 gold coins, which Oberth would have never had. But it was a piece of cake for him to acquire ten magic stones instead!

Hence, Oberth ‘sold’ the safety of the residents of Stan City just like that.

...

cough...cough Following Guthem’s coughing, fresh red blood spilled out of his mouth. His face revealed the intolerable pain he was experiencing, of which a tinge of hatred and wickedness could be seen from his expression. Guthem definitely did not have the guts to confront the City Lord who had beaten him up, but instead, he channeled all his hatred towards Ye Chui. Guthem was still harbouring his hatred towards Ye Chui, who had caused him great humiliation in front of so many people.

“Brother, how are you?” Guthem’s younger brother, Great Swordsman Bolton, stood at his bedside with a face of worry.

“Don’t worry, the City Lord knows the impact with which he hath dealt me. My injuries are not fatal, but I will need at least ten days to half a month to recuperate.” Guthem said in an indifferent tone, “But continuing to stay in Stan City is no longer possible. When I fully recover, I’ll take you along and leave this city. Of course, before leaving this place, I have to settle some unfinished business with that insufferable magician first.”



# Chapter 75 – Would He Become A Retard After Consuming Too Much Power?

---

Night had fallen.

While Ye Chui was resting in his room within Anthony's Magic Cottage, he took out the Iron Swordsman suit from the space ring and laid it on his bed.

After the ancient tomb adventure, the originally-shiny battle armour now had much more scratches and dents all over it, especially the left shoulder plate of the armour which was damaged more severely compared to other spots. Furthermore, some of the enchanting magic matrices had problems, but fortunately, they were not difficult to repair. With the help of Dove, the Dwarf, the enchanting magic matrices could be repaired in merely a few days.

Ye Chui carefully removed the magic crystal from the helmet of the armour, before replacing the magic crystal with the one obtained from the ancient tomb. Ye Chui also removed the magic crystal located at the chest of the armour, which had its magic power depleted, and then replaced it with another magic crystal which he obtained from the puppet Swordsman. Although this magic crystal did not have much magic power left, it could still maintain the operations of this armour suit for some time.

After installing the magic crystals into the respective locations within the armour, the silver vein marks of the Iron Swordsman armour lit up. This indication gave Ye Chui a sense that the machine was about to start up. Thereafter, the armour stood up in

a clumsy method – the brain operating the armour was none other than Jarvis.

Jarvis walked around the room in a swaying fashion. Jarvis' child-like voice teased Ye Chui, "Master, the operating system of your armour is too simple, unlike the puppet Swordsman I controlled in the stone chamber, which had a sophisticated operating system. The puppet Swordsman had its power supplied by lightning element magic."

"I haven't learned such profound magic theory yet, but I'll try to upgrade the operating system of this armour in the future." Ye Chui said as he took a few steps back to size up the armour suit.

Jarvis then looked at Ye Chui with an empty gaze, as though sizing him up as well, "Master, what are you looking at?"

"What a cool-looking armour suit." Ye Chui nodded his head as he commented, "Wearing this armour suit does indeed make me look like a suave hero."

Jarvis suddenly became interested as well. He brandished his long sword from his waist and struck a pose, "Master, let me strike another even cooler pose for you."

Ye Chui, "..."

Seeing Jarvis striking several poses consecutively with no intention of stopping, Ye Chui instantly knew that this intelligent

life was slightly narcissistic. Ye Chui then interrupted his pose-striking, “Impressive, impressive. Alright quickly stop now the magic crystal has doesn’t have much magic power left. It is necessary to save up some of it for later.”

After keeping the armour suit back into the space ring, Ye Chui took out the magic crystal obtained from the Magician Guild and allowed his consciousness to enter.

Previously in the ancient tomb, Ye Chui deleted a portion of the items stored within the magic crystal in order to translate a magic program for the twelve fighting styles; and now, he had to delete the magic program that he translated. The attainment of Jarvis was equivalent to Ye Chui inheriting all twelve fighting styles of the level nine Swordsman and his experience in applying those fighting styles. Therefore, the magic program which Ye Chui translated was no longer useful.

However, Ye Chui felt a little lost after looking at the empty interior of the magic crystal which had become empty after erasing all of the magic items stored inside of it. The thirty-two magic symbol spiritual imprints previously took up the most space within the magic crystal and could not be restored by Ye Chui; given his level of skills. After pondering for some time, Ye Chui felt that the empty magic crystal was not a big deal.

Ye Chui’s eyes lit up suddenly, as he jumped onto his bed and flipped the pages of the Aigen-Dazs Continent encyclopedia to a random one before he started reading. Superficially, Ye Chui seemed like he was reading the encyclopedia, but in actuality, he was inputting the spiritual imprints of the magic symbols into the

space ring.

He merely needed a look at the images of the encyclopedia before he was able to use his spiritual power to duplicate a copy of it and store it within his space ring.

Fragmented Memory Inputting, was the method he used this method saved lots of trouble but the downside was it took up storage space.

Of course, due to the fact that Ye Chui did not have high spiritual power, his memory could become fuzzy at any moment and he would have a hard time differentiating between each one. However, this was not Ye Chui's concern...

Due to the relation between the contents of the magic crystal and space magic, Ye Chui deliberately flipped to the pages with articles on space magic and duplicating them into the magic crystal.

Within the hour, Ye Chui filled up the space inside the magic crystal with memory fragments.

These things took up most of the space within the magic crystal, leaving only a tiny bit of space for useful knowledge, in addition to some biographical material about the space magic's master.

After completing this task, Ye Chui felt a little tired. Furthermore, the whole day spent at the ancient tomb consumed most of his energy.

\*\*\*\*\*

Three days passed in a flash.

\*\*\*\*\*

At noon, Oberth sneakily arrived at the backyard of Anthony's Magic Cottage. He had a face of excitement as he passed a box to Ye Chui, "Here are the high-grade magic stones you wanted. Now where's my magic crystal?"

Upon opening the box he received from Oberth, Ye Chui was met with two rows of blue magic stones. Each one was full of magic power, Ye Chui reached out to sense the quality of these magic stones and confirmed that each of these magic stones was priceless.

Each magic stone was able to support the operations of the Iron Swordsman suit for a long time. With these magic stones, Ye Chui did not have to worry about running out of magic power when dealing with some small beasts in the near future.

Ye Chui nodded his head; and while Debbie was busy attending to customers in the shop, he put the magic stones into his space ring, before passing a magic crystal to Oberth.

Oberth was ecstatic as he received the magic crystal from Ye Chui's hands.

After the level nine Magician placed this magic crystal into the mirror, Oberth took forever to retrieve it, so he was very familiar with this very magic crystal.

Of course, Oberth was not that gullible. After receiving the magic crystal, he did a physical examination on it, before allowing his consciousness to enter the magic crystal.

“Ehh? What is this? It seems like it’s some spiritual imprints?”

Oberth very soon discovered that the interior of the magic crystal was filled with spiritual imprints. After opening these spiritual imprints, he saw fuzzy images, which were exactly the space-related articles obtained from the encyclopedia.

Oberth tried his hardest to concentrate his spiritual power. After some time of trying, he only managed to make out the outline of the words. It was at that time that he experienced an inexplicable sense of exhaustion. He then thought in his heart. [Why would the magic crystal have these stored in it? I get it! It must be used by the level nine Magician to train his spiritual power. Excellent, what an excellent method. Maybe among these items are some profound knowledge regarding space magic. As long as I read all of it from the start to end, I would learn many new things! Furthermore, besides spiritual imprints, there are even some space-related articles stored in it!]

While Oberth was examining the magic crystal, Ye Chui was busy examining Oberth’s facial expression. Upon seeing Oberth’s excited expression, he knew that Oberth, this idiot Magician, did not find out that he modified the magic crystal. Ye Chui then

heaved a sigh of relief.

“Excellent. This is indeed the magic crystal that I was looking for.” Soon, Oberth took back his spiritual power from the magic crystal with happiness expressed all over his face, “Hammer, I hope you can keep this a secret. Don’t let the secret of the magic crystal be leaked out...”

“Rest assured I won’t tell others about it.” Ye Chui laughed.

Ye Chui’s laughter suddenly made Oberth’s heart feel slightly uncomfortable. [If I had this magic crystal earlier, I’d be able to show off during the ancient tomb adventure. And I’d be able to decipher the <Earth Cage> magic matrix in the inner hall easily.]

Oberth definitely did not want anyone to know about the secret of the magic crystal. Furthermore, with Ye Chui and Debbie gaining favour with Alfea, Oberth could not lay his hands on them for the time being...

[Hmmp. I’ll let you do as you please for a little longer. With this magic crystal, I can now become the disciple of the level nine Magician. When that time comes, I’ll find a way to destroy you, you piece of shit.]

Oberth snorted in his heart, before bidding farewell to Ye Chui and leaving the backyard.

Seeing Oberth’s silhouette fade into the distance, Ye Chui

pondered over some things. [Would Oberth become a retard if he consumed too much of his spiritual power while attempting to unravel the mysteries of the spiritual imprints I left behind in the magic crystal?]



## Chapter 76 – I Can Now Kill You With Ease

---

“Uncle Dove, you repaired it so quickly?” In the small alley behind Cara’s Magic Cottage, Ye Chui stared at his brand-new armor suit in excitement. The battle armor, which was severely damaged, now looked completely new, even the left shoulder pad that was damaged by the puppet Swordsman seemed as though it was just manufactured from a factory.

His craftsmanship left Ye Chui awestruck.

“Do you think that I’m like any other ordinary human Blacksmith?” The Dwarf uncle questioned Ye Chui with a hint of boastfulness, as his unkempt beard swayed gently from the heat of the forge. Ye Chui noticed several small sparks on his beard and felt a little curious. [I have interacted with him many times and I’ve always seen small sparks attached to his beard. How is he even capable of maintaining such an exuberant beard?]

Ye Chui laughed to himself, before storing his repaired battle armour into his space ring. Dove would not charge Ye Chui any fee for repairing his armour, but he would definitely charge Ye Chui a huge sum if he wants to enchant the armour suit, no matter how good their relationship is. But fortunately for Ye Chui, he is now a qualified Enchanting Master and is able to repair the damaged enchanting arrays on his armour by himself.

After keeping the armour suit, Ye Chui took out a piece of folded blueprint from his space ring, “Uncle Dove, can you help me craft this?”

“What is this?” Dove received the blueprint from Ye Chui and examined it briefly. Dove’s expression turned serious all of a sudden, as he examined the blueprint in full detail his pupils dilated, “The structure of this thing is very interesting. Hmm... If I’m not wrong, this thing is activated using <Fire> magic matrix, but it can bring about great lethality. Intricate, this structure is indeed very intricate...” Dove raised his head and looked at Ye Chui, “Little boy, did you design this?”

Ye Chui nodded his head, “Uncle Dove, can you craft this thing for me?”

“The crafting of this kind of things, especially some intricate parts of the structure, can never be done by any ordinary human Blacksmith. But for a Dwarf Blacksmith, it’s a piece of cake.” Uncle Dove said with a smile of his face, “Give me a week and I’ll help you complete this design!” He rubbed his palms together and looked at Ye Chui with brightly lit eyes, “Little boy, I realize that you not only have the talent for enchanting, but you also have the gift for designing. Do have any interest in being my Blacksmith apprentice? I can guarantee that you’ll become a master of the human race in three years, and gain recognition from the Dwarf race in five years. Thereafter, you can enter the Holy Spirit Palace of the Dwarf race to study through meditation.”

“No, no...” Ye Chui’s face turned sullen all of a sudden. A scene of his small body carrying a huge iron hammer just did not seem appropriate to him. [Who ever saw a suave hero hammering something?] “I think I’ll persist in my route in becoming a Magician.”

“Ahh, what a pity.” Dove shook his head and let out a deep sigh. His eyes then continued to scan Ye Chui’s blueprint, as he let out some sound, “How did you, a small boy, come out with such a design? This structure only requires a magic stone to activate its great destructive force. Furthermore, ordinary humans can use it. If this thing was to be sold in the market, many Mercenaries would buy it without much thought.”

“Forget about the Mercenaries, this thing was created for Debbie; and only she has the right to use it. I don’t want the mercenaries to possess such a weapon.” Ye Chui laughed, “Of course, I’d like to design some other stuff to sell to the Mercenaries. You know, as the owner of a magic shop, this kind of thing would be very sellable. I’ll pass the blueprint to you the next time I come.”

“Haha, I’ll look forward to your next design.” Dove laughed heartily.

After completing what he had to do at Dove’s thatched hut, Ye Chui walked straight back to Anthony’s Magic Cottage. Ye Chui had actually left the house with Debbie earlier on, but they split ways at a small alleyway. While Ye Chui departed for Dove’s hut, Debbie went to the City Lord’s Manor to exchange battling tips with Alfea. For the past few days, Debbie had been preparing for her upcoming test to become a level, three Swordsman. Before sunrise every day, this little girl would be seen in the backyard of the house swinging her greatsword around, creating a buzzing sound. Although hard work was a virtue, Ye Chui had to sacrifice several sleepless nights due to Debbie...

Although Debbie had a petite stature, she had an extremely

competitive attitude. She even decided to join in the patrolling mission with Alfea in the near future. Despite Ye Chui participating in the patrolling mission as Iron Swordsman, he still could not help but fear the safety of Debbie. Therefore, he designed a powerful weapon for her. With that weapon, little Debbie's battling capabilities would be greatly increased.

“What should I eat for lunch when I get back? Maybe I should cook some noodles for myself. I should've gone with Debbie to the City Lords' Manor. Although Alfea will inquire about the method to contact Iron Swordsman, I'll still get to enjoy a wonderful lunch. Perhaps Debbie's actual purpose of visiting the City Lord's Manor is not to exchange battling tips, but to enjoy the delicious meal prepared for her... This greedy lady!”

Ye Chui mumbled to himself as he walked back to Anthony's Magic Cottage. Soon, he reached the main entrance of his house. He then pushed the door open and went in.

Just as Ye Chui walked to the middle of the courtyard, his brows knitted together. He then turned around to the scene of Guthem and Bolton standing at the door. At that instant, both of them closed the door shut behind them and let out a cold laughter.

It had been half a month since the end of the ancient tomb adventure. During this period, Guthem's wounds had completely healed. Guthem looked at Ye Chui with a sinister expression, as he grasped his long sword in his hands.

However, Ye Chui remained calm and smirked, “Debbie's at the City Lord's Manor right now.”

“Even if the City Lord rush over now, he won’t be able to save you. Killing a level two Magician is a piece of cake, you know that.” Guthem laughed indifferently, as he inched towards Ye Chui.

“You misunderstood me. I meant that Debbie isn’t around at the moment, so I can now kill you guys with ease.” Ye Chui responded in an sardonic tone.

Guthem froze for an instant, before breaking out in uncontrollable laughter, “Kill us? With your pathetic magic scrolls? Do you think we’ll fall into the same trap twice?”

As Guthem said these words, he and his silly younger brother, Bolton, prepared to lay their hands on Ye Chui.

“Hold on!”

At that critical instant, Ye Chui shouted.

“Do you have any last words?” Guthem licked his lips.

“Give me a minute.”

Ye Chui then dashed into his room at lightning speed and shut the door closed with a bang sound.

Guthem and Bolton naturally looked at each other, before

Guthem let out a mocking laughter, “Does he actually think that this little door can protect him from our attacks? What an idiot! Bolton, break the door.”

“Okay, elder brother.” Bolton walked towards Ye Chui’s room with an evil smile.

\*\*\*\*\*

Within the room.

\*\*\*\*\*

As soon as Ye Chui entered his room, he retrieved his Iron Swordsman suit from his space ring.

[Time for the transformation of Iron Swordsman!]

Ye Chui reminded himself in his heart. Then...

As Ye Chui squat on the ground, he started to wear the pieces of the armour suit piece by piece.

[Just wait till I research a way to wear this Iron Swordsman suit automatically!]

# Chapter 77 – Damn It, Let’s Fight!

---

Bang!

The Great sword pounded onto the wall with powerful impacts, causing half of the small cottage to collapse instantaneously and resulting in a thick layer of dust filling the air.

Bolton, who was grasping onto his Great sword, then laughed foolishly as he turned his head towards Guthem.

“I merely asked you to break the door, not to bring down the entire cottage!”

Guthem nearly flew into a rage, but then a thought popped into his mind.

[How can I have such a stupid younger brother, when I’m so intelligent?!]

At that moment, Bolton realized that he made a mistake and scratched his head with an innocent look. Upon seeing how his brother behaved, Guthem became even more furious.

Speaking with a curt tone, “Get to work! The collapse of the cottage will definitely attract attention from the public, so find that little rascal quickly!”

“Okay, big brother,” Bolton responded, he then rushed into the collapsed cottage with his great sword in his hand.

Just as Bolton was deliberating on the way to find Hammer from within the pile of bricks, a Swordsman in armour suit suddenly stood in front of him.

The Swordsman wore a sparkling silver-coloured armour, which had strange floral engravings. The floral engravings reflected dazzling light and an implicitly dreadful aura.

Guthem and Bolton were dumbstruck!

The moment they saw this Swordsman Guthem then questioned the Swordsman with several points of doubts, “Hammer?”

“No I’m the Iron Swordsman .” Hammer proclaimed with a bone-chilling tone.

Fortunately, Hammer was quick enough to put on his armour suit just before the cottage collapsed and that his armour suit was sturdy enough to withstand the collapse of the bricks, otherwise, he would have been buried under the debris.

Ye Chui then brandished his sword from his waist and pointed it towards Bolton and Guthem.

“Let’s fight!”



Ye Chui had originally prepared to keep the relationship between him and the Iron Swordsman a secret, but since the two of them already knew about the identity of the Iron Swordsman, their lives could not be spared.

Despite the appearance of the Iron Swordsman, Guthem and Bolton neither had their guards up nor felt scared, as they knew that it was a useless level two Magician who was inside the armour. .

[Does he think that he'll become more formidable when he puts on an armour suit? He should just focus on researching magic, instead of coming up with all this nonsense...]

Guthem let out a cold laughter, before dashing towards Hammer at lightning speed and striking him with his long sword.

Guthem's sword was not enchanted, but he had used all of his might in his attack. He understood that the collapse of the cottage had attracted attention from the public and that many people would be gathered here to spectate, so he had to finish Hammer off with this one strike. In his mind, he thought that even if Hammer's armour could withstand a portion of the impact, his strike would still be powerful enough to kill him.

Ye Chui dodged the attack with ease.

Simultaneously, Ye Chui brandished his sword in his hand, as he counter-attacked Guthem's wrist with a formidable strike,

Shiinnck!. Guthem's long sword almost slipped out of his hand.

Following that, Ye Chui swept his sword upwards with a zing!, as the <Wind Walk> magic matrix on his long sword lit up, providing strong support to Ye Chui's attack.

Guthem's bright red armour immediately shone brightly, but before he could steady himself; he involuntarily fell backward due to the powerful impact from Hammer's attacks which occurred in less than a second.

The entire scene seemed as if Guthem attempted to attack Hammer, but he missed, causing him to fly backward with his armour suit shining brightly.

Hammer's reaction speed was unbelievable.

In actuality, Guthem's armour suit had been enchanted with a defensive magic matrix, but who would have thought that he would have needed it when battling against a level two Magician?

Guthem had underestimated Hammer, he did not expect him to have any ability of defense against that fatal strike.

This oversight on his part caused him to attack Hammer using merely brute force, instead of any skill. Furthermore, he did not prepare any back-up move to deal with him, therefore allowing Hammer to counter strike.

The formidable impact of Ye Chui's strike resulted in Guthem's armour splitting open, revealing the clothes he wore underneath. His armour suit was thus condemned and the enchanting matrixes engraved on it can no longer be used.

On the other hand, the impact of Ye Chui's strike to Guthem's wrist left a painful sensation and Guthem could no longer grasp onto his long sword firmly.

How can Hammer's reaction time and strength be so good? It was impossible for Hammer to react so quickly and deal such powerful damage.

In reality,

The instant Guthem had struck towards him, He immediately activated fighting style number Five and counteracted Guthem's strike.

Slanting his body, and using the sword hilt to hit someone's wrist, and then slashing his sword upwards, as well as activating the <Wind Walk> on the sword during the attack were all operations controlled by Jarvis.

Not counting the time when Ye Chui battled with the puppet Swordsman in the ancient tomb. This was the first time Ye Chui battled someone under the identity of the Iron Swordsman.

"How is this possible..." Guthem looked at the damage done to

his armour with a dazed expression, as he could not believe his eyes. He then looked up and shouted at Bolton, “Don’t just stand there, kill him!”

Bolton immediately let out a loud cry, before dashing towards Ye Chui with his Great sword brandished in the air. His first move was a horizontal sweep towards Hammer.

Ye Chui immediately activated a fighting protocol and sprang into the air nimbly, backflipping. Thus dodging a forceful sweep from Bolton’s Great sword. He then landed on the ground with both his feet.

Creating some, Kerchak!Pffsh..sounds, as the debris below his feet, disintegrated upon impact.

Ye Chui once again launched an attack towards Bolton like a cannon; since Bolton could not defend himself due to the wielding of his greatsword, Ye Chui’s left shoulder slammed into Bolton’s chest, causing him to stumble and fall backward.

Ye Chui used this opportunity to steady himself.

He then leaped upwards with his long sword in hand, aimed the sword down and stabbed it into Bolton, who was lying on the ground.

In that instant. Simultaneously, the <Wind Walk> magic matrixes on his shoulders and back lit up, providing a large

propelling force.

Bolton virtually did not have any time to defend against Ye Chui's attack as the sharp tip of Ye Chui's long sword broke through his black iron armour suit and pierced directly into his heart.

This was the seventh fighting style out of the twelve, the consecutive series of moves did not give Bolton even a chance of defense.

As Ye Chui's longsword pierced into Bolton's chest, he let out a loud cry which faded systematically.

Unexpectedly, Ye Chui managed to kill Bolton in just one confrontation!

The powerful force dealt by Ye Chui was partially due to the supply of energy from the Iron Swordsman suit, and mostly due to the knowledge obtained from the twelve fighting styles of the level nine Swordsman. Any ordinary Swordsman in the Iron Swordsman suit would not have any chance of retaliating against Bolton's attacks.

“!Bolton?!”

Guthem stared wide-eyed at the horrific scene.

[My own brother died just like that? Although I've always felt

that he was dumb and was not worthy to be my brother, the kinship between both of us had been there all along.]

This younger brother of Guthem's had always gone along with his instructions and had been a great help to him. But now... Guthem's younger brother died in the hands of Hammer?

"It's you! You were the Iron Swordsman that appeared in the ancient tomb!" Guthem suddenly yelled at Ye Chui, as he recalled something out of the blue.

Ye Chui removed his long sword from Bolton's chest and aimed it towards Guthem, "Now, it's your turn."

Guthem stared at Hammer in a daze for a moment, before smiling in a callous and deranged manner.

Guthem grasped his sword with both his hands and crouched, while looking at Ye Chui with a pair of sinister eyes.

The scene right before Ye Chui's eyes made him recall the time when Carrey, Busca's son, was forced to adopt this skill. This skill is called <Protection of War God> and can only be used by intermediate Swordsmen.

This particular skill increases one's battling capabilities using lost boundary.

Guthem was already prepared to go all out in the battle with

Hammer. Although both Carrey and he were level four Swordsmen, his <Protection of War God> would be much more formidable than Carrey's.

Guthem's body started to burn with intermittent blue flames...

# Chapter 78 – Who Was It That Compelled You?

---

Gotham's entire body was engulfed in blue flames, he exhibited an immense formidable aura as he seemed like he was a death god who came from hell. He then stood up gradually and revealed a sinister smile. The blue flames which continued to rage from his eyes and mouth gave him a fierce and violent look. Moreover, he could feel a gush of strength rushing through his body.

Although the <Protection of War God> only provided temporary power, it made Guthem feel as though he was invincible for a short period of time. At that moment, Guthem viewed Ye Chui as a small ant, which he could easily trample on.

Guthem stared at Ye Chui with ice-cold eyes and aimed his long sword at him, as though he was staring at someone who did not have any chance of survival.

“You're dead meat!”

Guthem shouted at Ye Chui with a slightly hoarse voice, “How dare you kill my younger brother?! I want you to die a horrible death. I will let you accompany him in hell. Oh, and for that Debbie, I'll ensure that she'll join you all in hell as well since my younger brother seemed to like this little girl. After I finish you off, I will personally send that little girl down to hell to accompany my younger brother.”

“You asked for this... Hahaha...” Guthem laughed heartily as he



thoroughly enjoyed this moment of elation.

This was because Guthem was certain that, in his current state, he would be able to finish Ye Chui off in just one move. Guthem had already found himself at the standard of an advanced Swordsman; there were few in the whole of Stan City who was his match, not to mention this level two Magician right in front of him. Despite wearing a suit of battle armour and displaying some unusual moves just now, Guthem still thought that Hammer was not his match.

He was so certain of his conviction he grabbed the golden opportunity to mock his opponent.

Then...

Ye Chui suddenly opened his arms.

An electric beam burst out of chest all of a sudden.

This was the ultimate move of the Iron Swordsman – <Lightning Beam>.

If Ye Chui wished, he could easily have taken down Guthem's <Protection of War God> with different tactically used skills and cut him down with the 12 styles he had just learned. However, such a quick death should not be granted to someone who muttered such nasty words. Enraged, Ye Chui had planned to take him out in the most 'fun' way possible.

The bright blue light flashed and crackled like Death in Guthem's eyes but in the face of such power, his expression remained that of serenity. With both hands tightly grasped onto his sword, he swung to split the light beam in two.

[As planned]. Ye Chui smirked as the long sword that collided with the light beam and melted the sword; landing on Guthem's chest.

Boom! Just like a leaf that lost itself to the wind, Guthem's body flew and smashed into the wall towards the store. The wall easily fell apart due to the sheer force but Guthem did not stop. As his legs came closer to the ground miniature trenches could be seen littered with small fragmented flames from his burnt clothes.

Smashing through the first was not enough and as Guthem's body continued to travel, he destroyed various shelves and magical products that Debbie was selling. The only wall that had managed to stop his flight was the last wall on the opposite side of the Magic Cottage.

Staring at the scene Ye Chui had left behind; the magic stone in his suit turned grey. Obviously, he had exhausted all of the suit's power. However, something like this did not pose a problem to Ye Chui. He understood it well that he would not face any power shortages anytime soon.

He took out the grey core and replaced a lime-white stone back in its place. With this new magic stone in place, he could now easily

move the armour again. He took out his sword and went past the mountains of remnants towards an ashen-black figure. With lips that were burnt off, chest caved inwards, as well as the red armour suit being burnt and mixed into his skin, just from a simple glance, anyone could see that this body was no longer that of a human's.

Taking one <Lightning Beam> attack had rendered him to such an inhuman state.

Living a single second after such an attack would be considered a miracle for someone like Guthem but exceeding that, he was still breathing with smoke coming out from his orifices. As though to indicate his vitality, even <Protection of the War God> had not deactivated.

In his life, Guthem had always been regarded as someone formidable. However, facing such a one-sided battle and instantly getting defeated, he stared at Ye Chui in fear. With eyes that were dimming by the second, he seemed to wish to open to say something but nothing could come out. The only sound was that of suffocation from his burnt innards.

“You could have had a more painless death.” Ye Chui stood like a commander as he shook his head. “If you can speak, tell me who was it compelled you to come here?”

Guthem head slightly crooked to one side before the light in his eyes completely disappeared.

Ye Chui breathed out a sigh of relief but this peace was only short

lasted as his gaze soon wandered around the war-torn house and frowned. “Shit! I didn’t expect my attack to be this powerful...”

The fight between Ye Chui and Guthem along with Bolton could be described as one-sided, taking only a few moments. However, in these small moments, the entire courtyard was destroyed and even Anthony’s Magic Cottage was on the verge of collapse.

Since this battle took place in the evening, most of his neighbours were eating. Thankfully for that reason and luck, there was no one around. Very quickly, Ye Chui took off his suit and kept it inside his storage space ring. He then sat on top of one the flat remnants and was in deep thought as he waited to face Debbie’s anger.

With such a destruction occurring at Anthony’s Magic Cottage, it took no time at all before the word had passed on to the dining table at the City Lord’s Manor. Coincidentally having lunch there, Debbie heard the news and was immediately anxious. Taking up her Greatsword, she ran out of the City Lord’s Manor with Alfea and accompanying them was a group of City Lord’s Guard.

When Debbie stood by the avenue just beside the destroyed courtyard and her gaze scanned the pitiful condition of her surroundings, she stood there rooted for a moment. However, slowly, she managed to overcome her fears and moved forward. Opening the door towards the courtyard which lacked a wall around it, she walked and continued gawking around in fear. As her darting eyes could not find what she was looking for, from a throat, soft whimpers could be heard. When she finally made it to the front door, she slowly opened it.

With her reddened eyes finally could gaze upon Hammer's figure, her stiff heart lightened up.

[Thank you... thank you for being alright...]

“Hammer... what happened?” Debbie asked with a voice that was quivering.

“Today, at noon Guthem and Bolton came to drag me to somewhere far away to have me killed. Luckily, the Iron Swordsman was here and...” Ye Chui continued as he detailed Debbie about what had happened.

Debbie looked up and down Ye Chui's body and once she had concluded that he was not harmed, her heart finally managed to be thoroughly relaxed. However, a fire soon sparked in her afterward. “That Iron Swordsman! Was this whole thing done intentionally?! Although he had saved you, did he really need to destroy our house to this extent?! This was the place her father had purchased after much difficulty... to see it like this... does he have a heart?”

Ye Chui was caught speechless. In his mind, he thought, [I guess I will need to forever hide my identity from now on...]

Alfea and City Guard also entered the small courtyard, quickly look around the situation, Balmain managed to quickly grasp the situation. In his mind, he was able to recreate the fight scene. [Both Guthem and Bolton came with killing intent but were both taken down by the Iron Swordsman. Judging from the marks on

the ground, even after Guthem had activated <Protection of the War God>, he was still flung from the attack made by the Iron Swordsman...]

Although he had not seen the Iron Swordsman's fighting capabilities inside the ancient tomb, it was made clear here that the mysterious swordsman, was no doubt someone powerful.

On the other hand, Alfea was beaming with life as she thought to herself. [It really was the Iron Swordsman. After he had inherited the 12 sword styles from the ancient tomb, he had become even more powerful...] as her thoughts continued to trail, her heart became more lonesome.

Finally becoming self-aware that her thoughts were not focused on the current situation, Alfea pulled herself together and stared at the two. Noticing the sadness that clouded Debbie's eyes after her family's treasured home was destroyed, Alfea heart wrenched with pain. Unable to bear it any longer, she moved in front of her friend and comforted, "Debbie, don't be sad. Guthem and Bolton were both famous mercenaries. On them, there should be a lot of money and since they were targeting Ye Chui, I will present you this money. There should be at least a hundred gold coins on them."

"What do I need money for? My home..." Debbie sniffled.

Alfea continued to be worried as an idea came to her. "There is a shop next to the City Lord's Manor that is currently for sale. Debbie, didn't you always want to set up a store at Stardust Avenue? Right, since both of the Guthem brothers are dead, I can sell off the property that they own and use my own influence to

buy of that property for you. Later, you can set up Anthony's Magic Cottage there."

"ah..." After hearing Alfea's words, Debbie's stare slowly brightened up as her lips slowly curved into a smile.

Moving Anthony's Magic Cottage to Stardust Avenue had originally been her father's lifelong dream. Naturally, as his daughter, it was also her dream!

# Chapter 79 – Daily Life In Anthony's Magic Cottage

---

Having a great sleep last night, Ye Chui woke up all rejuvenated to top off his day, his gaze scanned around his room, causing a mighty wave of excitement to flow through his veins. A room 50 times what he used to own, decorated with luxurious furniture would make all commoners of this land green with envy; especially since it was located just next to the City Lord's Manor.

It was known that the City Lord's Manor was rich. However, unfortunately for them, Debbie's skin was way too thick. When Alfea had politely offered to give some of the furniture from the City Lord's Manor. Debbie had shown some embarrassment in her expression, but she still took so much furniture that it made the City Lord's Manor seem as though it had been mortgaged.

Merely half a month ago, Ye Chui had disguised himself as the Iron Swordsman and killed both Bolton and Guthem. Afterwards, the City Lord Manor investigator's then liquidated the brother's assets to the sum of 800 gold coins which was not a small amount of money.

For comparison, the local tyrant Busca had a total net worth totaling 400 gold coins. For both brothers to have twice what Busca had, it was clear that as mercenaries; they had kept themselves busy. Although this amount was found by the City Lord's Manor, they managed to spend it on purchasing the huge store just next to the City Lord's Manor – on Stardust Avenue. Such a building would never be sold at a low price of 800 gold coins. It was only thanks to their close relationship with Alfea, that



they purchased the rights to the store.

With that said, owning such an establishment had eased the pain, of losing Debbie's father's store. So they eagerly packed up as much of their belongings, they could recover from the wreckage of their old home and moved with anxious anticipation towards their new home in Stan City's most bustling area.

The Storefront faced the road while the backyard had a luxurious courtyard. Debbie wanted to live in a room on the lower floor and transformed the extra space into a hall and a kitchen. Meanwhile, Ye Chui got two personal rooms upon his request. One was his own bedroom, while the other was a laboratory; a unique and special request he made.

Due to this luxuriousness of his home, Ye Chui woke up like a king. When he woke up, he sat up with a loud yawn as he swayed his head. Welcoming the sunlight to bathe his body, he comfortably stretched out.

A sound of buzzing and humming a sound which could only be made by something spinning at an extreme speed, slashing through dead leaves with ease. Needless to say, it was Debbie practicing with her Great Sword on the first floor; she was clearly visible from the second-floor window.

Suddenly, she jumped up and seemed to float in the air. It was when she caught sight of Ye Chui standing by the window that she stopped spinning and greeted him with a smile. "Hammer! Hurry up and freshen yourself up. How fast can you make breakfast? I'm starving!"

After she completed saying her piece, she fell down to the ground. From the second floor window, the sight of a little girl brandishing the sword created a fearsome scene. After all, the Giant Spinning Top Technique was something out of the realm of the ordinary in terms of sword attacks. To be able to practice and master it, to such a degree is surely a fearsome accomplishment.

Ye Chui could not help but let out a smile as he turned his head to the sink area to wash his face. Once he was done freshening up, he wore his long black magician's robe and went down to the kitchen.

After being given a second chance at life in this world, Ye Chui could not get used to the western diet of this world. Therefore, he usually made food was more akin to those from his own customs back home. For example, he would cook up some meat and vegetable Congee. Other days, he would use the steaming machine that he had made to steam some buns; he even made a refrigerator out of an ice magic matrix to store vegetables. With such tools at his disposal, along with his own skills and the fresh ingredients, his simple breakfast was delicious!

In this world, it was usual to have breakfast with bread. However, Debbie was someone who was not picky, nor someone to adhere to her own comfort. Therefore, she was able to enjoy the unconventional food which Ye Chui came up with for breakfast.

Whenever the food was ready, Ye Chui would give a shout so loud that it would reach all the way to the courtyard. With this signal, Debbie immediately stopped swinging her sword and rush to the sink; cleaning herself up with a new change of clothes to finally get

seated around the dining table.

However, those were practices before they moved to their new home. Currently, before Ye Chui would prepare the meal, he would look towards the wall that separated their courtyard from the next building. Silently, he would countdown, “five... four... three... two... one.”

As usual, a graceful white figure jumped over the wall in a single move; effortlessly overcoming the two-meter tall wall that was supposed to separate the City Lord’s Manor from Ye Chui’s new home. Her name, Alfea.

She wore plain white gear which was made for agile movements. With her hair remaining a little moist, she seemed to just have ended her morning training and took a bath. After Ye Chui and Debbie moved next door, this ‘honored’ guest would visit each morning to have breakfast with them. Likewise... for Debbie, she too was shamelessly visiting the City Lord’s Manor every night just to have dinner with Alfea.

It was amazing that each day; Alfea would appear with utmost precision. Never once did her timing deviate. Likewise, it was already usual to hear her daily shout, “Debbie,” a minute before she jumped over the wall.

What’s more, she would always directly head to the dining table on the first floor and accept any food on her table, regardless if it was steamed buns, vegetables or even rice porridge. Unfortunately, the way she ate did not carry any of her usual grace as she would take everything in, without so much as a chew.

At first, Ye Chui would roll his eyes whenever she visited. But over time, this daily occurrence had become a daily routine in Anthony's Magic Cottage, and he gradually got used Alfea's presence. Of course, getting used to her also meant that their perceptions had changed. Previously, Hammer would treat Alfea as a beloved idol; an untouchable but desired existence. Meanwhile, Debbie made Alfea her goal in becoming a Swordsman. However, after watching her daily snorting as she ate, that picturesque dream was shattered into oblivion, with what remained was a desolate feeling of sadness.

"Debbie, do you have any confidence in taking up the Swordsman Guilds Level 3 Swordsman test?" Alfea suddenly turned her head to face Debbie as she mentioned the worry that popped into her head just as they were having their meal.

Debbie was preparing to head to the Swordsman's Guild to take the test today to check if she had promoted to becoming a Level 3 Swordsman. As she chewed on her food, she gave a nod. "I don't think there will be any problems. My Giant Spinning Top Technique has improved and I should be able to pass this test with ease. I'm even prepared to directly take on the Level 4 Swordsman test."

"At your present strength, you should be in the Level 3 peak. So, Level 4 would be a little difficult to pass." Alfea explains as her attention turns to the only male in this room. Hammer, are you also going to take the test today? The Level 3 Magician test?"

Ye Chui nodded. "Yeah."

Alfea broke out into a smile and encouragingly said, “you shouldn’t have the least bit of a problem to pass the Level 3 Magician test.”

[That’s true. Passing the Level 3 Magician test will be no problems at all. After all, I’ve already studied for it.] Ye Chui thought to himself. The Level 3 Magician test was divided into three categories: spell formation and release, magic array formation and knowledge of magic theories. For any of these testing topics, Ye Chui knew that he would face no problems. It would not be a stretch to even say that he was fully confident in jumping pass the level 4 Magician test in a single go.

Alfea slurped her bowl of porridge, which would be described by the citizens in Stan City as a heroic gesture, and once she was done, her voice suddenly became softer as she continued to speak to Ye Chui. “Hammer, in this world, nothing is a hundred percent. However, the Magician Guild is under the City Lord’s jurisdiction. So, I happen to know the questions that will come out for your magic theory test, if you tell me a way to contact the Iron Swordsman, I will tell you all the questions that will turn up later. How about it? Doesn’t it sound like a great deal?”

[Iron Swordsman again!]

For the past few days, Alfea had shamelessly visited and intruded on both their, Ye Chui and Debbie, life to find a way to contact the Iron Swordsman!

“Well...” Ye Chui had to remain firm as he wished not to expose himself. Placing down his bowl of porridge, he lied. “I’ve already promised the Iron Swordsman to not give away the method of keeping in contact with him. Sorry.”

With that being said, Ye Chui turned around callously and walked off.

“Hammer...” Debbie hastily called out to him to stop him.

“Debbie. Say no more. I’ve already promised and I won’t break it.” Ye Chui callously said.

“”That’s not it,” Debbie replied. “I’m reminding you to wash the dishes.”

“Oh... that’s right.”

[Shit... my exit wasn’t cool at all...]

## Chapter 80 – Girl, If You Get Heartbroken, Don't You Dare Complain to Me!

---

After they had their breakfast, Ye Chui packed his stuff while the girl beside him, Debbie, took up her greatsword in preparation to go out. Judging by her appearance, even warriors would assume that she was prepared to head off for a duel with someone.

In actuality, the test to determine if one was a Level 3 Swordsman took the form of a duel. The opponent of that said duel would be an examiner sent by the Swordsman Guild. During the duel, the examiner would judge based on the Swordsman's fighting capabilities, control of his sword and the sword aura shown. In such a case, the judgment of one's sword aura was akin to the judgment of a Magician's magic power. After all, the major stages of Elementary, Intermediate and Advanced Swordsman was shown by the change in one's sword aura. Hence, such a test would have to take the sword aura into account in the evaluations.

Alfea was initially prepared to head to the Swordsman Guild with Debbie but after much consideration, she decided to accompany Ye Chui to the Magician Guild with the reason, "Debbie. I'd best accompany Hammer to the Magician Examination. Who knows if some problems might arise. Seeing how weak he is, I think this is the best idea."

Hearing the logical reasoning behind Alfea's words caused Debbie to nod. "Right! That's right! Hammer is so frail. I'm always worried that someone might bully him..."

Hearing the two girls talk in such a manner in front of him, Ye

Chui could only turn mute and accept.

[WTF? So what if my body is not strong like yours? When a man fights, he relies on his own intelligence! Intelligence!!!]

[Such is the most important thing!]

Finally, after a little deliberation, Debbie took up her greatsword by her shoulder and left for the Swordsman Guild while Ye Chui and Alfea both embarked to the Magician's Guild.

While they walked side by side, Ye Chui snorted callously to Alfea. "No matter how much you pester me, I will never tell you how to directly contact Iron Swordsman."

Alfea got somewhat irritated and rebuked. "I also suffered at his side and shared victories with him. If he wants to contact me, he could also look for someone to share his message. Although he hasn't done so... but it can be done. So, why should I even depend on you?"

"So, you are bothering me because he hasn't contacted you yet. But how would I know the reason why he hasn't contacted you yet?" Ye Chui pretended to feign ignorance on his part in this matter and murmured. "Maybe it's just that he does not like a girl like you." When Alfea noticed that Ye Chui had said something, she leaned her ear closer to his mouth as her eyes shifted to meet his. In a sudden panic, Ye Chui changed his manner of speech completely and blurted out. "Em... maybe it's because you are the City Lord's daughter? With your difference in status, he might be



too embarrassed to be near you.”

Alfea pondered for a brief moment before slightly lowering her head with a lonely sigh. “so that could be the reason...”

Ye Chui caught a glimpse of Alfea’s slightly reddened face and could not help but probe. “Those are just my own thoughts. But... you... do you like the Iron Swordsman?”

After hearing Ye Chui’s words, Alfea aggressively shook her head. Her face turned even redder as she let out a small fist of resentment towards Ye Chui’s arm. “Wh-what nonsense are you sprouting? It’s nothing like that!”

Pang though it was a small fist, it launched Ye Chui up into the air to perform a somersault; leaving a burning, swelling pain behind. It was apparent that ‘Miss Love of a Head’ was blindsided by her own shyness to the point she forgot that his physique was weak.

Alfea also realised that she had used too much force. With her status as a swordsman, she was much stronger than any ordinary man. Even knowing that Ye Chui was weak, (from the talk with Debbie), she still managed to punch him till her fist was sore! Hastily, she apologised. “I’m sorry! Are you okay?”

“Yeah... I’m fine...” Ye Chui took in a breath of cold air and stood up half a meter away from Alfea.

Alfea's mouth seemed to wish to say something more but she no longer cared to speak any further and walked closer to Ye Chui's side. Once she was close enough, she asked, "Hammer... do you know what the Iron Swordsman looks like under his helmet? Does he have a long...? What is with that look?"

"Well, he has an imposing appearance. Handsome to the point of being peerless. If I were to try to describe any further, he would be comparable to me."

Alfea's eyes turn dull as her gaze sets itself on Ye Chui. "Hammer, are you trying to describe yourself?"

Ye Chui stared back. "Oh, so I'm as I have described in your eyes as well."

"No. That's not it." Alfea shook her head. "It just means that you are speaking rubbish."

"..."

"Hey... so what does he really look like? I really want to know. Please..." Alfea blushes as she continues to ask. It was as though it was her most desired wish that needs to be fulfilled.

"Good question... I personally have not seen his face before but he swore in front of me that he will never reveal himself before becoming a Sword Master." Ye Chui hurtfully spoke.

Alfea dejectedly replied. “I know that... but... I think he is handsome and graceful. Though this might not relate to his appearance, I am already certain that he is an outstanding man.”

Looking at Alfea’s reddish face, Ye Chui could not bear but attack. “Miss Alfea, what are your own thoughts on me?”

Alfea immediately revealed a look of derision. “You? I only care for you because of Debbie. In any case, you are absolutely the kind of man I will never fall for. The only one I like is the Iron Swordsman.”

“ ... ”

[Girl, if your heart ever breaks, don’t you dare complain to me!]

Similar to their previous chatter, they continued to talk back and forth only to arrive at the Magician Guild. There, they discovered four others dressed in a magician’s long gown waiting to get tested.

The Swordsman examination was carried out once every three days. However, for Magicians, their test was not a regular occurrence so it was scheduled only when there were candidates available. This was mostly due to the small number of Magicians in Stan City (roughly 100). Therefore, the Magician Guild would always wait till there was a big enough number of participants before setting up an examination. It was simply coincidental that the time of both the Magician promotion examination and the Swordsman promotion examination were set at the same time.

Ye Chui was well aware of this fact and understood that if he missed this test, the next one would take god knows how long to be available.

This time, there were a total of five participants for the level three Magician Promotion Examination; three of which were of an age between 40-50 years old. Out of the three of them, there was only one male. The man was bald and anxious. Although he carried a book, he seemed earnest to the point where it was grave; burning midnight oil to cram some knowledge into his brain.

The other youth had an arrogant face; as if he had already passed the test. When he saw Ye Chui appeared to take the test, he snorted and no longer took another look. However, when his gaze landed on Alfea, he constantly took peeps. His eyes flashed an obvious wish to approach her and when he did so, his approach was simply uncultured. This was especially so in face of Stan City's most renowned princess. It was apparent that his words were crude and could not manage to receive the slightest bit of sway from the princess.

It was at this moment where several Magician Guild workers rushed out; even a Level 5 Magician, Basgen was with them. They all lined up in an orderly fashion in front of a luxurious carriage to greet.

When those in the carriage came out, Ye Chui could recognise some people but his main attention laid with an acquaintance. The Magician Guild Master's son, Oberth.

Right now, Oberth was different from the one Ye Chui was familiar with one month ago. For some reason, there was a dark patch under his eyes but strangely, he was bursting with vigour, as though he had won the lottery.

Alongside Oberth was a 40-50-year-old man. He wore a similar looking black magician long gown and appeared to be quite strong. This man was speaking in a flattering tone towards a skinny old man in a grey robe. This old man also seemed powerful but unlike the one in black, he is more pessimistic.

“That middle-aged man is Oberth’s father; the Magician Guild Master Oupu,” Alfea whispered after she noticed Ye Chui’s curious gaze towards the group. “As for the man in the grey robe, he is standing at the peak of Ordinary Magician, only one step away from being the specialist realm, the Level 9 Magician, Booth. I’ve heard that he is well versed in space magic. Due to his research, he was able to sense some kind of a phenomenon in Stan City, which caused him to stay here for a period of time.”

“A Level 9 Magician that specialises in space magic huh...” Ye Chui continued to gawk before nodding, “fierce”.

Alfea nods in agreement but after remembering something, she continued to speak. “I heard that Booth has decided to take Oberth as his apprentice.”

“...” Ye Chui continued to nod. [Oberth? Really? This idiot actually managed to gain an apprenticeship under someone just a step away from being a Specialist Realm Magician? It’s so obvious that he was spent all night cramming in knowledge from a magic

crystal to the point of exhaustion...]

# Chapter 81 – Instead Of Finding A Lousy Mentor, The Father Of Studies Might As Well Self-Study

---

Ye Chui had no clue about the relationship between Oberth acknowledging the level nine Magician as his mentor and the magic crystal. But he could be sure about one thing – the lethargic look Oberth had, which seemed to be the result of a month-long indecent nightlife, was actually caused by the magic crystal.

On the other hand, Basgen and the others had met up with Oberth, Oupu, and Booth. After conversing for a little while, they all walked towards the Magician Guild. It was at this time when Oberth took a glance at Ye Chui and the others. When Oberth saw Alfea standing beside Ye Chui, goose bumps appeared on his body, as he seemed a little afraid. He then turned his head away hastily.

When Oberth saw Alfea standing beside Ye Chui, goose bumps appeared on his body, as he seemed a little afraid. He then turned his head away hastily.

After conversing for a little while, they all walked towards the Magician Guild. It was at this time when Oberth took a glance at Ye Chui and the others. When Oberth saw Alfea standing beside Ye Chui, goose bumps appeared on his body, as he seemed a little afraid. He then turned his head away hastily.

Alfea had no intention of going over and greet the others, but it was common sense; that it was rude for the City Lord's daughter to ignore the presence of the Master of the Magician Guild. So... She

immediately turned her back towards them and continued chatting with Ye Chui, pretending that she did not see anything.

Ye Chui was starting to perspire as well, but he knew that Oberth's lackluster performance in the ancient tomb changed Alfea's perception of him from that of a good one to that of an undesirable one.

Oberth had obtained the magic crystal from Ye Chui more than half a month ago but he had lied by saying that he had obtained it much earlier and was busy researching on the intricate knowledge within the magic crystal. Booth's unique imprint could still be found on the magic crystal. Hence Booth could confirm that the crystal was originally his. However, Booth did not inspect the interior of the magic crystal, which had been completely altered. He had no choice but to reluctantly accept Oberth as his disciple, and had instructed him to familiarise himself with the contents of the magic crystal...

Due to this incident, the reputation of Oberth as a genius has become even more prominent throughout the community, to the extent that even Oberth had decided to believe it as truth. However, upon seeing Ye Chui, his guilty conscience started to prick his heart. He quickened his pace and joined his father and Booth.

“Hahaha, I didn't expect that you were the one who retrieved the magic crystal from the mirror. Since you did that, why did you let us search for the magic crystal in vain for the past few days?” The Magician's Guild clerk blamed Oberth with a hint of a teasing tone.



Oberth quickly took the opportunity to clarify himself, “I just wanted to use some time to research the contents of the magic crystal; So as to give my mentor a bigger surprise.”

“Hahaha, that’s my son for you.” Oupu said in an arrogant tone, “He wouldn’t spread the news of himself retrieving the magic crystal if he wasn’t a 100% certain of the contents within it. This quality of his is very much like me.”

“In the future, Oberth will become Mr.Booth’s favorite disciple and his success will be limitless.” The clerk tried to bootlick.

This made Oupu smile heartily.

However, Oberth looked down in shame. No matter how thick his skin is, he would not be able to conceal his embarrassment.

Booth, who was standing in the middle of the group, did not say much. He merely gave Oberth a glance, before looking away in frustration. In order to focus on his research on magic, Booth had never accepted any disciples, not to mention one in a small place like Stan City. Oberth was just a joke in his eyes.

When Booth first set the test of retrieving the magic crystal in the mirror, it was just his method of rejecting any disciples, as he did not expect anyone from Stan City to be able to achieve that feat. It was unless the person had developed an instinctive sense towards space magic theory and was able to visualize the door formed by space magic. There might not even be a single person in the entire empire who can do it, not to mention Stan City.

But someone retrieved the magic crystal from the mirror!

In order to enter the Specialist Realm, Booth had been staying in Stan City for quite some time and received hospitality from the Magician Guild. When Oberth retrieved the magic crystal from the mirror a few days back, Booth could not break his promise. He could only agree to accept this disciple, who is talentless in his eyes. He then thought in his mind.

[Why didn't I accept disciples in the past who were more talented than Oberth? Now I have to accept a stupid disciple... Whatever, I'll just find a reason to disown him as my disciple later on.]

“Mr. Basgen.” Oberth inched himself closer to Basgen and whispered, “What are those people gathering there for?”

“Oh, they're here for the level three Magician examination.” Basgen smilingly explained. As a level five Magician who is a Light Priest, he was very popular among the members of the Magician Guild. During normal times, Booth had been more friendly towards Basgen compared to others; and had even treated him to a dinner once to chat on the topic of light magic. At this instant, Basgen heart skipped a beat, as he spoke to Booth, “Mr. Booth, we'll be holding the level three Magician examination right here later on. There is one person who has good magic skills, so why don't you stay back and spectate?”

Upon hearing Basgen's words, Booth became interested, “All right then. I'll stay behind to watch since I'm rather curious.”

“Err... What’s so interesting about the level three Magician examination? Mentor, you don’t have to waste your time on this.” Oberth started to feel anxious and quickly persuaded Booth. The person with good magic skills which Basgen was referring to was an arrogant youth, but Oberth mistakenly thought that he was referring to Ye Chui. Oberth was panicky, as he thought that Basgen discovered that he was not the one who retrieved the magic crystal from the mirror.

“I’ll just spectate for fun; it’s not a waste of my time. The level three Magician examination is split into three parts, right? What about this? Let me give the candidates a spontaneous test on the part of the examination relating to magic theory.” Booth deliberately ignored Oberth’s persuasion. [I’ll spectate the examination when you don’t want me to do so. Who do you think you are to direct your mentor what to do?]

[I’ll spectate the examination when you don’t want me to do so. Who do you think you are to direct your mentor what to do?]

“Haha. Let’s set it this way.” Oupu did not notice Oberth’s unusual facial expression and laughed, “Maybe Mr. Booth would take a liking to one of the candidates and accept another disciple?”

The crowd laughed simultaneously.

Oberth became increasingly flustered.

“Ehh, do you want me to speak to my father to ask Mr. Booth to

accept you as his disciple? Do you know that it's every Magician's dream to be able to be taught by someone who is about to enter the Specialist Realm?" After Oberth and his group entered the Magician Guild, Alfea suddenly tapped Ye Chui's shoulder, "So, are you interested?"

"No way I'll be interested in becoming his disciple!" Ye Chui rejected Alfea's offer straightaway, "Don't even think about it. Even if you offer to marry me, I won't tell you the method of contacting the Iron Swordsman."

The loose strands of hair on Alfea's head started to float in the air, as she stared at Ye Chui with a pair of murderous eyes.

However, Ye Chui was not at all afraid, "So what? The Iron Swordsman is now my brother. I'll guarantee that he'll sever all ties with you if you dare touch me!"

[It's so easy dealing with such a lovesick girl.]

"..." Alfea was dumbfounded.

A moment later, Alfea sighed in disappointment but kept her murderous intent. On account of the Iron Swordsman, Alfea could not be bothered in arguing with the other party, "What a cunning fella. You must've known that the level nine Magician wouldn't accept you as his disciple, despite my father having a reputable status."

“Hehe.”

Believe it or not, Ye Chui really was not interested in becoming a disciple of that level nine Magician. Since Booth was a Magician who specialized in space magic, learning from him would mean focusing all of his time and effort on space magic. There are a total of seven different elements of magic, so how could Ye Chui forfeit the rest of the cake just for this slice? Most importantly... Magic was very similar to hacking – instead of finding a lousy teacher, the Father of Studies might as well self-study. Ye Chui was prepared to specialize in each and every one of the seven elements of magic.

# Chapter 82 – Intermediate Offensive Spell

---

The level three Magician examination has officially commenced.

Under the leadership of the Magician Guild's clerk, Ye Chui registered himself for the examination, paid a fee of 20 copper coins and obtained an entry proof. Thereafter, the five Magicians who were anxiously waiting to participate in the exam were ushered into the first examination hall. The first part of the exam was all about releasing of magic spells. Every level three Magician had to completely grasp the release of five magic spells, of which two were offensive spells and the remaining three were life spells or auxiliary spells.

Before Ye Chui entered the examination hall, Alfea stood against the wall of the corridor and smiled at him, "Hammer, the first two parts of the Magician exam should not be a problem for you at all. All Magicians who register for this exam typically pass the first two parts, but it won't be the case for the third part. The third part which is a test on magic theory tends to eliminate 90% of the candidates. Even if you have a flair for magic, there is no guarantee that you'll be able to overcome that hurdle. But with my status as the City Lord's daughter, I can make that hurdle extremely easy for you. So, would you consider using my backdoor?"

Ye Chui looked sideways at Alfea and thought in his heart. [Isn't the phrase 'Use my backdoor?' a little naive?] He then laughingly said, "As a Magician, I should pass the promotion test based on my own merit. I won't use any underhanded means to pass the test."

"Hmph, It's your choice." Alfea snorted.

“If you’re willing to let me use the back door for free, I wouldn’t mind. However, I won’t give you the method of contacting the Iron Swordsman. Instead, I can praise you in front of him, like your battling capabilities etc.” Ye Chui had already walked to the entrance of the examination hall, but he suddenly thought of something and told Alfea.

“Get lost!”

“ ... ”

The first test on the release of magic spells is about to begin.

The five magicians proceeded to release their magic spells, while a Magician Guild’s clerk stood at the side to register their results. In no time, two females and one male, who were all older than Ye Chui, had completed their magic spell release. The three of them had attempted this promotion examination several time times already, hence they were very familiar with quite a few magic spells and could easily pass this test. Then, it was the arrogant youth’s turn.

By this time, Ye Chui had discovered that his name was Arcaz. Ye Chui witnessed Arcaz releasing four magic spells with an arrogant expression. Despite portraying a lethargic look due to over-exerting himself while releasing the magic spells, he still could not wipe off that arrogant look off his face. He then mustered all his energy and released the last auxiliary spell.

Ye Chui was the last candidate to perform the task. He released several life spells, like <Breeze>, <Dust Removal> and <Kindle>, before releasing two basic offensive spells, such as <Lightning> and <Fire>, with much ease. Ye Chui chose these few magic spells because they were the simplest ones he knew. These spells were so simple to the extent that Ye Chui did not feel any bit of exhaustion of magic power and spiritual power. In conclusion, he passed this round without any hiccups.

“It seems like your standards are just mediocre. I’ll be the only one who will pass this promotion examination.” Seeing Ye Chui walk over, Arcaz teased his fellow Magicians. The three Magicians who did the test first also released three life spells and two basic offensive spells.

“Buddy...” Seeing the arrogant look on Arcaz’s face, Ye Chui could not resist the temptation to mock him, “Do you notice that the rest of them have weird gazes?”

“Huh?” Arcaz stood in a daze momentarily. He then looked at the other three Magicians and the Magician Guild’s clerk, before discovering that their gazes were indeed a little unusual... They were definitely not staring at him with respect. Arcaz was puzzled and asked, “What’s happening?”

“That’s the gaze you would give to an idiotic person.” Ye Chui explained to Arcaz in an honest manner, “There are a total of three parts in this exam. This first round does not take into account any marks, so it’ll be a smart move to just pass this stage, instead of consuming all of your spiritual power and magic power.”



Arcaz, “...”

Offensive spells tend to consume the most spiritual power and magic power, followed by auxiliary spells, while life spells tend to consume the least spiritual power and magic power.

The first three candidates to pass the first test were experienced experts. Their choice of releasing two basic offensive spells and three life spells helped them to conserve more energy to face the challenges in the following rounds. However, Arcaz did not think of this, instead, he thought that their standards were merely mediocre... Now he truly felt like an idiot, but he could not embarrass himself in front of the others and snorted, “I just need a few minutes to regain my energy. The upcoming obstacles won’t be a challenge to me at all!”

“Hehe.”

Ye Chui turned around and walked out of the examination hall, as the second test was about to begin. The second test was about forming magic models. Based on a magic spell provided by the Magician Guild, the candidates were supposed to form a magic model on the spot. This was equivalent to testing the candidates on their application and understanding of new models. Of course, in Ye Chui’s perspective, it would be as simple as inputting the programming code according to a patterned plate.

On the other hand, the other candidates did not find it that simple.

Before the commencement of the second test, Oberth secretly approached the examiner, a Magician who was named Diya. He passed a roll of parchment and instructed Diya, “During the test of forming magic models, please pass this to a Magician called Hammer and make him form the model of this magic spell.”

“Oberth... This doesn’t seem very appropriate.” Diya was caught in a difficult position. “That Hammer is merely a level two Magician with no strong backing, so why are you afraid?”

“If anything happens, I’ll shoulder the responsibility!” Oberth said in an indifferent tone, “Diya, I’m sorry to trouble you at this time, but I’ll definitely praise you in front of my father, should you decide to help me. Diya, you should know that if I mention you in front of my father, he’ll be able to promote you to the position of an elder in the Magician Guild. Similarly, he also has the authority to kick you out of the Magician guild.”

Indecision could be seen in Diya’s eyes, as the Magician examination is an extremely sacred event. Of course, Diya knew that many dirty things happen behind the scenes all the time and this concerned his prospects in the Magician Guild... Thus, he bit his teeth and agreed to Ye Chui, “All right, I’ll do it.”

“Very well.” Oberth nodded his head with a sinister look.

The magic spell Oberth passed to Diya was an intermediate offensive spell, called <Gale’s Baptism>. This magic spell was specially invented by Oberth’s father, Oupu, just for him. Oberth had attempted to form the magic model of this magic spell for the past half a year but to no avail. In actuality, this kind of

intermediate offensive spell could only be grasped by an Intermediate Magician. The reason for Oupu passing this magic spell to Oberth was for him to familiarise himself with the characteristics of intermediate magic spells.

Furthermore, Oberth was not worried that Ye Chui would steal this magic spell because the application of this magic spell involved 10 magic symbols that only an intermediate Magician would use. As a level two Magician, Ye Chui could only stare blankly at this magic spell. It was common sense that only talented Magicians like Oberth could have the chance to encounter all the magic symbols at the standard of a beginner Magician.

“Hehe...” After walking over from Diya, Oberth felt an inexplicable sense of satisfaction in his heart. Earlier on, he had already completed the mentor acknowledgement ceremony and signed the ‘sacred master and disciple contract’. Now Booth was interacting with his father and he was prepared to invite Booth to the examination hall to spectate the process of the test, “If Mentor Booth sees that Hammer can’t even pass the second test of the examination, I guess he won’t want to accept Hammer as his disciple.”

[This Hammer seems a little ominous to me; I’ll better eliminate him early in the examination!]

Very soon, Ye Chui and his fellow candidates entered the second examination hall and began the second test.

“This magic spell...” After opening the parchment handed over from Diya, Ye Chui stared wide-eyed at it, “I thought this test on

forming magic model only included basic magic spells? Why does this magic spell seem like an intermediate one? Ehh, this <Gale's Baptism> magic spell seems like it's very formidable. I've been wanting to learn some intermediate magic spells recently, but I didn't expect the Magician Guild to be so generous as to give such a precious magic spell in an exam! What a nice gift!"

## Chapter 83 – My Performance Must Have Left You Dumbfounded

---

Ye Chui had completely grasped a total of 10 magic spells, including four life spells (<Breeze>, <Dust Removal>, <Kindle> and <Rainfall>), four basic offensive spells (<Lightning>, <Fire>, <Gale> and <Wind Blade>), as well as two auxiliary spells (<Wind Walk> and <Light Drop>).

In addition, when Ye Chui was imprisoned by Busca, he even invented three enhanced magic matrices (<Four Times Lightning>, <Four Times Gale> and <Four Times Fire>). These three magic spells could only be used in the manufacturing of magic scrolls and could not be released using a magic wand. If these magic spells were forcefully released using a magic wand, the wand would bend and break due to it not being able to withstand the magic power.

Due to this flaw in these three magic spells, it was extremely difficult to control them, not to mentioning magic equipment withstanding their magic power.

Of course, the invention of these three magic spells was insufficient to prove that Ye Chui is a genius. Despite the magic spells having multi-fold magic power compared to ordinary basic magic spells, they still could not be compared to the power of intermediate magic spells. It was only recently when Ye Chui increased his knowledge on magic theories that he realised this point. His ‘four times’ magic spells were merely an inferior upgrade of basic magic spells; thus it could not be considered as a successful attempt on Ye Chui’s part.

Ultimately, inventing new magic spells was an extremely difficult feat to achieve. Even if Ye Chui had talent in this aspect, he still would not have an easy time inventing new magic spells.

During this period of time, Ye Chui had been searching around for a magic template for intermediate offensive spells, as he wanted to learn new methods to defend himself or attack others. Originally, Ye Chui had intended to spend some money on a magic template at Cara's Magic Cottage, but he ended up with a golden opportunity to get what he wanted – the second test of the level three Magician examination was actually on an intermediate offensive spell.

This magic array, named <Gale's Baptism>, had more than 300 lines of magic symbols carved densely all over the parchment. Ye Chui briefly scanned the parchment and confirmed that this magic spell was extraordinary. With a magic power beyond his imagination, it was definitely one of the strongest magic spells Ye Chui had ever come across!

If Ye Chui was able to completely grasp this magic spell, it would definitely be a great boost to his battling capabilities as a Magician.

[Oooh... But this magic spell seems a little too big; I guess it won't be easy for me to construct the model in my heart...] Ye Chui quickly discovered this problem.

In order for a Magician to release a magic spell, he must first form a magic model in his heart, then in accordance with this magic model, he could release the magic matrix instantaneously. Learning the basics of a magic spell would mean constructing the

magic model in one's memory, and this required the unique spiritual power possessed by Magicians. Ordinary humans could not learn magic spells because they did not have the spiritual power to form magic models.

However, there was a limit to the size of the magic model that could be contained by Magicians' spiritual power; similar to the amount of memory that can fit into one's brain. At different stages, each Magician can only store a certain amount of magic models. When Ye Chui was about to form the magic model for <Gale's Baptism>, he discovered that there was no way this gigantic magic spell could fit in his heart.

Not to worry, Ye Chui had everything planned. Besides deleting three carved magic scrolls, he also deleted the three impractical 'four times' magic spells, creating more storage space for the magic model for <Gale's Baptism>.

Constructing magic models is not just about imprinting the rows of magic symbols into one's memory, but understanding the true meaning of each magic spell at the same time. It is only by this way that the characters in the magic spell can work its effect in one's mind, forming the magic model. The reason as to why Oberth was not able to construct the magic model for <Gale's Baptism> for half a year was because he did not comprehend the meaning of every character in the magic spell. This resulted in him not being able to achieve mastery. However, all of these problems were not at all applicable to Ye Chui.

Similarly, when a top hacker checks the programme code, the hacker would immediately know the function of any random line

presented to him, unlike any ordinary programmer who would be unsure.

This is the disparity between an ordinary programmer and a top hacker; and also the difference between Ye Chui and the ordinary magicians in this magic world.

The duration of the test on forming magic models was two hours. If a candidate was unable to complete the magic model within the two hours, he or she would fail the test.

The five Magicians took their respective places in the examination hall as they all stared wide-eyed at the parchment in their hands. As the invigilator for this test, Diya walked about the hall. Diya had already been in this profession for 10 years, so he would have some foresight. At one glance, he could tell that Arcaz was the quickest and the best at completing the magic model. Of the three candidates who were of older age, one bald middle-aged man was on the path to failure, as perspiration rolled down his forehead continuously. On the other hand, the other two females were calmer and should not have any problems at clearing this test.

However, Diya could not foresee if Ye Chui would pass the test or not.

The parchment Ye Chui held in his hands were visibly different from the others. The parchment others held had at most 30 lines of magic symbols, but the one in Ye Chui's hands... had over 300 lines! Any ordinary candidate would get flustered at the sight of such a test question. Despite that, Ye Chui's face did not reveal any



form of anxiousness or fluster, instead he was very focused on forming the magic model.

But what is the use of Ye Chui trying? Even as a level four Magician, Diya did not have the confidence of constructing the magic model for <Gale's Baptism> in the span of two hours. Perhaps even advanced Magicians did not have the ability to pull that off within that time. The first feeling any ordinary Magician would feel upon seeing the 300 rows of magic symbols should be despair or fear, but Ye Chui seemed to be enjoying himself!

\*\*\*\*\*

Thirty minutes had passed.

\*\*\*\*\*

“I’ve completed!” Arcaz leaped from his seat in excitement all of a sudden.

This attracted the attention from the three older candidates, while Diya revealed an astonished expression. He then nodded his head, “Arcaz, you’ve completed it brilliantly. Now, you can try to release this magic spell. If you succeed at releasing it, you have passed this test.”

“Okay!”

Arcaz walked over to Diya’s side and pulled out his magic wand

from his waist. With a face of satisfaction, Arcaz hesitated slightly before waving his magic wand forward, “Lightning Spark.”

Basic auxiliary spell, <Lightning Spark>.

A streak of electric light burst out of the tip of Arcaz’s magic wand. This electric light did not shoot out in a straight line, instead, it scattered in all directions. The electric light created sparkles in the air like fireworks, producing a beautiful scene. The beautiful light show lasted for more than 10 seconds before the magic spell lost its effect.

Arcaz became even more elated upon the success of the release of the magic spell.

Envy could be seen written on the faces of the three older candidates.

Diya also nodded his head in pleasure, “Not bad. Although you have to make the magic spell last for more than 30 seconds in order to pass the test, your performance is already very commendable. Arcaz, you have passed this test.”

“Thank you,” Arcaz said in joy, as he looked at Ye Chui with a gaze of arrogance. Arcaz bore a grudge against Ye Chui who had previously reprimanded him for being an idiot. He wanted Ye Chui to realise that although he was an idiot in the first test, he could complete the second test with ease then...

Ye Chui was not bothered by Arcaz's stare, in fact, Ye Chui didn't even glance at Arcaz for a moment throughout the entire duration of the second test. Ye Chui seemed as though he was only interested in the parchment in front of him, causing Arcaz's delight to reduce as he thought in his heart.

[Hmph, don't pretend to be not envious of me. I know that my performance must have left you dumbfounded. I'll wait to see how long you'll take to complete the magic spell. Perhaps you don't even have the ability to pass this test.]

Therefore, Arcaz remained in the examination hall to spectate the performance of the rest of his fellow Magicians.

In the corridor outside the examination hall, Alfea waited boringly for the test to end. Suddenly, Alfea's brows knitted together and she looked at the side.

She saw Booth, the Magician in a grey robe, walking over with the company of Oupu and Oberth...

## Chapter 84 – How Can This Boy Joke About Breaking Through the Horizon?

---

Due to certain reasons, Alfea did not wish to meet this father and son pair, Oupu and Oberth. However, since all of them were present in the corridor, the other party would have noticed her and so she couldn't just walk away, pretending not to see them. Therefore, Alfea reigned in her conscious actions and portrayed herself as a gentle junior. When the other party walked closer to her, she greeted them, "Mr. Booth, Guild Master Oupu, and Mr. Basgen, How fortuitous for me, that we should meet here today."

Alfea intentionally left out Oberth's name in her greetings.

This made Oberth's complexion turn slightly unpleasant, luckily the others didn't notice. While Oberth's father happily conversed with Alfea, "Alfea, why are you here? You must have made a special trip, as you knew that today is the day that Mr. Booth, is accepting Oberth as his disciple. Hehe. Since you made a special trip down, why did you not inform us? You've missed the opportunity to see Oberth and Mr. Booth signing of the sacred 'Master and Disciple Contract'." As he continued interacting with Alfea, he turned his head and introduced Alfea to Booth, "Mr. Booth, This beautiful lady is Alfea, and she is the precious daughter of Stan City's, City Lord. She is also Oberth's childhood friend."

Upon hearing Oupu introduction as 'Oberth's childhood friend', Alfea subconsciously displayed a look of vexation throughout her face. However, she continued to tolerate Oupu's sarcastic words and bowed to greet Booth with a smile, "Mr. Booth, after hearing

news that you'll be staying in Stan City for some time, my father has always wanted to invite you over to the City Lord's Manor for a meal, but he never had a chance."

"I've heard of City Lord Eric's name a long time ago. If I have a chance, I'll definitely visit him at the City Lord's Manor." Booth replied in a tactful manner. Eric is the only level nine Swordsman in the whole of Stan City, while Booth is a level nine Magician trying to break through the boundary as a Magician, hence some interaction with Eric might do Booth some good.

"I'll have my father to send you an invitation then." Alfea smilingly said.

Booth responded with a jovial smile, indicating that he actually likes Alfea. He then thought of something suddenly and spoke up, "By the way, did you really come to the Magician Guild especially for Oberth?"

"Mr. Booth, you've misunderstood my intentions. I'm here to accompany my friend who's taking his level three Magician examination." Alfea explained as she took a glance at Oberth. [I've only beaten Oberth up when he was young a few times. How can I be considered his childhood friend? What a joke!] She then pointed to the examination hall, "He's still doing the test."

Oupu finally realized that he made a mistake, but as the Magician Guild Master, he could not reveal it. He then looked towards the examination hall in the direction of Alfea's pointing finger and asked, "I wonder which of the candidates in the test is Alfea's friend. If the Magician is qualified to be Alfea's friend, then he

must be an extremely talented Magician. Is this the person with good magic skills, Basgen was referring to Alfea's friend?"

"Miss Alfea, are you referring to Hammer?" Basgen had already noticed Ye Chui, who was somewhat familiar to him, forming the magic model in the examination hall. Oupu then interrupted, "I wasn't referring to Hammer, but Arcaz. It seems like he has successfully passed the test. This talented youth was the person that I found in a nearby village. After bringing him over to Stan City for just three months, he's made vast improvements. Therefore, this level three Magician's examination should not pose a problem to him." He paused for a while before continuing on, "Oh, that Hammer is not bad as well."

"However, it seems like Hammer cannot compare himself to that of Arcaz, who was mentioned by Mr. Basgen since he's still unable to complete the forming of the magic model," Oberth spoke up hurriedly. After realizing that the person with good magic skills Basgen was referring to was not Hammer, he heaved a sigh of relief.

"Both you and Hammer both joined the ancient tomb adventure organized by me a few days ago, so I believe you a good estimate of his magic skills," Alfea said towards Oberth smilingly. Although she was smiling, Oberth could sense that she was being sarcastic.

"Some mishaps occurred during the ancient tomb adventure, but Oberth has been reluctant to tell me about it." Oupu frowned and said, "Miss Alfea, did something interesting really happen during the adventure?"

“I wouldn’t consider it as interesting, but if not for Hammer, the entire adventure group would have died in the horrifying ancient tomb.” Alfea still had a smile plastered on her face as she said this, despite staring wide-eyed at Oberth.

Alfea’s stare made Oberth’s face turn red from awkwardness, as he did not at all mention a word about the ancient tomb adventure to his father. Now, he started to mention some happenings during the adventure in a wishy-washy manner, “Indeed, Hammer had helped us a great deal during the adventure... and he had very good luck.”

“Luck?” Oupu looked at his son with a disdainful gaze, as he thought in his heart that he must get to the bottom of what happened in the ancient tomb when they get back home. On the other hand, a loathing expression could be seen expressed on Booth’s face. Booth and Oupu are experienced people in their respective fields, so they would not believe in luck. It is bad enough that Oberth did not want to recognize Ye Chui’s talent, but to credit his performance in the ancient tomb to luck is ridiculous... This student was increasingly getting on Booth’s nerves.

As Basgen sensed that the atmosphere was getting increasingly special, he quickly changed his conversation topic and beckoned Arcaz to come over. He then introduced Booth and the others to him. It could be seen that Basgen liked this arrogant youth and it seems like Basgen would like Arcaz to become a disciple of Booth. Now, Booth acted as though he did not get the hint. [Do you think that it’s so easy to become my disciple? After accepting Oberth as my disciple, I’ve regretted my decision...]

Under Basgen's introduction, Arcaz finally found out that the beautiful girl whom he fell in love at first sight; outside the Magician Guild was actually City Lord's daughter, Alfea. This made his eyes light up instantly, as he thought that the ultimate combination between his immense magic talent and Alfea's status as the City Lord's daughter would give him a bright prospect. Narcissistic people tend to have a good imagination.

Both Alfea and Oberth had their attention focused on the proceedings of the test in the examination hall, especially on Ye Chui's progress.

An hour had passed and the bald middle-aged candidate stood up suddenly, announcing his forfeiture of the test. He had seemingly encountered such a huge hurdle when constructing the magic model, that he had no choice but to give up.

After another 30 minutes, both the female candidates successfully completed the magic model and released the magic spell, thus passing the test.

Now, Ye Chui was the only candidate left doing the test.

Thirty minutes still remained.

At the side of the examination hall was an hourglass with sand grains falling to the bottom every second, signaling the loss of precious time.



At this time, Oberth already had a sinister smile plastered on his face. [I haven't been able to form the magic model of <Gale's Baptism> for the past six months. If Hammer manages to complete it, then it'll be the greatest miracle ever!]

Alfea also had a weird facial expression. According to her understanding of Ye Chui, the test should not pose a problem to him.

Arcaz, who was busy answering Booth's questions, had his attention focused on Ye Chui as well. Although he did not know who Ye Chui was, he had already treated him as an imaginary love rival after seeing how Alfea was so concerned about his progress in the test. Arcaz had an inexplicable sense of satisfaction in his heart. [If this idiot can't even pass the second test of the level three Magician examination, how can he qualify to vie with me for Alfea?]

It was the final few minutes of the test.

Almost all the sand in the hourglass had fallen to the bottom.

At the split second when the last sand grain fell towards the bottom of the hourglass, Ye Chui stood up in a lethargic manner, "I've completed the magic model."

"What?" Oberth and Diya, the only ones who knew the truth of the test question, were both dumbstruck. They then had some unfounded thoughts. [How can this boy joke about breaking through the horizon?]

“Are you certain?” Diya inquired.

Ye Chui nodded his head and walked over to the spot where the previous few candidates were tested for the release of magic spells. He then pulled out his magic wand from his waist and waved it forward, “Gale’s Baptism.”

The name of the magic spell made Oberth, who was not focused on Ye Chui, to turn his head towards the examination hall.

In the next moment, it was as though the entire examination hall had fallen into darkness.

The might of an intermediate offensive spell was definitely extraordinary...

# Chapter 85 – You Can Use This Magic Spell at Will in The Future

---

The offensive capabilities and imposing aura of an intermediate offensive spell far surpassed that of an elementary offensive spell. Therefore, it was no surprise that the scene created by an intermediate offensive spell was beyond Ye Chui's wildest imagination.

At that instant when the magic matrix was input into the magic wand and released together with magic power into the air, the entire examination hall fell into darkness. Accompanying the blinding darkness was a sense of pressure which seemed to be caused by a gust of wind and shower.

The examination hall is a room with closed windows and doors. So, where did the wind and shower come from?

Diya, who was standing closest to the position where Ye Chui released the magic spell, did actually feel like he was in the middle of a vast plain. Howling sounds of the wind surrounded him, as he started to tremble in fear. Thereafter, strong gusts of wind started blowing and showers began to pour down from the sky, as though the heavens were conducting baptism.

Huuu

Huuu

Intermittent howling sounds of the wind can be heard suddenly within the hall. From low-pitched to high-pitched; and from slow to fast, the howling sounds began to fill the room. The curtains at one side of the examination hall were blown upwards involuntarily, some documents on the tables were strewn into the air, while krrk, krrk sounds echoed from the tables and chairs, as the strong winds caused them to shift positions.

As though the destruction caused by the gale was not enough, a stool was lifted off the ground with a whizzing sound as the might of the gale got increasingly stronger. However, the stool did not knock into the walls of the examination hall; instead, it maneuvered around the perimeters of the room, as though it was guided by a pair of invincible hands.

One chair, two chairs, three chairs...

It was not before long that a table could not withstand the might of the gale, as it was lifted off the ground as well. One table, two tables, three tables...

Extreme horror and panic could be seen from Diya's expression, as his swaying body could not stop in motion. His last resort was to pull out his magic wand from his waist and release three magic spells underneath his feet to prevent himself from floating in the air like those chairs and tables. At this moment, Diya had almost been frightened to death. Looking towards Ye Chui, who was positioned in the middle of the gale storm, Diya thought for one second that he was looking at an arrogant demon god.

This is the might of an intermediate offensive spell.

Compared to intermediate offensive spells, elementary offensive spells could be considered child's play!

All of a sudden, everything stopped. The airborne chairs and tables all fell to the ground simultaneously, producing a series of loud thuds. The curtains and documents, which were originally blown upwards by the gale, now returned to their original state.

Alfea, who was originally standing at the entrance of the examination hall in amazement, suddenly dashed into the room when she saw that something was amiss. She quickly caught Ye Chui in her embrace just before his weak body fell to the ground. The reason as to why <Gale's Baptism> stopped all of a sudden was because Ye Chui had exhausted his spiritual power and magic power. This magic spell was considered too overwhelming for him to release.

Due to his current standard as an elementary Magician, Ye Chui did not have the capabilities to completely release this magic spell, despite him comprehending the magic spell completely.

The Magicians in the examination hall gradually regained their consciousness, before they stared wide-eyed at Ye Chui, who was currently in the embrace of Alfea. Ye Chui's face was as pale as a sheet; and if he were to open his eyes, one would be able to notice streaks of blood in his eyes.

Basgen hurriedly walked into the examination hall, pulled out his magic wand from his waist and directed it at Ye Chui, "Holy

Light's Illumination!”

Intermediate auxiliary spell, <Holy Light's Illumination>.

This was a treatment light spell that could rapidly restore spiritual power and magic power.

Intermittent gentle rays of white light emitted from Basgen's magic wand and wrapped around Ye Chui. It could be seen that Ye Chui's pale face gradually regained its radiance; and when he opened his eyes this time, no streaks of blood could be seen.

“Are you feeling better?” Basgen asked Ye Chui, as he kept his magic wand.

“Thanks, Mr. Basgen. I'm feeling much better now.” Ye Chui answered. Despite feeling much better, Ye Chui had no intention of leaving Alfea's embrace. [Lying in Alfea's arms is so warm and comfortable...]

Alfea, on the other hand, did not expect Ye Chui to have that thought. She merely felt that he might not have fully recovered from the fatigue. She then held him to a nearby chair to sit down, before asking him in a worried tone, “Hammer, what were you doing? What was that spell that you released just now? How did you manage to release such a powerful spell?”

“I would also like to know what happened just now.” Basgen said with a hint of anger in his voice, “Are you tired of living? How can

you release such a powerful spell at your level? If I didn't use <Holy Light's Illumination> on you, you would need to recuperate in bed for at least half a month before being able to practice magic again!"

Oupu, Booth, and Arcaz, who were all standing outside the examination hall, walked into the room. Other than Diya and Oberth who knew the truth, the others thought that Ye Chui released such a powerful spell on purpose, or even attempted to impress Booth on his magic skills.

Ye Chui felt a little puzzled and questioned all of them, "But this magic spell was my examination question."

"What nonsense are you talking?" Basgen asked Ye Chui angrily, "The second test of the level three Magician examination is about forming magic models and the magic spells provided to candidates are usually simple ones. How is it possible that the examination question was an intermediate offensive spell? This wouldn't even happen for a level four or five Magician examination!"

Listening to Basgen's furious laments, Ye Chui stood dumbstruck momentarily, as though he understood something. He then shook his head in laughter and glanced at Oberth, before continuing his explanation, "But my examination is an intermediate offensive spell, Mr. Basgen. The parchment is still right there, so you can see it for yourself."

Oberth made eye contact with Ye Chui for an instant, before avoiding it hurriedly.

Oupu, the Magician Guild Master, had been frowning since just now. Oberth's small movements did not escape Oupu's sharp eyes when Ye Chui glanced at Oberth for a mere second. Oupu had a revelation all of a sudden and fury could be seen in his eyes, as he started to curse and swear at his stupid son in his heart.

With a wave of Basgen's magic wand, the piece of parchment lying on the ground near the window flew directly to his hands. After opening the parchment to take a look at the examination question, Basgen's face was filled with shock instantaneously, "This... is indeed an intermediate offensive spell. Moreover, it's <Gale's baptism>. Isn't... this the magic spell invented by the Magician Guild Master? Diya, why is this magic spell used in Hammer's examination question?"

"I... This..." Diya's expression had already turned pale, as she subconsciously looked towards Oberth.

Oberth had an even more helpless expression plastered on his face.

"Keke..." At this moment, Oupu started breaking out into fake laughter, as he explained in an indifferent expression, "I'd asked Oberth to give this magic spell to Hammer as his examination question. Hammer had saved my son, Oberth, once during the ancient tomb adventure, so this is my reciprocal gift to him. Haha... Seeing that Hammer's was able to form the magic model of this magic spell, it proves that he indeed has a gift for magic."

Experience does matter indeed; Oupu had managed to quickly analyse the entire story. <Gale's Baptism> was a magic spell



invented by him, hence besides him, Oberth was the only other person in the world who had that spell. The examination question on the parchment was obviously the works of Oberth; and he had meant for it make Ye Chui fail the test. However, Oberth's meticulous plan backfired, as he did not expect him to complete forming the magic model within a short span of two hours.

Under normal circumstances, such a despicable act could be considered a disgrace; and Oupu would be able to deal with Ye Chui, an elementary Magician, easily. However, since Oberth committed such a despicable act in front of Booth, Oupu had to deliberate carefully on how to resolve this matter; otherwise, it could incur the wrath of this level nine Magician. Although Oupu really wanted to reprimand his stupid son in his heart, he had no choice but to find a way to resolve this crisis.

The surrounding crowd had unusual expressions on their faces, as they could already tell what was going on. It was deemed reasonable to say that Oupu gave the magic spell to Ye Chui as a Thanksgiving gift, but it would be ridiculous to say that Ye Chui's examination question was intentionally changed from a basic magic spell to that of an intermediate magic spell. No one would believe that it was a kind act!

It was a pity for Oberth, but it was a blessing in disguise for Ye Chui.

"So, that was what happened..." Ye Chui stood up from the chair in a swaying fashion. He then looked at Oupu with a smile, "Guild Master Oupu, I didn't expect you to be so generous to the extent that you gave an intermediate magic spell to me. Will I then be

able to use this magic spell at will in the future?”

Magic spells could be considered the most valuable thing in this fantasy world. <Gale's Baptism>, a magic spell specially invented by a level seven Magician, was even more valuable. Although Ye Chui had learned this magic spell in the examination, Oupu still had the right to erase the magic model from Ye Chui's memory.

But now...

Oupu's face suddenly turned as pale as a sheet. He had originally said that to help Oberth resolve the crisis but did not expect Ye Chui to follow the flow of his story and claim the intermediate magic spell as his own. Oupu felt dissatisfied in his heart, but upon seeing Booth's increasing curiosity, he could only tolerate the loss and forcefully smiled, “That's for sure! You can use the magic spell at will in the future...”

# Chapter 86 – Can I Reject Your Offer of Accepting Me as Your Disciple?

---

“Oberth, you’ve paid a really huge price in reciprocation of Hammer’s act of kindness.” At this moment, Alfea spoke to Oberth in a weird tone.

Alfea had naturally understood that Ye Chui’s tough examination question was by no means any coincidence. She then thought in her heart. [Oberth actually dared to pull off some underhand tricks, even though I’m here today.] This despicable act of Oberth’s was deplorable in Alfea’s eyes; she even felt that Oberth had gotten even more idiotic after the ancient tomb adventure. [Fortunately, Ye Chui didn’t fall for Oberth’s trick and even managed to obtain an intermediate offensive spell. That idiot must be left fuming!]

Oberth let out a few sounds of forced laughter. He then made eye contact with his father, before sensing extreme anger in his eyes. He could not help but feel terrified. [My father’s going to kill me when we get back home... That darned Hammer, how did he manage to form the magic model of the intermediate offensive spell in merely two hours, when I can’t even figure it out in six months?!!]

Arcaz, who had originally viewed Ye Chui in an arrogant manner, was no longer seeing him in the same light. Despite completing the magic model a basic auxiliary spell within 30 minutes of the test and having felt that his capabilities was much better than that of Ye Chui’s, he could now only admire Ye Chui in awe when he found out that Ye Chui managed to form the magic model of an intermediate offensive spell within a short span of two

hours.

When comparing Ye Chui to himself, he felt that his magic skills were laughable and pitiful...

This particular incident in the examination hall had led to different people having an assortment of feelings. However, Ye Chui was not the lead of the day after all; it was Booth, the level nine Magician. Both Basgen and Oupu were present at the examination hall was only because Booth had agreed to personally invigilate the last test on magic theory.

Therefore, Basgen hid his amazement due to Ye Chui's stellar performance and said, "No one had expected such an interesting event to happen, but the level three Magician examination must continue as per planned. Since Mr Booth is going to personally invigilate the third test of the examination, it's your golden opportunity to display your talent. Why don't we commence the third test right now? Diya, go and call the other two candidates."

Previously, one of the three middle-aged candidates automatically forfeited his chance in the second test of the examination. On the other hand, the remaining two middle-aged ladies who passed the test were now resting in a nearby restroom. Diya, who was breaking out in cold sweat while standing at one side, hurriedly responded to Basgen's request and left the hall in a hurry. He then returned with the two female candidates.

Despite feeling frustrated and pissed, Oupu had to keep his promise and give the intermediate offensive spell to Ye Chui, since Booth was present at the scene. Furthermore, Oupu personally

went into Diya's room and arranged the tables and chairs in a neat fashion, as he had to appear hospitable to the guest invigilator. He then invited Booth to take a seat in the middle of the room, before asking the four candidates to enter the room for the third test.

This test is the hardest of the three, as it requires the candidates to possess basic comprehension of magic theory. As with former examinations, most candidates would be eliminated at this stage.

Booth's soothing gaze sized up the four candidates, as he smiled slightly and said, "I've been dealing with space magic all my life; and space element is the magic element which I'm most familiar with. Since I'm invited to invigilate a test on magic theory, then I guess... I shall ask the following question. What is space element, based on your understanding of it?"

When this question was asked, almost everyone at the scene were slightly taken aback.

Everyone knows that there are a total of seven basic elements in magic, of which three are considered the most profound. They are dark element, light element and space element. An ordinary Magician would only officially deal with space element when he becomes an intermediate Magician. Hence, it was obviously an intentional move by Booth to test the elementary Magicians on space magic.

Of the four candidates, all except Ye Chui had an awkward expression on their faces, as they quickly pondered over Booth's question.

On the other hand, Ye Chui had a rather calm expression. Having understood the concept of space magic a long time ago, all he needed to do was to phrase his comprehension into proper sentences. His phrasing could ultimately decide whether he gets to pass this level three Magician examination, hence he had to be extra cautious with his words. If he were to fail the examination, Debbie would deduct a month's worth of pocket money from him. So, how can he treat this lightly?

After about three minutes, Arcaz was the first one who stood up.

“You’ve thought it through? Let’s hear what you’ve got.” Booth laughingly said to Arcaz.

“In my opinion, I feel that space element is similar to water, wind, earth, lightning and fire elements in terms of essence; and it’s a mysterious element that floats around us. When one uses space magic, one will be able to gather these mysterious elements floating in the air to complete the space magic.” Arcaz tried to explain in a nervous tone, “If my conjecture is correct, this element is an independent space. When a large amount of such an element is gathered, a large-scale independent space will be formed. This is the essence of space element.”

After his interpretation of space element, Arcaz sized up Booth’s expression in an anxious manner.

“Umm, it’s not a bad attempt. It’s already very good that you’re able to explain these.” It seemed that Booth was rather satisfied

with Arcaz's explanation.

This allowed Arcaz to have a sigh of relief. He then subconsciously scanned Ye Chui from head to toe and felt that he was on par with Ye Chui's magic skills. [At least I managed to win back one point in this magic theory test...]

Ye Chui shook his head discreetly in disapproval, before getting back to the task at hand.

The two female candidates then went on to explain their understanding of space element. Their understanding of space element was largely similar to that of Arcaz's – space element is an independent space that floats in the air.

Ye Chui was the last to answer the question.

“Hammer, what are your views?” Booth sized Ye Chui up with a smile. The others in the crowd looked towards Ye Chui – Alfea was worried, Oupu and Basgen were both curious about Ye Chui's answer, while Arcaz and Oberth had evil thoughts as they hoped that Ye Chui would not provide Booth with a satisfactory answer.

“I think that...” Ye Chui paused for a moment before continuing, “Space element isn't an independent space that floats in the air.”

Ye Chui's sentence immediately opposed the answers from the previous three candidates.

“Oh?” Booth seemed to be more interested to hear more, as he inquired further, “Then what do you think space element is?”

“If I had to describe it, space element isn’t an independent space, but a form of energy that can be transmitted. In all, the essence of space magic is the assembly of various transmitting energies, which allows the Magician who cast the space magic spell to communicate with another independent space. According to my conjecture, that independent space doesn’t exist in this world and it’s an independent world that had already existed. The amount of transmitting energy determines the size of the independent world that the Magician can communicate with.

Ye Chui explained his understanding in a calm manner. He originally had some understanding of the essence of space element, but after reading some articles on space magic from the magic crystal, he was certain that his understanding of space element was accurate. Of course, Ye Chui had no clue whether those articles on space magic were left behind by Booth or not.

Upon hearing what Ye Chui had to say about space element, the huge crowd started discussing among themselves. Apart from Booth, all other Magicians thought that Ye Chui’s explanation was nonsensical.

Most people would think that space magic was all about creating an independent space, but Ye Chui actually thinks that the independent space already existed? And that space magic, in reality, is a form of energy that can be transmitted?

Including Oupu and Basgen, the entire crowd thought that Ye



Chui's explanation was illogical. Although on Oupu is a level seven Magician and Basgen is a level five Magician, both of them are not well-versed in space magic and have not grasp the essence of space element.

As for Arcaz and Oberth, they simply thought that Ye Chui's explanation was laughable.

"Hammer, you think that space magic isn't about creating an independent space, but a means of communication to an existing space?" Oberth could not help but mock Ye Chui, "How did you even come up with such a hilarious explanation?!" He then laughed and looked at Booth, "Mentor, what do you think?"

"What an apt description!" Booth stared right in Ye Chui's eyes and commented.

"You see, even my mentor thinks that your concept is hilarious." Oberth was even more satisfied.

"You idiot! I said that Hammer's absolutely right!"

Due to extreme elation, Booth jumped from his chair, before dashing towards Ye Chui and grabbing him firmly on his shoulders. Booth's gaze seemed as though he was a hunter after his prey, "Your understanding of space element is extremely accurate. I've never met an elementary Magician who's able to describe space element in such a precise manner. And judging from your previous performance, I'm certain that you're an extremely rare talent! If you're willing to research into space magic, I'm sure that you'll be

able to achieve big things in this field... Hammer, are you willing to be my disciple? I'll do whatever it takes to groom you in the field of space magic!"

This scene stunned everyone.

What made them even more stunned was about to come.

"Ehh, can I reject?"

Ye Chui gave an easy reply.

# Chapter 87 – How Can He Be So Shameless In Forcing Me To Be His Disciple?!

---

“Err... I wish to refuse...”

Ye Chui’s voice was, by no means, considered loud. However, once his voice left his throat, the entire room turned silent as everyone pondered if their ears were functioning properly. [Refuse? Did this boy just say he wished to refuse?]

For Oberth, as long as he could become Booth’s disciple, he would be willing to use any means to flatter; when he had just discovered Ye Chui took the magic crystal, he spared no time in hesitation to swallow his pride and traded with Ye Chi. He even went so far as to use his father’s status as the Master of the Magician Guild, tasked to maintain Stan City’s Grand Protection array, to steal the ten high grade magician stone to secretly complete the transaction he had made with Ye Chui. He did all of this to become Booth’s student. However, right now, Booth, the man that he had sought to take as his master, had voluntarily requested to become Ye Chui master only to be rejected! How could such a situation be conceivable? This was simply too much to accept!

Since Arcaz well understood Booth’s status, he was also caught speechless. In front of Booth, where he could get the chance to become Booth’s disciple, he exhausted himself to display everything so as to get Booth’s recognition. For Booth to accept Ye Chui with just a few words, Arcaz was already shocked but what took his sanity away was when Ye Chui readily refused to become Booth’s apprentice! It was a golden opportunity that millions wished for and to think it was refused... Such A Waste!

Meanwhile, Oupu and Basgen were gawking without holding back. Initially, Oupu took a glance while Basgen instinctively felt that Ye Chui was not worth much; in other words, talentless. Two hours ago, when they first saw Ye Chui use <Gale's Baptism>, they were shocked beyond words. They had never expected that Ye Chui would have the talent to surpass them. However, the shock was exacerbated when the boy refused the offer.

Alfea, one of the first to recover from the shock, tapped on Ye Chui's shoulder and whispered to him, "Hammer, what are you thinking? How could you reject such a worthwhile opportunity?"

"Have I not already said that I was not interested?" Ye Chui faced Alfea and repeated.

"Well..." Alfea was caught speechless as she recalled of the time she saw Booth entering the Guild. She had joked about being asking her father to make a request to Booth in order to Hammer as his disciple. She had hoped to garner some kind of desire from the boy but he only nonchalant reply: 'no way I'm interested. Anyone would think that he was cracking a joke but when the 'joke' became reality, she now understood that he was completely uninterested in becoming a Specialist Realm Level 9 Magician's Disciple.

Speaking about being in shock, the one that received the most damage was probably Booth.

For Booth, the man who was so absorbed into the mastery of

space magic, there was no time to take in any disciple; when he traversed the world, he was only seeking out pleasure. Many times, he did receive requests to become the master of some people; many of which were comparably horrible when he placed them together with Oberth and Arcaz. Unfortunately, even those two were also unimpressive in his eyes. That is until he met Ye Chui; a youth who had such keen understanding of Space Magic must be cherished. Without an inch of hesitation, Booth immediately knew that he had to take him in as a disciple!

Furthermore, Hammer had displayed his modelling prowess with the two hours test: deciphering, understanding and using. If Booth were to be the one doing the test, he would have absolute confidence to say that he could not have done better than Hammer. If Oberth were to be compared, Hammer would certainly be several times more talented; such a person really, No. Absolutely must be taken in as his disciple!

[But... he rejected my offer...]

The boy in question had rejected the opportunity to be a disciple provided by a Level 9, peak Magician.

“W-w... Why? May I ask your reason for refusing?” Booth spoke with a tone that was slightly perturbed as his face showed a look of complete bewilderment.

Ye Chui had realized that he had rejected too openly and caused this old magician to feel uncomfortable so he somewhat gave a rhetorical question to comfort him. “Mr Booth, if I were to become your disciple, doesn’t that mean I can only study space magic from

here on out with you?”

“Of course. I mean to be humble myself but my mastery of Space Magic could be said to be the best in not only the Aigen-Daz Continent, but the entire Matan Empire. If you look at all the Magicians around, I am the only one who had mastered Space Magic to the degree of becoming the first person in this era to enter the Specialist Realm. I believe I am fully capable of becoming your master.” Booth excitedly proclaimed.

“No. Mr Booth. You misunderstood what I mean.” Ye Chui hastily tried to correct the old man. “I don’t want to just purely study Space Magic. I wish to learn all manner of magic, appreciating each element for their individual charm.”

Ye Chui understood that he had yet to taste the whole cake which is called magic. In such a scenario, he wished to further research into all the elements: wind, earth, lightning, water, fire, space, darkness and light. Wishing to understand their individual strong points and weak point, he just could not stop at just learning and mastering Space Magic. Therefore, becoming Booth’s disciple and limiting himself to just one element was something that he would absolutely not agree upon. After all, his goal is not becoming a space magic master but becoming an Omni-Magician!

Shock filled the entire room as everyone was tongue tied by what Ye Chui had said. Before Specialist Realm, all Magicians must go through smaller stages: Elementary, to Intermediate, and to Advanced. Typically, most Magicians would achieve Specialist Realm due to cultivating and research on a single element – hence the name. For example, Basgen dedicated himself to Light Magic

while Oupu dedicated himself to Wind Magic. From their perspective, to think about mastering all seven elements was a joke. It was simply too hard.

Of course, this realm of understanding had come to their minds before. Hence, they all understood what Ye Chui meant, and the grand idea of being an ‘Omni-Magician’. However, knowing full well the difficulty of the boy’s ideas, they could not help but scoff after they regain some semblance of tranquility back into their mental state. [Who does he think he is? Trying to master all seven elements and become an Omni-Magician. Does he think he is the Magic Emperor of yore, that lived 10,000 years ago?]

Their scoffing when unnoticed by Booth, who was now deeply in praise for the young man in front of him. This youth had lofty aspirations and high ideals. If one were to include his capabilities, Booth was more hard set. [This boy. I absolutely must take him as my disciple!]

With this train of thought, Booth shamelessly continued to sell himself. “Space Magic can be considered to be one of the most formidable elements out of the seven. You can use it to attack as well as defend. You can also earn a considerable amount of money from making space rings and other magic creations. Are you sure that you don’t want to rethink your decision?”

“Sorry.” Ye chui firmly shook his head as he was well aware that he had once again disappointed this old man. Therefore, he quickly sought to escape from this situation and turned to Oupu. “Guild Master, have I passed the Level 3 Magician Exam?”

“Of course...” Oupu nodded while giving a side glance at Booth, the examiner for the last magic theory test. Therefore, the results for all four examinees rest on Booth’s decision.

Booth gave a soft sigh but quickly displayed a gentle smile. “Hammer, you of course passed. Congratulations on becoming a Level 3 Magician.”

Awaiting their promotion, Arcaz and the other two examinees looked at the old man with anticipation. However, Booth gave a regretful look and passed his judgement. “Sadly, Hammer’s performance was too perfect. Truth be told, if Hammer wasn’t here, you all would most likely have passed. However, I can only regret that you all seemed too underwhelming.”

Arcaz and the rest immediately displayed a look of anguish as they now understood that Ye Chui had brought them failure. However, right now, none of them could direct any hate to Ye Chui. After all, his ability truly far surpassed theirs. Hence, they only felt a welling jealousy from their hearts.

Basgen, as the Magician Guild’s clerk, told Ye Chui that after achieving Magician Level 3, he needed to do some matters. After becoming a Level 3 Magician, he would later need to update his information at the Magician Guild; only by doing so, he would be recognized as a Level 3 Magician outside. At the same time, after achieving Magician Level 3, Ye Chui would get to receive more benefits when purchasing Magic Wands, Magic Inks, Parchments and other Magic related products.

It was only after handling such matters that Ye Chui could leave



the Magician Guild.

“This afternoon, are you free to have lunch with me Hammer?” Booth obviously did not falter and continued to pull on Ye Chui’s arm. With such persistence, Oupu and the rest were once again filled with shock. Typically, when Oupu or the others ask Booth out for a meal, the old man would give a half-hearted reply. Most of the time, he would refuse as well. But now, he was the one who took the initiative to ask Ye Chui to have a meal together!

However, the shock that befell on the audience did not rest as Ye Chui caused another rupture.

“Well... I’m embarrassed to say this but I have to prepare the meal for Debbie, my family member, this afternoon...” Ye Chui responded with a self-conscious look.

[He Rejected the Offer!]

[My God! He Rejected Again!]

Oupu, Basgen, Oberth and the others in the room felt their heart drop.

Booth did not falter yet again and gave a nod. Taking a split second, he briefly considered his options and made a cunning smile which fit that of a wise old magician. “Alright. Then, how about I go to your place to have lunch?”

[My god. How can this old magician be so shameless even after I refused?]

Ye Chui was caught speechless but in the end, caved in and replied: "...alright."

The pair soon left the scene. However, Oberth, after seeing Booth so jovial while chatting and strolling by Ye Chui's side, could not help but cry out, "Master! Father has already appointed a table at Moran Flower, a grand restaurant in your honor. It's said that the magic beast cows they cook up is a delicacy that is incomparable to the other food of this world! So..."

"I don't have the appetite, So do eat my fill in my stead. Thanks." Booth ill-humoredly turned his head for a second to say his piece before returning his attention back to Ye Chui. "Hammer, what do you plan on making this afternoon?"

"Oh... I'm planning on cooking up noodles..."

"Noodle sounds great. They are my favorite."

"..." (Everyone)

## Chapter 88 – Ten Copper is Already Considered to be Generous

---

Debbie was filled with pent up frustration after her test. At noon, she headed back to the new Anthony's Magic Cottage with her greatsword in hand. However, the brand new clothes that she had left with in the morning were now slightly tattered out; it was obvious that she had experienced some sort of battle but remained largely unharmed.

By the time Ye Chui had returned, Debbie was at the entrance of the door. Vexed, she lightly greeted the two and quickly headed off to the shower to bathe and have a new fresh change of clothes.

Seeing Ye Chui's worried expression as he noticed something was off, Alfea softly explained to him in private after they both entered the kitchen. "She passed the Level 3 Swordsman exam. However, she was too over confident and further wanted to take part in the Level 4 Swordsman exam. The examiner accepted her request and took her on. I've early told her that her present strength is at the peak of Level 3 but she still wanted to try for Level 4... naturally, she did not pass. But you can rest assured that the Swordsman examiner did not harm her too much as he gave himself a lot of handicap."

Ye Chui felt relieved and shortly after, he dried his wet hands using his shirt. "Alright. Lunch is served."

By the time he had made the announcement, Booth, the old man who was here still trying to make Ye Chui his apprentice, as well as Alfea, were both leisurely sitting on the dining table awaiting their

meal to be served. Watching over such a scene, Ye Chui could not help but sigh. [These two are too used to being served by others...]

After some time, Ye Chui alone had prepared four abundant bowls of noodles on the table.

On the surface, these noodles seemed normal. However, they were made with something not yet discovered in this world: tomato egg sauce.

Since it was not Alfea's first time eating, she practically gobbled down her food causing loud slurping sounds. Booth on the other hand, was new to the dish and took a small bite. However, this small sample was enough to cause gluttony to be invoked, quickly causing him to frantically slurp everything in.

Shortly after changing, Debbie, still panting in rage, sat at the dining table and without speaking, started slurping in her noodles as well.

It was only after half of the bowl was eaten, that her small fist pounded onto the table as she declared: "The next time I go for the Swordsman Examination, I will no longer care about my face. I will definitely chop that examiner into mincemeat! That cheater used a Swordsman Skill to repel me. Obviously I must return that bully a favor!"

"Both tests for Intermediate Magicians and Intermediate Swordsmen are similar. They require the examinee to unravel their respective Magic Array or Sword Skill. In that Level 4

examination, your failure is not an undeserving one.” Alfea chuckled.

“Then why does he not use that same Swordsman Skill against the other Examinees?” the unconvinced Debbie asked.

“Isn’t it the case that you were strong enough to push your examiner to that degree?” Alfea patted on Debbie’s shoulder with a gentle smile. “If we are to talk about your abilities, your battle sense is already at the standard of an Intermediate Swordsman. After all, you were able to keep up with me back in the Ancient Tomb. But the test evaluation that you need to face in order to become an Intermediate Swordsman requires not only exceptional battle sense but Sword Aura as well.”

An Elementary Swordsman cannot be compared to an Intermediate Swordsman in terms of their Sword Aura. An Intermediate Swordsman’s Sword Aura is denser to the degree where Sword Skills can be produced. One example of a Swordsman Skill is <Protection of War God>.

All Intermediate Swordsman will try and learn a few Swordsman Skills. However, the majority of Level 4 Swordsmen can only learn <Protection of War God>, a skill which allows the user to preserve their life. When one promotes past Level 4 and enter Level 5, they would, like Alfea, be able to use multiple Swordsman Skills. Alfea herself was capable of using three different Swordsman Skills. However, it was just that in the Ancient Tomb, when facing against the Statue Swordsman and Puppet Swordsman, that she did not have the opportunity to show off her other Swordsman Skills.

In the Level 4 Swordsman exam, although Debbie had the battle senses, she completely lacked the important aspect of Sword Aura to promote. Even if the examiner was to hit her back, it was simply to push the girl to display her full powers. Debbie's Giant Spinning Top was a technique and could not be considered to be a Sword Skill. Hence the reason for her failure.

“Anyways, for you to pass the exam, you must definitely change your Sword Aura's quality.” Alfea explained, to which Debbie could only respond with downcast eyes. Seeing her friend making such a sad expression, Alfea gave a soft smile and tried to relieve the situation, “In a few days, I will be a leader of a patrol unit. Why don't you come along with me? We can fight Magic Beasts together and perhaps, that could even give you some enlightenment in promoting. For me, it was during a patrol such as the one I am assigned to in a few days, that allowed my Sword Aura to change.”

Alfea's words quickly affected Debbie's mood as the little girl felt better to the degree where she could finally feel that someone that she did not recognize was sitting opposite of her. With her big round eye staring for at the old man, she asked: “Hammer, who is this old man?”

[So she finally realized that someone else was eating with us...]

Gulp Alfea's complexion took a dive. Booth was a person that even her father, the City Lord, had to treat with good manners. However, what Debbie displayed was rude and unsightly. Flustered and in a panic, Alfea sought to quickly explain to Booth the situation and ask for his forgiveness but thankfully, Booth simply

laughed the situation off: “I’m Hammer’s good friend. Today, I came over to have try his cooking. I hope you don’t mind.”

“Oh. I don’t mind.” Debbie brazenly walked towards the old man and stated. “But you have to wash the dishes.”

Ye Chui: “...”

Alfea: “...”

Booth initially gawked and gave a hollow laugh, “... ok.”

Debbie suddenly thought of the Level 3 Exam that Ye Chui had taken part in this morning and asked, “Hammer, so how did your test go?”

“I’ve passed” Ye Chui emotionlessly said as he thought that such a test was simply something unworthy to be talked about.

However, Debbie immediately showed a sweet smile. “That’s great! From now on, your allowance each month will increase by 10 copper coins!”

“10... 10? 10 Copper Coins!?” Booth, oblivious to Debbie’s ‘Generosity’ muttered in stupor.

Meanwhile, bead of sweat was produced on Ye Chui’s forehead. [How humiliating...] He thought but in actuality, he was

considered to be well off already. He had already received 200 gold coins from Busca so he did not lack money. However, such a sum would one day run out and to hide its existence from the big prying eyes in front of him, he forcefully acted surprise. “Wow. Ten Gold coins a month. That’s a lot of money.”

Alfea : “...”

Booth: ”...”

Afterwards, Debbie simply continued her meal. Once she was done, she took up her greatsword and headed out to practice. Alfea, on the other hand, who was idling once she had her meal, followed Debbie to practice; Alfea would stand at the side while Debbie continued her practice and give out tips to improve. Ever since the pair had moved Anthony’s Magic Cottage to Stardust Avenue, they temporarily ceased business. Therefore, with ample time on their hands, Debbie would consistently practice with her greatsword each day.

Leaving the two men in the dining area, it really seemed as though Debbie was completely serious in forcing Booth to clean the dishes. Although, in the end, it was still Ye Chui who carried all the dishes to the sink and cleared them up. Meanwhile, Booth, who simply followed Ye Chui along, continued to pester the boy to become his disciple.

“Hammer... your monetary situation seemed to be very bad. Listen. If you study Space Magic from me, you can personally make a space ring; easily earning you dozens of gold coins per ring.”



“... Please, just help me bring that pot of boiling water over here...”

“Here’s the pot of boiling water.”

“ ... ”

“Hammer, although you wish to master all seven elements and become an ‘Omni-Magician’, I must warn you that choosing such a path will be filled with difficulty. Throughout history, ever since the beginning of magic, there has only been one person that accomplished such a feat and that was the Magic Emperor himself. No one else could do it so you might as well place your vain efforts into something more productive like let’s say... Space Magic.”

“Oh. Help me take these two dishes and place them over there to dry.”

After scrubbing all the dishes clean, Ye Chui finally stood at the kitchen door, overlooking Debbie as she practiced diligently with the greatsword. Having thought that some preparation was necessary, Ye Chui needed to leave and wished for Booth to stay back at the house. However, the old man was too afraid of the chance where Ye Chui would run away and refused to stay behind. Eventually, Ye Chui gave in and Booth followed him to Stardust Avenue’s Cara’s Bookstore; more specifically, the small walkway behind Cara’s Magic Bookstore.

Half a month ago, Ye Chui had left a blueprint which he had

designed in Dov, the dwarf's hand. He requested the thing be build and was now back to see it's progress.

[Since Debbie is going to participate in the City Lord's Guard patrol, it's best to be safe than sorry. With this massacring creation, I could even kill god!]

## Chapter 89 – The Massacring Machine: Magic Gatling Gun

---

Ye Chui and Booth both arrived in the small alleyway behind of Cara's Magic Bookstore, and not so far away stood Dove the Dwarf. With a raucous voice, Dove shouted from the shack that seemed like a cave: "Hammer! You came back! Were you too excited to wait any longer to see the product that I've built?"

Ye Chui quickened his pace as his face now looked like that of an excited child.

Booth was also interested in the product that was mentioned before. After seeing Ye Chui so excited, his expectations were also raised. What's more, from his own personal experience, he could already tell what sort of person Dove was like, especially from his heritage as a Dwarf. Like a Dwarf, he cared not about his tattered shack and was only concerned about his creations. When Booth entered the shack, the first thing that caught his eye was a silver coloured object placed on a cabinet. The object was completely unlike anything he had seen before even after living for 70 years. It was most likely a weapon but had a cylinder attached to it; and it was not sharp. In the front, there were six different tubes casted together, attached to a bulky body which held a handle to lift this strange object.

The entire object was casted must have weigh around 30-40 kg and was about half a meter long. Ye Chui, with all his might while clenching his teeth carried this object up and tried to aim at the wall to test it out but was quickly warned by Dove. "If you use it here and this place collapses, Cara will definitely not let me off!"

Ye Chui simply gave off a chuckle while placing the weapon down. “Uncle Dove, did you actually add Fire Enchantment inside as well?”

“Hee. I know you wanted to be the one to do the enchanting but after I built this thing, I could not stop my itchy hands. So, I enchanted it for you. I’ve even used a higher grade Magic Stone so it will last a really long time.” Dove said while excitedly rubbing his hands.

“I must have troubled you...” Ye Chui was caught by surprise. His relationship with Dove was considered to be quite close; asking him to build something for free was not a problem. However, this product was something of extremely high value. Furthermore, the cost of producing it was not cheap. [Does Dove also plan to have enchanted this weapon for free?]

“It’s nothing you need to worry about lad. It was my own itch to help enchant this weapon of yours. To create such a great object is not only my own personal glory but the entire Dwarf race’s glory!” Dove laughed.

“I will definitely tell Debbie that when she uses this weapon against the opponent, she must scream that Dove was the one that created this.” Ye Chui spoke, as he understood what Dove referred to as ‘Dwarf race’s glory’. As Dwarfs were born with an inborn talent as blacksmiths, they were usually building objects for other races in exchange for something they need; barter trade. However, the thing that they valued the most was not material wealth but instead the sense of honor in creating something great with the

talent they were born with. Sometimes, if they managed to craft something worthwhile, they would rather take the pride as the trade rather than material goods.

This weapon of death that was made upon Ye Chui's request was obviously such a creation.

“Oh. That's right.” Dove whisked out a bottle of liquor from one of his side cabinet and with big gulps, he drank. Scratching his stained beard, he continued, “what are you going to call this thing? Every great weapon deserves a name of its own.”

HeeHee Hearing Dove's worry, Ye Chui gave out a satisfied smiled. “I'm going to name it Gatling!”

Obviously, this name was derived from the Gatling gun, an extremely destructive weapon from Ye Chui's world.

A Gatling gun had amazing fire power, with the most powerful model being capable of shooting out 6000 rounds in a single minute. There was once a team sent out to Africa equipped with one Gatling gun to wipe out an African Tribe. A massacre occurred with countless Africans killed at the hands of the soldier using the Gatling gun; such travesties made the Gatling gun uphold its position as one of the world's most tragic weapon.

Of course, the Gatling that Ye Chui had asked Dov to build was not the same kind of Gatling gun made on Earth. Although he was interested in the raw firepower which a Gatling gun could display, he did not have the means to create such a weapon. Hence, the

weapon that he currently held was made using magic, a magic Gatling gun.

The Gatling was made using strong metal tubes as its barrel, providing an enclosed space for the enchanted magic fire array to instantly produce a small explosion upon pulling the trigger; the force produced is then concentrated in a single direction for the steel ball to travel, imitating that of firepower from Sulphur. Of course, this achievement was mainly attributed to the use of magic, making it possible to produce a simpler model than the Gatling gun back from Earth.

According to Ye Chui's calculations, the Magic Gatling can fire up to 300 steel balls per minute. With such fire power, it was necessary to create something to reload the gun. Thankfully, with the help of Dov, Ye Chui used a space ring of 1 cubic meter he had bought for 37 gold coins and connected it to the Gatling, allowing the portable storage of 2 million grape sized steel balls to be reloaded when necessary!

Two million steel balls might sound a lot but to Dove, it was a simple object to make. Using his own experience and mastery of Dwarf blacksmithing, along with this fantasy world's Dwarf forging technology, they far surpassed the capabilities of any human.

Thanking Dov and taking his leave from the place, Ye Chui dragged, with all his might, along the streets a great weapon of death. He headed back to Anthony's Magic Cottage but as he staggered forward, he caught the eyes of many onlookers. Naturally, the onlookers would simply tilt their head in ponder as

to wonder what the strange object Ye Chui was carrying around. Meanwhile, Booth, who was following behind Ye Chui in silence, was looking at the boy in splendor. He had just received some important information from Dov, which is the fact that his 'own disciple' was also an Enchanting Master! What's more, he was at a level that designed the Gatling, an object that managed to rouse a Dwarf's sense of pride and honor!

[I really want to see what this thing really can do!] Booth thought as he stared impatiently as Ye Chui staggered along.

Finally, Ye Chui arrived back at the yard where Debbie was practicing her swordsmanship with Alfea. When they saw the figure of Ye Chui dragging along a strange object, their fighting momentum froze as their gaze was fixed onto the object.

"Hammer, what is this thing?" Debbie, filled with curiosity, was trying to figure out what the object in Ye Chui was carrying around. No longer being able to carry the object with his mere hands, Ye Chui was hugging the Gatling in his chest as beads of sweat rolled down his face and soaked shirt; his face, pale and breathless, seemed miserable beyond words. However, with Debbie's small hands, she easily gripped onto the weapon and carried it up as though it was a simple feather. [This thing... it's almost weighs as much as my greatsword...]

"D-did you not wish to head out on a patrol mission with Alfea? ...This weapon is something I prepared for you." Ye Chui used his sleeves to wipe out his sweat as he spoke, grasping for every moment to breath. When his eyes first laid on the figure carrying the Gatling in one hand, his pupils dilated as he thought to

himself, [This woman carries an entire gas tank like it's a cotton bug!]

“Weapon? This thing?” Debbie’s curiosity got even more roused up as she pierced the Gatling into the ground as a test but was somewhat disappointed. “How am I supposed to use this? Do I throw it was others?”

“...Of course not...”

The breathless and exhausted Ye Chui then continued to explain instructions for the Gatling gun and seeing Debbie get more impatient with every sentence he spoke, he quickly reminded her before she did anything else, “the recoil on that thing is very high so you best brace yourself and be careful.”

“...” as instructed by Ye Cui, Debbie took up the Gatling with both her hands and directed it towards the palm tree at the corner of the courtyard. The little girl’s was slightly flushed red in excitement as her heart palpitated. [This is going to be interesting!]

Meanwhile, Alfea and Booth stood beside the little girl, displaying the same level of curiosity. It was only Ye Chui that understood the situation and desperately covered his ears as he discretely took a few steps back. After his seventh step, the faces of both Booth and Alfea were priceless, a frame that had to be remember in anyone’s heart for all time.

Ba-Ba-Ba-Ba-Ba-Ba- Ba-Ba-Ba-Ba-Ba-Ba



A barrage of sounds ravaged out of the Gatling gun as all six barrels rapidly rotated to dish out hot steel balls, partially burnt thanks to the magic fire array. With the balls being heated up, they all glowed red, producing a bright red line as they shot forward. The heat combined with its momentum gave the steel ball extremely destructive power; the palm tree that was the victim had no chance as each bullet managed to completely pass through its trunk, just thick enough for an adult human to wrap his arms around. Worse of all, Debbie was caught completely unprepared for this burst of power and her whole body could not handle the force, swaying to the side. The target was no longer the tree but instead, the area around it. As the red lines swept over the place, all manner of obstructions were decimated due to the imposing fire power that was the Gatling.

The whole event only lasted for 10 seconds before the gunfire stopped but not only the palm tree, the fencing and walls behind it had completely crumbled.

Completely riddled with shock for words, Alfea and Booth had their jaws wide open at the scene. Debbie, on the other hand, was stiff to the point she could only turn her head slowly back to Ye Chui. With the Gatling releasing a stream of smoke from the tip of its barrel and the her even redder flush face, Debbie excitedly stared at Ye Chui with her big round eyes and exclaimed: "Hammer... this, I like this."

# Chapter 90 – The Women of this World are all Violently Crazy

---

At that moment, the maiden that specialized in the greatsword had instantly transformed into a Loli Machine Gunner.

The two standing closest to Debbie, who had been deceived by their own misunderstanding of the weapon, felt their eardrums tingle with numbness as their dull eyes stared vacantly at the demolished scene covered in black smoke. In a few seconds, their gaze soon leaped onto Debbie's figure, slowly tracing down to that weapon of mass destruction. Once they realised something, their full attention was quickly gathered towards Ye Chui.

They had ever thought that this weapon would be so destructive!

Once again, Alfea could not find herself being able to make any comments. Just because Debbie wanted to go with her to patrol around, he had bought a weapon of mass destruction for her protection. Unable to describe the absurdity of this very scene in front of her, she could only remain speechless.

Booth, on the other hand, was not looking at Ye Chui with eyes filled with desire.

Seeing how 'his disciple' was able to create such a weapon, he was now more convinced than ever that Ye Chui must be taken in as his disciple!

The destructive capabilities of the Gatling was so strong that Swordsmen that were in the Intermediate Realm and below had no hope of resisting its might; even Advanced Swordsmen could not resist it unharmed.

When Booth thought about Oberth, he could not help but be disgusted.

On the other hand, the miracles and abilities that Ye Chui had displayed made the boy stand out as the perfect disciple.

“Where do they sell this thing?” After a long time, Alfea was finally capable of accumulating her thoughts and opened her mouth to speak. However, due to her close to deaf hearing still not being fully healed yet, the volume of her voice was close to shouting.

“There is not a single place in the world that you can buy anything like this.” Ye Chui replied with a laugh and he happily announced: “because, I made this.”

Alfea’s eyes suddenly widened as her line of sight quickly shifted to the Gatling and then back to Debbie. Unable to stop her excitement, she shouted out, “Debbie, please let me try! Please...”

Due to the usual atmosphere around her, Debbie immediately passed the Gatling to Alfea. Upon receiving the weapon, Alfea beamed with joy and took aim at the courtyard storeroom. Following Ye Chui’s previous instructions, she pulled the trigger; when she did so, both Debbie and Booth hastily covered their ears

after the deaf rendering experience they had earlier. However, this time, Ye Chui was simply staring at the Gatling with a grin plastered all over his face, not showing any signs of distress. As he had anticipated, the Gatling only blew out a single Bang! before returning to silence.

“Hammer, what happened?” Alfea turned her head shouted towards Ye Chui.

“This is Debbie’s personal weapon, the Gatling.” Ye Chui responded with a grin.

To use the Gatling, one not only needed to pull the switch, they must also be able to activate their Sword Aura and connect that space ring stored within to the cartridge compartment within the Gatling. Since all the ammunition was made by Dove, the storage was also done by him; and as per Ye Chui’s instructions, after the storage ring was full; Dove was tasked to set the space ring to automatically become owned by the first user of the Gatling. Therefore, the current master of the Gatling was Debbie.

If Debbie herself does not forfeit her rights to the space ring, then the Gatling will forever be only usable by that small little girl for eternity; unless someone like Ye Chui, the Father of Studies, were to unravel the space ring itself.

Alfea’s lips quickly lock together to form a pouting face as she dejectedly returned the Gatling to Debbie. Taking a few more steps forward, she stood in front of Ye Chui and purposefully nudged her shoulder onto his. With a low and charming voice, so charming that it was shocking, she pleaded, “Hammer... won’t you make one

for me? Pleeeaaase?”

“Absolutely not. If you have so much time to plead with me, you should use it to find the Iron Swordsman!” Ye Chui coldly replied. To him, the Gatling was a unique and powerful weapon that should be owned only by Debbie. So, how could he bear making it for others?

What’s more Debbie was, to him, an irreplaceable family member; and to protect herself, she needed a mighty weapon – especially since she got herself into a lot of trouble.

Alfea’s face quickly distorted to show one of rage but after Ye Chui replied in such a direct manner, she understood that there was no chance in this world that she would be able to receive the Gatling from him. Therefore, she could only look in envy as Debbie held the new treasured weapon with a gaze of endearment.

[All of the women in this world are simply violently and crazy.]  
Ye Chui silently sighed in his heart.

When he had the opportunity to turn his attention away, Ye Chui’s gaze met with Booth and he noticed the strange glimmer in the old man’s eyes. Feeling his spine tingling, Ye Chui hastily asked: “What the hell are you staring at me for?”

“I’ve decided!” the old Magician shouted out loud. “Using the rest of my life, I must definitely make you my disciple. You definitely cannot refuse.”

Ye Chui: “...”

After Booth announced his plans, he laughed merrily and walked closer to Debbie, shouting out a question: “Debbie, can I live here for a few days?”

Since Debbie was now in cloud nine, she did not bother thinking of unnecessary things and swiftly replied, “if you wish to live with us, then just live here as long as you like.” However, after noticing her words, she added, “but you must do the dishes and wash our laundry.”

Alfea was caught speechless once again as she thought to herself, [I should quickly tell Debbie what’s Mr. Booth’s status...]

However, not giving enough time for any changes in Debbie’s mind – including time for Alfea to inform Debbie, Booth cheerfully replied: “alright. Leave those chores to me!”

And thus from then on, an old man joined Anthony’s Magic Cottage.

---

It was arranged for Booth to stay over in Ye Chui’s room while the previous owner himself set a bed inside his personal laboratory. Although he was appraised by the girls as being weak, for a young man like him, Ye Chui judged that he did not need to live in extremely comfortable or luxurious quarters. Meanwhile, as the ones in Anthony Magic Cottage were leisurely spending their

day, the gardener from City Lord's Manor was dying from anxiety – though mostly due to overwork. He needed to not only replace the fallen palm tree, but to replace the wall with a gate as well; so that Alfea could have an easy time coming over to have dinner and hang out with Debbie.

After the group finished up their dinner, Booth carried out his role diligently and washed the dishes. Debbie and Alfea continued their training in the courtyard while Ye Chui returned to his lab to conduct research. Sitting under a magic lamp, he was in deep thought.

[Debbie is currently at the peak of Level 3 Swordsman. Let's assume that her fighting awareness is at around that of a Level 5 or Level 6 Swordsman, she would most likely still not be able to compare to any Intermediate Swordsman. However, with the Gatling, her lack of strength has been solved and now, she should be able to match against Swordsmen that were at Level 6. Unfortunately, I'm still not entirely relieved. As she heads out to do the patrol, I will follow behind disguised as the Iron Swordsman. In this world, there are so many unknowns that I have not encountered yet. So, just to be safe, I needed to protect this little sister of mine. A family is, after all, something a man must jump in fire to protect.]

[Well, since Debbie's fighting capabilities have improved, and I have decided to head out. I should probably upgrade my Iron Swordsman suit.]

With a face exhausted from work, Booth entered the lab and saw Ye Chui in deep thought. Sitting beside the boy, he spoke in

understanding: “My good disciple, you seem to be still worried about Debbie. But you should not be. The patrol missions aren’t that dangerous.”

“Please refer to me by my given name... and also, that claim is not foolproof...” Ye Chui brows tighten as he continued. “This is the first time Debbie is participating in such a thing. So, I would naturally not feel relieved at all if there was a hint of danger...” He continued into a silent murmur before opening up to Booth. “I’ve decided to secretly stalk them from behind while they carried out the patrol.”

Booth, in great surprise, exclaimed. “That’s foolish. All the monsters that they will face can appear at anywhere at any time. For a Magician, such a situation would leave you easy to attack”.

“But I do not feel relieved about Debbie’s safety”. Ye Chui firmly added. “For her, I am willing to brave any danger!”

“Are you certain?” Booth asked with both a low and dignified voice.

“Of course I’m sure.”

Sighing, Booth rummaged through his wear. “Since it seems practically impossible to change your mind, I will at least give you something for your own protection.”

Upon hearing Booth’s words, Ye Chui’s eyes lit up. He already



knew that this old man would not allow him to truly encounter any danger, and to protect 'his precious disciple', a great treasure must be given out. Therefore, in high spirits, Ye Chui asked. "Mr. Booth, what are you planning to give me?"

"Well, since these few days I have been imposing on you, taking up your room, I will give you some magic scrolls that I've made." Booth replied nonchalantly.

"What kind of magic scroll?" Ye Chui continued to ask as he assumed it to be a destructive scroll capable of blasting away all enemies in front of him.

"Well, I don't really know how to make many different types of scrolls but with this you will be safe. It's a magic scroll which allows you to teleport away. Extremely powerful to the point that you can escape from any sort of danger you might face."

Ye Chui: "... [a scroll that helps me escape...]

# Chapter 91 – The Three Treasures Booth Gave Ye Chui

---

The City Lord's Manor's routine patrol would take place three days later. In these short three days, Booth, for his precious disciple, had remained in Ye Chui's laboratory to create magic scrolls.

Debbie was also pinning a lot of importance to the upcoming patrol; but she, on the other hand, was busy with Alfea, discussing the Swordsman Skills. Since a patrol is completely different to that of an ancient tomb exploration – with higher chances to battle against magic beasts – Debbie was feverish to go. However, Ye Chui speculated that her exhilarated state was mostly due to his gift, the Gatling. Of course, speculations must come with evidence. When Ye Chui had spare time, he took a walk to the courtyard and saw Debbie sitting on a stone chair, gently caressing the Gatling's barrel. With a smile on her face, she spoke in a clear and crisp voice: "My gun. I really can't wait to use you."

After hearing her words, Ye Chui shuddered.

Finally, three days passed in a blink of an eye and the day has arrived. Everyone was prepared and as though no one wanted to waste a single second, everyone ate their breakfast in an instant. But, as though there was something of more importance, Alfea sat at her table and stared at Ye Chui in anticipation.

"Relax. The Iron Swordsman had already said that he will be waiting outside the city. He will definitely not go against his own words." Ye Chui said convincingly.

Hearing his confirmation, Alfea could finally feel relieved enough to leave with a satisfied smile on her face.

Debbie left to carry her bag and put down her light armour

Meanwhile, Booth called Ye Chui into the laboratory. As the old man poured tobacco into his tobacco pipe, he passed Ye Chui a bag filled with teleportation scrolls. “My precious Disciple. This magic scroll took your Master three days to create. It’s sad that I am old now but I managed to make 100 of these scrolls for you in just three days. If you encounter any form of danger, open up the scroll and use your magic powers to inject the coordinates of your destination. But you must take note. Each scroll can only teleport you one kilometre away from where you used the scroll.”

“Please call me by my name. Thanks... also, I’ve never thought that one would need to input the coordinates with magic powers when using your teleportation scroll.” Ye Chui took up one scroll and continued to question: “So, how can I input the coordinates?”

“Coordinates can be categorised into two types: the first one is specifically defined using space magic, while the second one is a mere approximation of the location. However, for more formidable space Magicians like me, the teleportation magic scroll can be used to teleport me to any specified location despite not setting the coordinates of the location beforehand. As for you, you will not be able to teleport in your desired direction and distance.” Booth touched it using his finger, as a small flame instantaneously appeared from it. He lit his tobacco, took a deep breath in and made eye contact with Ye Chui, “You’ll be able to set coordinates

accurately if you learn space magic from me. Otherwise, where you get teleported to will be entirely left to fate.”

“I’ll prefer to leave it to fate. Thank you.” Ye Chui let out a laugh, as he immediately opened one space magic scroll. He then injected his magic power into the magic scroll and thought of a general direction to teleport to, before he vanished into thin air with a ray of white light under his feet.

The next moment...

“Hammer! How dare you sneak into my room when I’m changing!” Debbie exploded.

“Misunderstanding... This is all a misunderstanding!”

Bang!

Just as Booth walked down the stairs after hearing the noise, he happened to see the scene of Ye Chui getting kicked out of Debbie’s room...

Of course, although Debbie was furious, she did not kick Ye Chui with much force. Hence, Ye Chui managed to pick himself up from the ground quickly with a cheeky smile plastered on his face. He then looked up to see Booth standing at the staircase, “This is fate indeed...”

“...” Booth was speechless.

The two of them went back up to the laboratory and Ye Chui placed all of the teleportation scrolls he had received into his own space ring. When Ye Chui turned around and was about to thank Booth, the old man held out his hand as though preparing for a handshake. With a smile plastered on the old man's face, he swung his hand down and a 50-centimeter long rod appeared. On top of this rod was a green crystal, which made it seem mysterious. Although Ye Chui could not tell what this special object was, his instinct screamed that it was a treasure. With gleaming eyes, he well understood that having this object in his hand will prove extremely useful.

In his excitement, Ye Chui still manages to listen to Booth speak. "When I thought about the situation again, I believe that I should give you more protection for assurance. This cane was made by me when I was still young. Although it is nothing that special, I could not find the heart to discard it. But now, with you here, I might as well give this magic cane to you."

Ye Chui received the gift with utmost haste and immediately injected some of his magic powers into the cane. He felt the potential power held within this magic cane and blinked. "Mr. Booth, how do I use this?"

A magic wand is vastly different to that of the magic cane. For a magic wand, its use is flexible: capable of releasing any type of magic so long as the quality of the wand is sufficient enough. A magic cane, on the other hand, can only be used to activate the magic array carved into it. There is also another clear distinction between the two as the magic wand can only be used by Magicians but the magic cane can be used by anyone who possesses a magic

stone. Therefore, a magic cane is considered a luxurious good that only the wealthy and powerful can own; with few average beings being able to own one. However, the gift that Booth gave Ye Chui could be considered priceless as well.

Currently, Ye Chui, very much like Debbie when she first received the Gatling, was sizing up the magic cane with thoughts of how powerful or destructive this thing was. After all, there was no shred of doubt that the magic cane he had obtained could be considered one of the world's most powerful magic tools.

“You can use it to hide, and stealthily perform your escape.” Booth opened his mouth to speak, letting the gaseous fog leak out. “But you have to take note that while being in stealth mode, you can't use any of your magic powers. If there is another magic interference from you, the stealth magic will dissipate. Therefore, you have to start running away immediately after you activated the magic cane.”

“...” Ye Chui could not bring himself to say anything. [So... this thing is for escape as well...]

Unable to bear to look at Booth, he took some deep breaths and spoke. “Were you a coward in your younger days?”

“Well...” Booth's face turned red as he snorted: “I am a scholarly Magician and tries to avoid any sort of fight the best I can. This does not represent me being incapable of fighting!” Booth placed his tobacco pipe back on the table and wore an earnest expression – though one could still doubt it. “Hammer, I still wish to pass one more gift to you. This object will raise your fighting capabilities

but needs to be used prudently!”

Ye Chui’s disappointed eyes were immediately replaced with bright ones once again as he asked: “What do you plan on giving me, Mr. Booth?”

Booth held his hand together as though in a prayer, and spoke with a serene voice: “Hammer, please accept my sincere blessing.”

“ ... ”

[I wonder if I can curse him...?]

However, Ye Chui’s expression quickly changed as though he had realised something of great importance. “So... this is... well, is this the legendary blessing that only Advanced Magicians can cast?”

Booth’s hand slowly opened up as a white halo slowly formed. It spread out like a fog and finally invaded Ye Chui’s body. Once it was completely absorbed, Ye Chui felt a change within himself as he could suddenly recall a spell. However, this spell did not require him to spare any of his magic power as an expense. It could immediately be activated as he desired. It was a spell which Booth had completed in casting but stored it within him to be used, causing it to be useful to only Ye Chui without any cost.

[So this is the blessing of a Magician.]

Booth, exhausted, spoke out. “This is an Advanced Spell that is used to attack called <Space Rupture>. This is one of the strongest space attack spells, which I have condensed 90% of my magic power to help you cast, and stored it within your body. In other words, you now have a Level 9 Magician’s full power strike in your hands!”



## Chapter 92 – Otherwise, It Isn't As Cool

---

To ensure Ye Chui's safety, Booth had given the boy three different sets of objects: one hundred teleportation scrolls, a magic cane crafted with stealth magic, and a ready to use spell <Space Fissure>.

After accepting all three sets, Ye Chui stared at the exhausted Booth, feeling the warmth of gratitude well up within him. For these past three days, this old man had painstakingly thought through and made three sets of objects for him. Ye Chui had never expected that this old magician would be this concerned; willing to part with such great treasures... [He really wishes to take me in as his disciple...]

“Thank you....” Ye Chui said in pure sincerity.

“You do not need to thank me since you are my disciple. Taking care of you is my duty.”

“No... in order for me to accept so many things from you, I need to thank you,”

“...”

Downstairs, Debbie held onto the bag she had packed, ready to depart at any time. When Ye Chui and Booth climbed down, they saw an impactful scene. A small girl was carrying both her Great Sword and Gatling on her back. If one were to add the combined weight of these two items, it would be more than an adult male (75

kilograms). The mere weight of these two objects had already exceeded Debbie's own weight and to top it off, she was even holding her traveling bag in her hand. Anyone who saw this image would invoke a feeling of valiance.

"I'm going!" Debbie shouted. She stared at Ye Chui, still seemingly bearing a grudge from earlier – where he trespassed into her room. However, just as she was about to pass through the door, she recalled something important and turned around to remind Ye Chui: "Hammer, you must make sure to be careful on your own. I will be gone for a few days, So wait for me before you do anything else."

"Yup, I'll be waiting for you to return safely." Ye Chui said with a smile.

Debbie, reluctant to part ways, stared for a tiny bit longer before heading off.

Of course, the thing that Debbie said just now was akin to passing wind. He had already chosen to follow behind her as the Iron Swordsman so technically, she would still be by his side. After he had ensured that Debbie had left the compound, he hurriedly threw his packed bag into his space ring and headed out. At the entrance of the store, Booth said his farewell to the boy: "With the things I have given you, you should have no difficulty in escaping from a tight situation. Nonetheless, do be careful. Being able to escape does not mean you should take unnecessary risks. Also, you do not need to worry about your identity being exposed. After living here for a few days, I'm sure that I can make things seem as though you were here the whole time."

“Erm... Many thanks, Mr. Booth...” Ye Chui gave a nod and started to walk off. He was in a hurry as he needed change into the Iron Swordsman in secret and rush over to Alfea, who was waiting outside the city premise. Everything has to be done before Debbie got there to make himself less conspicuous.

But, just as Ye Chui was about to leave, someone had ‘accidentally’ walked passed Anthony’s Magic Cottage. This person, who wore a tormented expression, was none other than Oberth.

Watching Ye Chui standing beside Booth at the entrance of the Magic Shop, Oberth’s complexion worsened. However, he quickly hid his despair and walked forward to Booth’s side. With an earnest voice, he asked: “Master, for the past three days that you’ve stayed over here, I continued my studies and had found some aspects of space magic that I can’t fathom. Could you come back with me to explain?”

After the Level 3 Magician exam, Booth had run off with Ye Chui, leaving Oberth to face the malicious remarks by his father, Oupu. He grieved that the teacher he had so onerously gotten had been taken away by Ye Chui, unwilling to go back. However, Oberth had already been recognised as Booth’s student. Knowing that Debbie was going to participate in a patrolled by Alfea, he took the opportunity where the brute was not here, to come and poach his Master back. Believing that his actions were just, as he still was Booth’s student, Booth would certainly return back with him to at least give face.

“It’s actually quite comfortable living here. I see no reason to leave.” Booth, however, did not care about Oberth’s ‘face’. With his eyebrows knit and his lips in a frown, he treated Oberth and Ye Chui with completely different regards. Currently, he looked nothing like a sage.

“But... but... my studies...” Oberth begged with a face filled with pain.

“After mastering the knowledge within the Magic Crystal, then return to seek my guidance!” Booth ill-humouredly said. “I had made a test where anyone who pulled out the Magic Crystal from the mirror had the right to become my student. Since you have managed to remove that Magic Crystal from the mirror, you should have quite a high aptitude for space magic. However, you had disappointed me with your answer three days ago during the magician exam. What’s more, Hammer actually managed to get the answer! In my Magic Crystal, I had stored some of my knowledge inside! I recalled specifically that I had stored in the answer which Hammer had spoken of. Not only did you get the question wrong, you still laughed at his answer! Obviously, Someone Had Not Been Studying! If you have not mastered everything within the Magic Crystal, don’t bother coming back to me!”

As Ye Chui was about to leave, he overheard the commotion. Suddenly, his footsteps came to a halt as he turned his head in surprise to have a look at both Oberth and Booth. [To think that Magic Crystal was used to finding a disciple... now I understand why Oberth would go so far for the Magic Crystal.]

Oberth had never thought that Booth would bring up the Magic Crystal during the conversation and unconsciously turned his head to have a look at Ye Chui. With beads of sweat forming on his forehead and eyes filled with desperation, he pleaded with all his might that Ye Chui had not told Booth the truth.

He Ye Chui's lips curled up as he said his farewell to Booth: "I'm going to head out first, Master!"

Within the ancient tomb, without the knowledge contained in the Magic Crystal, there was no way Ye Chui could manage to solve <Space Isolation>. Likewise, the only reason Ye Chui had come so far in his understanding of the 32 Magic Symbol was all thanks to the Magic Crystal. Everything added up in his mind and he had finally realized how amazing Booth was. The old man was someone who was more than worthy to become his master.

With Ye Chui's smile at the end, Booth also revealed a gratified chuckle.

"Master..." Oberth cried out. He noticed that Ye Chui had not revealed the truth about the Magic Crystal. Therefore, he could let out a sigh of relief. However, that elation was short lived as another problem popped into his mind: [Did Master really take Ye Chui in as his disciple?]

Unfortunately, before Oberth could ask the question in his mind, Booth loathingly roared. "Who are you calling master?! If you managed to understand everything within the Magic Crystal, then and only then do you have the rights to be my disciple! Idiot!"

Bang! Before Oberth could say any more, Booth entered the store and slammed the door with all his might.

Oberth, on the other hand, could not even speak. His whole mind was muddled from what Booth had said as he gradually sank into depression. Within the Magic Crystal, those notes and memories were much too difficult for him to fathom. What's more, after reading through everything, Oberth had the assumption that those notes and knowledge within the Magic Crystal would grant him a great improvement in his mental strength and magic powers. However, after these few days, neither his mental strength nor his magic powers showed any signs of improving or increasing. Instead, it was more accurate to say that they had shown signs of deteriorating. He had visited Booth today to ask him the reason he had failed but all he had gotten out of their exchange was a slammed door in front of his face.

"I'm also his disciple but why does he treat us so differently?" Oberth murmured as his eyes turned red, almost ready to burst into tears.

After Ye Chui left Anthony's Magic Cottage, he quickly ran outside of Stan City and into a forest. Sure that no one was around to look, he self-satisfyingly shouted: "Iron Swordsman, Transform!" Following his bombastic declaration, he sat on the ground and began to change; putting on his suit piece by piece till he was fully clad. Linking Ye Chui's consciousness to the Magic Crystal within the helmet, Jarvis's voice could be heard. "Jarvis, online."

Although he had to admit that his transformation was not as stellar as the movies, it had still held some satisfying attributes.

“Why do you wish for me to say ‘Jarvis, online’ whenever you put on your suit Master?” Jarvis asked filled with doubt.

“...Well, otherwise, it isn’t as cool.” Ye Chui embarrassingly answered.

However, his gaze soon turned to the vast prairie outside of Stan City, filled with anticipation. Be it the battle with the puppet swordsman in the ancient tomb, or the murder of Bolton, he was unable to display his suit’s true might. Now, with the patrol, he might just be able to go all out against the Magic Beasts.

## Chapter 93 – What?! He Can't Ride a Horse?!

---

After a short wait outside of Stan City's border, Ye Chui could see a group of powerful guards come out of City Lord's Manor. Altogether, there were 17 people; this included Debbie and Alfea. Familiar figures were also in the group: Athol, Balmain, and Damon. However, even with Alfea there, she did not seem to be the one leading the group. Instead, it was a 40-year-old man riding a horse at the very front of the group. He was clad in soft armor (literal translation. Just imagine leather). He appearance wise and evoked a friendly aura. When his gaze meets Ye Chui's, he continued to stare with curiosity.

Alfea, who wore a silver armored suit, rode a horse as white as snow to greet Ye Chui. With a blushing face, she excitedly welcomed: "Tony. Hello..."

"Yes, Hello." Ye Chui lightly replied.

"Tony, this is the Chief Guard of City Lord's Manor, Bedwick. He is the group leader for this patrol, a Level 7 Advance Swordsman." Alfea jumped off the horse and walked to Ye Chui's side to introduce him to the middle-aged man. Still sticking close to Ye Chui, Alfea turned around to meet the gaze of a smiling Bedwick to introduce, "Uncle Bedwick, this is Tony. He is absurdly strong. If not for him, our ancient tomb adventure would have ended with my death."

"Tony Stark. Nice to finally meet you. I heard much about you. Especially the bravery you have shown in the ancient tomb. I hope



that you will accept my sincerest of gratitude for saving my Mistress, Miss Alfea. I hope that sometime in the future when you have time, you will be able to visit the City Lord's Manor. The City Lord, Eric, will definitely set a banquet in your honor." Bedwick spoke with an unwavering smile.

"If there is an opportunity to do so, then I will surely not reject such an offer." Ye Chui politely replied.

A pleased expression bloomed on Alfea's face as the girl beckoned someone to her side. Responding to her was a man with long black hair, clad with silver armour as well. This handsome man rode on a dark horse while pulling along another dark horse by its reins.

When the Ye Chui met this man's gaze, he immediately felt enmity. However, he convinced himself that it was just his own misconception as he accepted the reins of the dark horse.

"Tony, this patrol will require us to travel around the whole circumference of Stan City. For such a long distance, it is best to have a mount. This horse is one that I specifically chose for you. It is a special mount within the City Lord's Manor." Alfea explained.

"Yes..." Ye Chui checked on the dark horse and found it well-built. It had an explosive figure, with a rebel like quality which was further highlighted by its graceful long black hair. Unfortunately, Ye Chui suddenly came to a realization: [Shit! I've never ridden on a horse before!]

"Iron Swordsman. You best get on now. We don't have all the

time in the world to wait for you!” The handsome man shouted with indifference.

“Well... we do need to reach Skull Town before the sun sets so it is really for the best if we don’t waste too much time.” Bedwick softly urged with a smile.

“Er...” Ye Chui was forced under everyone’s expectation. He was unable to say that he could not ride a horse!

Unfortunately, no one around had considered this possibility. Acquaintances of the Iron Swordsman like Debbie, Damon, and Balmon would absolutely not have dreamed that the mighty Swordsman was unable to ride a horse.

Alfea, who wore a sweet grin on her face, gently patted the butt of her horse. The horse rose and it let out a cry of excitement as its master sweetly welcomed, “Tony, let’s go.”

“Alright...”

Ye Chui closely watched Alfea’s movement and concluded that it was nothing too difficult to mimic. With a solemn expression, he gently nodded his head and followed Alfea’s actions. After Alfea smacked the horse’s backside, the horse leaped up in excitement and then galloped away at lightning speed with a neighing sound, leaving a trail of dust in its steps.

[This horse is really good...] Ye Chui stood at the position where

the black horse departed from while sighing at the scene of her horse galloping away.

Previously, Ye Chui had tried smacking the horse's backside before jumping onto the saddle, but unlike Alfea who managed to get on nicely, Ye Chui accidentally used the <Wind Walk> magic array when he was jumping up, causing him to leap more than two meters into the air. When he was about to fall from the peak of his trajectory, the horse galloped away and he landed firmly on the ground with his feet.

The onlookers became silent.

“Tony... you don't know how to ride a horse?” Alfea asked with a face filled with disbelief.

Unable to control his laughter, the handsome swordsman mocked: “I have never thought the almighty Iron Swordsman is inept at riding a horse! Hahaha!”

Immediately, Alfea's gazes shot daggers towards the handsome swordsman. As for Ye Chui, it was only heaven's grace that he wore a helmet protecting his reddened face.

With a sudden whistleblowing through the air, Alfea who placed her fingers away from her lips rode her horse to Ye Chui's front. Somewhat shy, she asked in a soft voice: “Well... Tony... We don't have much time you know. So, if you really cannot ride a horse, then it's best if you will ride with someone.”

As she spoke, her voice grew even softer to that of a whisper. However, even if Ye Chui could not hear, he intuitively understood what she was getting at. He had already come to the conclusion that horseback riding was not a skill one could learn in an instant. Even if he were to somehow create a magic program to aid him, it would still take too much time. Therefore, he understood what Alfea was saying and nodded, “Yes. That’s a good idea.”

Alfea’s complexion instantly lightened to only end up in confusion as Ye Chui, instead of approaching her, went straight for Debbie.

The little girl, who was depressed about the fact that she had to leave Ye Chui, saw a fully clad man in a suit of armor approach her. In her mind, the scene was that of a hungry wolf, inching ever so closer to take a taste of her goods. Warning this pervert not to get closer, her eyes widened as intimidated: “Do you dare to ride with me?!”

Ye Chui: “...”

“Iron Swordsman. Ride with me.” Just nearby, a rescuing voice of hope called out from someone nearby. When Ye Chui turned his head to look, he found that it was none other than Damon, one of his team members in the ancient tomb exploration. He was a Mercenary when they ventured into the ancient tomb but after the whole ordeal, he managed to join the City Lord’s Guards with a recommendation by Balmain. An upright guy.

Ye Chui had a favorable impression of him so there was no quarrel as he gave a nod to express his agreement (and gratitude);

getting on the horse with a supporting arm.

After the mess had been handled, Bedwick gave off a shout and the whole group of eighteen raced forth towards a prairie.

“Damon, who is that long-haired swordsman?” Ye Chui asked while trying to get used to riding a horse. He had no recollection of ever meeting this long-haired swordsman, so he could not tell the motive of hostile coming from that guy.

“Oh. That guy. He’s Alan. A Level 5 Swordsman. He is a very prestigious guy in City Lord’s Guard unit.” Damon explains, “I had heard rumors that he had a thing for Miss Alfea, though it is a one-sided affair. But that’s not surprising at all. Their difference in talent is quite obvious. It is not that he is talentless. He managed to reach Level 5 and is only 20 years old right now. But, if you compare that kind of accomplishment to Miss Alfea, it’s nothing much to boast about. Well, if you are wondering why he is so hostile towards you, it is most likely due to Miss Alfea talking about you all the time.”

“What The Fuck!?” Ye Chui could not contain shock as his voice exploded out of his mouth. [What business does your pathetic crush have to do with me? Also, what business does Alfea’s unrequited love got to do with you!] Ye Chui thought but soon calmed down as he praised Damon, “Thanks. But to think that you have only joined the City Lord’s Guard for a few days... to understand so much inside information...”

“Hee Hee. It’s a usual affair. Whenever we City Lord’s Guards are free, or bored, we gather together to gossip.” Damon replied with

an honest smile. “I just happen to sit around them and listen.”

“ ... ”

City Lord’s Guards really loved to dig into others’ businesses...  
[My horizons have been broadened.]

Bedwick, Alfea, and the long-haired Swordsman Alan were leading the patrol team in its advance. Alfea seemed to be still bothered with Ye Chui’s decision to ride a horse with Debbie instead of her, but she quickly got her mind back into business and spoke to Bedwick, “Did anything happen this time around that you, Uncle Bedwick have to personally lead the patrol team? My father even instructed us to be extra careful during the patrol. What exactly happened?”

“There seems to be an increasing number of magic beasts appearing from the dark forest recently. Moreover, the City Lord sent a pigeon letter to Skull Town and up till now, there hasn’t been a reply. Hence, he’s a little worried.” Bedwick laughed and said, “Rest assured Lady Alfea. In my 10 years of working in the City Lord’s Manor, what kind of scene have I not come across? Everything should be fine.”

## Chapter 94 – New Skill Developed: Ancient Tomb Sealing Technique

---

Bedwick maintained an optimistic outlook for this patrol. Although there was a high chance of encountering a large group of magical beasts, he did not consider them to be a problem. The magical beasts in the Dark Forest were conscious of their own territory, and there were few occurrences of them ever stepping out of their own area. Hence, large-scale fights were going to be rare.

Even in all the records, a hundred years ago, the highest number of magical beasts that attacked in a group was 30. What's more, they were a tribe of mere Level 3 shadow rhinoceros magical beast; They had fought against another tribe of magic beasts for the territory and lost, only to end up being expelled from the Dark Forest. Having nowhere to go, these shadow rhinoceros beasts went to scavenge. They ran into humans and caused casualties. A unit of City Lord's Guards was sent out in order to protect the citizens, and that was enough to eradicate them all.

“This incident in Skull Town must be an accident,” Bedwick explained.

Skull Town was a small city constructed at the periphery of the Dark Forest. It was a place where Mercenaries and Bounty Hunters would rest and trade. The trade usually consisted of magic beast body parts: the meat, bone, skin; and most importantly, their magic crystal. The magic crystals attracted many investors, the Merchant Guild Master set up a building here, and so did the City Lord.

So as to make sure that both cities were kept connected, a red eagle was dispatched every now and then. This red eagle was not a normal bird; it was a magic beast specifically used to keep contact with others thanks to its speed of travel, serving as a vital piece of communication.

“Alright! Mr. Bedwick had already said it. Even if there is going to be an encounter with a large group of magical beasts, we don’t have to worry. With the might of sixteen City Lord’s Guards, we can deal with them easily. Miss Alfea, you don’t have to be so worried.” The long-haired swordsman, Alan, said with a face of contentment. “I have also been practicing a new skill. If need to, I can always use it when we face any difficulty.”

Alfea felt an ominous premonition but it was not due to what Alan had said. Skull Town was important to the City Lord’s Manor. For the dozen of years, there had not been any problems. However, this time, there was something big that was happening. If that was not the case, why was there no reply sent back by the red eagle?

However, such thoughts were let loose after a few deep breaths. She thought about how this patrol could come close to the dangers presented by the ancient tomb, and even if it was worse, he was here. The Iron Swordsman. She did not understand why but whenever she thought of this man, a sense of relief would flood over her.

Just as she was thinking about a recurring thought, she turned her head to the side to look at the Iron Swordsman. [Chance! This



is a golden opportunity for us to get closer together!]

However, her thoughts were crushed as rage filled her heart. While the Iron Swordsman was riding behind Damon, he was continuously trying to smooth talk, Debbie. Naturally, Debbie being Debbie, she displayed a displeased and impatient expression. However, acting oblivious to the loathing directed at him, the Iron Swordsman continued to flirt!

“Miss Alfea. I have obtained a key to enter Doria’s Tomb by chance. I was hoping after we finish our duty, we could form a team together and head off for an adventure?” Alan pulled his horse’s reins to get closer to Alfea, as he spoke with a smile.

Alfea took her gaze away from Ye Chui and took a deep breath before warning Alan: “Get lost. You are annoying me.”

With that said, Alfea whipped her horse’s butt, and it raced forward to the front of the team.

Alan: “...”

At the back of the team, another voice warned. “Do not ever speak to me again! Get away from me!” Debbie screamed as she took up the Gatling and directed its barrel towards Ye Chui. “If you continue to harass me, I will pass judgment!”

Drips of violent sweat rolled down Ye Chui’s face as he nods, “Alright. Alright... I will not speak to you anymore.”

Ye Chui's identity as the Iron Swordsman is not a secret that he wanted to conceal from Debbie, but due to Debbie's serious prejudice towards the Iron Swordsman, he could only wait for the golden opportunity to break this news to her. Ye Chui's constant attempts to build up a good relationship with Debbie in the past were merely a cover to protect himself from Debbie's wrath when he reveals his identity. However, his attempts did not seem very successful; this little girl's insistence that the Iron Swordsman has some dirty thoughts towards her made Ye Chui give up temporarily.

Debbie snorted in a dissatisfied manner and kept her magic Gatling as the horse quickened its pace.

Ye Chui realized that when Debbie revealed her Gatling, the surrounding City Lord's Guards stared at her in a peculiar gaze, indicating their ignorance towards such an item and their curiosity towards such a novel thing. Damon made a statement in a straightforward fashion, "What's the use of that item? She said that it's a weapon that was crafted by Hammer, but I'm curious as to how that weapon looks. Why is it crafted in a way that looks like it's used to smash people?"

"Smash people?"

Ye Chui rolled his eyes. [All right, I guess all the Swordsman in this world have a unanimous subconscious view towards such a high-tech weapon.]

The patrol team quickly advanced towards Skull Town. At this time, Ye Chui was thinking about some issues regarding the sharing of a horse with Damon. He felt that sharing a horse with Damon was not a permanent solution, despite Hammer and himself in his previous life not getting much contact with horses. However, he knew that learning to ride a horse from scratch would be an uphill task. He then suddenly thought of the artificial intelligence, Jarvis, and spoke to it through the magic crystal, “Do you have any memory relating to horse riding?”

“No, Master. My original master definitely has some horse riding experience, but he wouldn’t extract this portion of his memory and store it in this magic it in this magic crystal.” Jarvis responded, “But according to my instincts, horse riding isn’t such a hard skill to master. All you have to do is to sit tightly on the saddle.”

“Talk is easy. I’ve already embarrassed myself just by getting onto the horse and such things cannot happen again. Programming the action of getting onto the horse isn’t much of a problem, but it requires constant practice...” Ye Chui was slightly disappointed, but his eyes lit up quickly, “I’ve thought of a good idea!”

“What kind of idea?” Jarvis asked with a spark of curiosity.

“For riding the horse, more specifically, for remaining on the saddle, I believe I have come up with an amazing solution.” Ye Chui said and paused for a moment to give Jarvis more suspense. “We have a whole bag of space teleportation scrolls. So, as long as we manage to get the coordinates of the location on where I was before being flung off by the horse, I could make a dazzling teleportation back onto the horse.”

Jarvis was silent for a moment but could not help but sigh: “We have many scrolls but that idea is still too willful.”

Ye Chui kept his word and started his research.

Of course, in reality, Ye Chui is not a lazy boy who required such a technique to ride a horse. In fact, he was more interested in designating coordinates for the magic scrolls. Currently, the teleportation magic scrolls could only transport him in a general direction, but not a specified distance. Previously, he was accidentally teleported to Debbie’s room when she was changing, but he would not be so fortunate the next time – there was a chance that he might teleport to the room of the female Beastman Cara...

He could, through the input of coordinates onto the teleportation scrolls, teleport to a location that he wanted, but the mastering of such a skill was not an easy task as it required the forming of a complicated space magic array. Moreover, Booth did not expect Ye Chui to master this skill easily. As Ye Chui entered his ‘Father of Studies’ mode, he started to research on the method of inputting coordinates onto the teleportation scrolls with much excitement.

In the Magic Crystal left by Booth, besides memory that explained the magic symbols, there was knowledge of spells stored inside. One of the said spells was <Teleportation>. The teleportation scroll was made using or carving a magic array <Teleport> onto a scroll, hence, studying the core spell <Teleport> would reveal the method to learn about coordinates.

<Teleportation> was considered to be an Intermediate Auxiliary Spell, and was one of the foundations for space magic. Using space magic, one used their magic power to move something into another space. When the spell was cast, two portals would form out of thin air: the entrance and exit. The entrance would be located directly in front of the caster while the exit would be located at the coordinates the caster set.

Generally, it was a difficult task for magicians to understand Space Magic; due to their inability to directly see the effects, their magic had on the space around them. However, to Ye Chui, this did not pose any difficulty.

“Coordinates for teleport are mainly for the location of the exit!” Ye Chui jovially exclaimed. Previously, he had tried to form a magic matrix in his mind. However, no matter how he tried, the spell did not work. It was not that he was wrong but rather, the spell could not be cast directly. <Teleport> could only work through a magic array on a piece of scroll. This was due to the need of inputting a coordinate for the exit.

After just completing a rough sketch of a teleportation scroll, Jarvis suddenly voiced out: “Master! I’ve seen this magic array before!”

“You’ve seen this?” Ye Chui’s eyes opened in surprise. “Where?”

“In the ancient tomb. I was the control system for that ancient tomb. Even after I left, I am still the control system of the place. This magic scroll you have created is similar to a magic array found in the ancient tomb.”

Ye Chui already knew that even after Jarvis left the ancient tomb, he still had some control over it from a distance. However, it could only be described as unfortunate that he did not have the ability to make Jarvis go back and return in an instant. If Jarvis could do so, he had practically made the world's most expensive space ring. For a single ring with a cubic meter of space, it would cost around 30-40 gold coins. However, what about the ancient tomb which had a space of more than a cubic kilometer?

# Chapter 95 – The Iron Swordsman Travels on a Path Not Paved by the Common Man

---

The teleportation scroll, which Booth gave to Ye Chui, could at most teleport the user 1 kilometer away from its casting position. However, this distance referred to the physical distance in the real world; and not the distance between the real world and a space in another dimension. The distance between spaces in different dimensions could be said to be an inch away or an infinite distance away.

The teleportation scroll gathered energy to teleport the user. This energy was converted to transport the user into a temporal space, which then teleported the user to his desired location back in the original world. Therefore, in theory, making use of this temporal space would make it viable for Ye Chui to use this scroll to teleport into the ancient tomb. The only difference in its usage was that this temporal space was set to be the ancient tomb; with the casting location being set as the coordinates for the desired location.

It was noon, and the patrol team of 18 was having a light rest. Ye Chui, on the other hand, was busy calculating the coordinates from Jarvis. The coordinates that he received was similar to the geographical mapping which is done by humans back on Earth – with latitudes and longitudes. However, the coordinates in this world were a little more complex to decipher.

Deciphering coordinates in this world, especially since they were directly related to space magic, required some mastery of the 32 magic symbols. It was only with the usage of these 32 magic

symbols, that a magic matrix which registered the coordinates could be formed.

“Master, is this really a good idea? Why is it that I sense crisis is about to occur?”

“Don’t worry. The theory for this is sound. There will definitely be no problems that occur.”

Ye Chui thought in reply to Jarvis, who was connected to him on a mental level. Meanwhile, the several City Lord’s Guards were sitting together having their scrumptious meal of dry rations. Athol, who had managed to successfully bring a goat back from his hunt, was in another group barbecuing his find, filling up the whole place with a fragrance that stirred up anyone’s hunger. Away from all the liveliness sat Ye Chui, alone by the corner with a parchment on his lap, a feather in his hand and a magic ink bottle on the floor; busy writing out the magic matrix for the coordinates.

Thankfully, this magic matrix was quite simple. It was only a few lines worth and did not require the young man to use his entire mental strength to create, thus allowing him to finish up in a matter of minutes.

“Using my magic power to transfer the coordinates from this parchment to the teleportation scroll, I can instantly teleport there.”

Keeping all the objects back into the ring, Ye Chui re-read



through his work in satisfaction. In his hand was a parchment with the coordinates written on it, and on the other, a squashed scroll. In high spirits, his magic power filled the air as he began the test. Instantly, he teleported onto the saddle of the horse which threw him off earlier but much like him, Alfea, who seem to have self-mastered teleport, appeared beside him and asked: “Tony, what are you doing?”

“Nothing...” Ye Chui patted the saddle and looked at Alfea.

Alfea wore a gentle smile as she handed over a few freshly roasted mutton leg: “Tony, you must be hungry. I specially roasted this mutton leg for you, why don’t you have a try and see how it tastes? I added many spices to it as well to make it tastier.”

Indeed, the mutton leg appeared to have been made by a chef. The skin of the meat was brownish red, cooked at the right temperature, and it sent out a mouth-watering fragrance to boot. Ye Chui, who held out for half a day without food, was already starved. With the sudden reminder and the immediate urge that followed suit, he quickly said his thanks and took a gnaw at the meat.

Alfea, filled with anticipation, asked: “how is it? Is the flavor not good? This time, I bought some expensive salt which was harvested in the jungle by elves. Even when Balmain wanted some, I was reluctant to give it to him...”

“Then did you actually throw everything you have on this piece of a leg?”

Ye Chui suddenly cut her speech as he could not bear to voice out his discontent. This mutton leg had been ruined by the salt, which was added to an inhuman amount. Even as he bit, inner cheeks hurt from the friction. Hurriedly looking around, he saw Debbie sitting not too far away having a drink. In one hand was a canteen bottle and in the other, was a pie which he had made for her before she went on this trip. Without a moment of hesitation, Ye Chui returned the mutton leg to Alfea and ran towards Debbie. Without giving her a moment to react, Ye Chui took from her hand the canteen and gulped; also taking a slice of pie from her bag to clear out the taste.

Debbie, who noticed what had happened, stared at the thief with eyes of rage, as she thought: [This bloody perverted wolf had taken advantage of me again!]

“Tony...” Alfea muttered with down casted eyes, feeling as if she was suffering from some kind of injustice. As the City Lord’s daughter, it was a norm for her to be served. Never had she roasted, let alone cooked before. She wanted her first to be with Ye Chui, but after putting in so much effort to receive such a response... it was unbearable.

Watching such a scene, like the masses around, was Alan. His handsome face was tainted with anger as he swiped his hair to shower the sun in its glory and pointed to Ye Chui. “Did you know, Miss Alfea had labored over that mutton leg for a long time! Not only did you trample on her kind and holy intentions, you even went for another in front of her. Anyone here can vouch that having Miss Alfea’s handmade meal is simply a blessing from the heavens. It would be my life’s happiest moment.”

“Heehee.” Ye Chui took back the mutton leg from Alfea and passed it onto Alan, blessing him: “in that case, I hope you are filled with happiness! Here! Take it.”

Alan sneered at Ye Chui, taunting the guy in his heart: [Miss Alfea has taken a liking to you is just temporary. You, as a man, do not understand how to woo a girl’s heart. If a girl were to give you something unpalatable, you must pretend to appear happy to appease her. This is how you can woo a woman!] Alan stopped his thoughts and took a big chunk of the mutton leg into his system. However, his thoughts did not align with his expressions as each time he chewed, his face started to distort.

“It’s delicious, right? Then continue to enjoy your meal. I really wish to see if you have the skill to complete it.” Ye Chui watched as he slowly took another bite of his pie.

Alan: “...”

It was obvious from Alan’s facial expression that his own values could not overcome the taste in his mouth.

“That’s enough!” Alfea shouted in rage and took away the mutton leg and stared at Ye Chui. Panting in rage, she walked away.

Ye Chui looked at her fleeting back and sighed in his heart. [I’m sorry but this must be done. It was more important to make you dislike me than spitting on Alan. I hope that with this incident,

you will no longer have a heart for me. Living as a popular guy sure is tough... but right now, my heart remains loyal to Debbie...] Ye Chui thought, turning around to smile at the girl of his affection.

Debbie: “Shameless!”

Debbie stared at him with dagger-like eyes, as she stood up and hurriedly went to Alfea’s side to comfort her. Naturally, Debbie left with her bag.

Ye Chui: “...”

Their lunch break ended quickly as the group resumed their march forward under Bedwick’s command.

This time, Ye Chui naturally did not request to ride a horse with Damon. Everyone in the group stared at him in bewilderment as they wondered about Ye Chui’s plan. Then, they were dumbfounded. Ye Chui walked over to the black horse and hit its backside before the horse neighed and started galloping away. Just when the group still had no idea what Ye Chui was up to, he indifferently took out a magic scroll, opened it up, activated it and vanished into thin air...

At the next moment, a ray of white lights appeared on the horse which was galloping away and a silhouette of a human being could be seen appearing. The entire process lasted for around one second, hence when the Ye Chui’s body entirely appeared, the horse had already passed him. Instead of falling directly onto the horse, Ye Chui fell behind the horse.

Ye Chui's initial plan was to use the scroll to teleport himself onto the horse's back directly. However, such a plan was destined to fail. The usage of a teleportation scroll required a buffer time to input the coordinates, and before it was cast, his bottom would have landed forcefully onto the ground.

What's more, there is approximate of one-second difference from the time he inputs the coordinates to the time he gets teleported to the designated coordinates. Hence, since the teleportation speed could not match the horse's speed, he would not have landed on the back of the horse.

Hence, Ye Chui chose another method – Ye Chui would follow slowly behind the black horse while it galloped forward, before using the teleportation scroll to teleport to transport himself to the group after he keeps a certain distance from the horse.

When the others started to understand Ye Chui's intentions, they expressed shock on their faces.

Following behind the patrol team as they continued on their venture towards Skull Town was not the Iron Swordsman but a dark horse. Then, almost as soon as a bright light flashed, a dark figure was thrown away. Eventually, this horse got further from the group.

Some guards thought to themselves:

[To think that this person would use teleportation scrolls like

nobody's business!

The Iron Swordsman indeed travels on a path not paved by the common man.

Don't his teleportation scrolls cost money?]

In contrary to popular belief, Ye Chui actually got all his teleportation scrolls for free!

Naturally, Ye Chui had his reason for using such an unusual means of transportation. The teleportation scrolls were not merely a means of transporting himself to the horse, but rather serve the purpose of practicing his inputting of coordinates in a small time frame and casting it.

What's more, Ye Chui purposefully made himself lag behind the others so that he would have some time to complete his new skill: the Ancient Tomb Sealing Technique.

## Chapter 96 – Iron Swordsman’s Greatest Strength: He’s Wealth

---

“Ancient Tomb Sealing Technique!” Ye Chui loudly declared as he cast the spell, targeting a scared little bunny on the ground. With a simple casting of the teleportation scroll, the boy was wrapped in a bright light and disappeared for a second, to only return moments later on. Meanwhile, the poor bunny who was chosen by him left the scene without a single sound.

Focusing his mind to talk with Jarvis, Ye Chui hurriedly questioned: “Hurry up and check if it worked. Did the rabbit really get teleported into the ancient tomb?”

“No... Master... I don’t see it.” Jarvis said with a tinge of disappointment. “Master, it seems that you have failed once again...”

“I guess the coordinates of a different world are different as compared to that from this world... that’s probably why I’ve failed. I wonder if I forgot to add something to my magic array.” Ye Chui frowned and asked: “Do you think it could have been teleported to somewhere in this dimension?”

“I believe only God knows. Master.” Jarvis sighed in reply.

When Ye Chui first got Jarvis, the A.I. only had the character of an innocent child; and it could be said that it did not have much of a personality, except that it is a little obstinate. However, after spending time with Ye Chui, it’s way of thinking gradually

evolved. Slowly, it began to develop its very own personality; capable of creating ideas out of perception and understanding. Therefore, to further improve, or to quench its new-found curiosity, it asked: “Master, why are you screaming out the name of the magic spell when you use a scroll?”

[Because this is a fantasy world! Everyone does it!]

“Well, it’s cool isn’t it?” Ye Chui went into deep introspection as he answered.

Although he failed to teleport the rabbit into his trap, he already had the ambition to make it succeed. What’s more, the mere thought of him sealing an almighty magic beast while coolly declaring made his lips shiver in excitement. Despite not succeeding in his attempt, this magic spell already had a destructive effect – although the rabbit was not teleported into the ancient tomb, it has definitely been teleported to another location, be it a different dimension or not; be it alive or not.

[Oh, the patrol team seems to quite far ahead.] Ye Chui looked ahead at the patrol group in the distant. He then took out a teleportation scroll, opened it up and disappeared into thin air.

In just a mere instant, he appeared within the group and landed behind the galloping black horse, as he could only stare at the group of passing horses and wave at Debbie. However, he was greeted with the whites of Debbie’s eyes.

Ye Chui then lagged behind the group once again...



“Is this Iron Swordsman mentally retarded?” Alan asked Bedwick, as he turned his head to see the gradually vanishing silhouette of Ye Chui.

“Mentally retarded?” Bedwick doubted, as he faced the man with a dignified expression and explained in all sincerity: “Alan, you are very mistaken in that regard. That man, no, the Iron Swordsman, is a genius.”

“A genius? How is he a genius?” Alan, filled with doubt, asked.

Although Alfea still felt hurt by the recent event, hearing the two of them talk about the Iron Swordsman caused her to inch slower; eventually arriving beside them to listen in to the conversation.

“Haven’t you already realized? The time he takes to teleport next to the horse is getting shorter. At the start, it took quite a while but now, he is teleporting back when he is just a step away from the horse.” Bedwick said in pure respect: “I’ve heard from Miss Alfea that the Iron Swordsman is obsessed with the path of the Magic-Swordsman. I believe he is wasting so many teleportation scrolls because he is practicing!”

“How is this kind of practice going to be useful?” Alan replied with disdain.

“Do not be blinded by envy!” Bedwick warned Alan, “If he can manage to shorten the casting time even further to the extent it is nearly instantaneous, he would be almost unstoppable in a fight.

Imagine just fighting him head on, to have him only teleport to your rear all of a sudden, how fearful is that?”

Alan’s face paled at the thought, so long as the Iron Swordsman has a teleportation scrolls on him, he was practically untouchable!

[But how that that be? No one can have so many scrolls] Alan thought and asked: “I recalled that teleportation scrolls cost a lot of gold coins. How could he possibly have so many?

Bedwick when silent for a moment, giving some room or realization before explaining: “this is his greatest strength.”

Hearing Bedwick’s words left the City Lord’s Guards nearby speechless. They all had the same conclusion: the Iron Swordsman’s greatest strength is none other than his wealth!

An ordinary fire and lighting scroll sold in the market would cost around 50 copper coins. However, teleportation scrolls were different. They require a space magicians to craft, and due to the short supply of them, each scroll cost a few silver coins.

Earlier, Ye Chui had probably utilized at least 10 teleportation scrolls... [He must be really rich.]

As the group ran across the prairie, closer to Skull Town, they were beginning to see the Dark Forest. The Dark Forest is a well-known region which stretched across the Aigen-Dazs Continent, and Stan City was just by the border of the forest.

Although Bedwick did not worry too much about Skull Town, he still remained vigilant.

When Ye Chui teleported to the middle of the group once again, the patrol team, for some reason had stopped in their tracks. Due to the black horse being stationary, Ye Chui managed to appear on the back of the horse after teleportation. However, he appeared in a standing position on the horse; and the horse produced a loud neigh. Ye Chui then hurriedly did a backflip and landed on the ground – this particular movement is completed using the magic array on the armour of the Iron Swordsman; if the ordinary Ye Chui were to attempt a backflip, he would have landed on his head...

The frightened dark horse was held down by Athol as Ye Chui surveyed the area, looking for the cause. There, an unconscious person laid before them on the grass plain.

The whole team, wary of trouble, encircled around this person.

“He’s not dead. He simply fainted. But... he’s not in a good condition. His left leg and a few of his ribs have fractured.” Balmain moved closer to the man to inspect, but as he spoke, his voice became more solemn.

“I know this man! He was a Mercenary. The last time I visited the Dark Forest on duty, I met him. Damon claimed after having a good look at the man. “He is A’Tod!”

“How strong is he?” Bedwick went straight to the point and asked.

“If I recall, he was a Level 4 Swordsman; but if we were to consider his skills in a fight, I might not be able to match him. He is one of the strongest Mercenaries I know...” Damon, who was once a Mercenary, said in a low voice and continued to explain: “he specializes in speed, usually maximizing the Swordsman Skill, <Quick Step> to move about. If a normal Level 3 magic beast were to race against him, there will be no doubt that the beast would lose.” Damon checked on the bone fractures and the distorted leg to ask, “how is he? Is he going to live?”

“He most likely used up all his strength to escape from Skull Town, ending up fainted here,” Balmain said and looked towards Bedwick for his judgment. “What are your commands?”

“It seems Skull Town really landed itself in something dangerous...” Bedwick looked in the direction of the town and commented. “Take him with us. We will continue our march to Skull Town!”

After having seen A'Tod in such a pathetic shape, the rest of the patrol team became gloomy. In fact, they already felt that something was not right on their way here. Magic beasts, were beings that were supposed to roam wild and free here, yet why haven't they met a single one? They originally assumed that the magic beasts density increased, causing the connection between the two cities to cease but that was not the case. However, even with such doubt, they still had to press on. This was their duty as City Lord's Guards, and they could not renegade on their duties.

In order to face the magic beasts at full strength, Ye Chui stopped using his teleportation scrolls and sat on a horse with Damon. Meanwhile, A'Tod was gently placed on his dark horse; gently trotting to Skull Town.

The patrol team finally made it to Skull Town by twilight.

This place is a really small town, with only two stretches of strange-looking buildings separated by a single street. There was also a stone wall surrounding the town, which was made for defense purposes. At one side of the wall was a huge door which had been forcefully opened and it was slanted towards one side. It seemed as though an extremely destructive force had made an opening in it.

In this supposedly populated town, there was not a single flame lit. Worse of all, there was the thick lingering stench of blood that filled the air.

“Skull Town is the busiest when the sun sets!” Damon, who had Ye Chui behind him, said in fear. “Could it be? Everyone was killed by a horde of Magic Beasts?”

# Chapter 97 – The Silence Of Skull Town

---

It was late autumn and the once lively town, known as Skull Town, is now dead silent. If a slight breeze were to pass through, a soft rustling could be heard meters away. The atmosphere was encumbered by grief as the once proud standing town was now in ruins; buildings dilapidated and painted with an eerie splash of dark red. It was akin to a war-torn land, as the patrol team seemed to be soldiers marching into battle. They were vigilant with each and every step they took, they surveyed the area again. Moving in a line, all hearts beating as one, all their hearts were about to jump out of their chest, as they moved; swallowing down the horrid feeling they held.

Even Ye Chui was not an exception to this; he held a long sword in hand, ready to strike at anything that came. Walking in the team, he could feel the high tension in the air as he thought: [this place is supposed to be populated with at least ten thousand people. Where is everyone? Why haven't we met anyone yet? Is this really Skull Town and not Ghost Town?]

Earlier, before the whole group entered this place, Bedwick had sent a group to scout ahead. Unfortunately, the results were heart-wrenching: this once populated city was now barren of life. Balmain and another City Lord's Guard came back and estimated that the horror occurred 2-3 days ago. They concluded, with the respective evidence that they found, that a huge group of magic beasts invaded the town and killed everyone inside.

"This is truly a large-scale magic beast attack..." Bedwick, no longer being able to keep calm, frantically scanned the area around him and ordered: "Berner, make contact with City Lord's Manor

now! Send a Red Eagle requesting back up.” He thought for a moment and continued: “To think that a town such as this would fall. It had the Mercenary Guild to help defend it... and every single member of this city was capable of battle. To think they would all be completely slaughtered. Just how big was this attack? This is definitely not something a mere group of eighteen can handle!”

“Yes, Sir!”

The Swordsman, Berner, immediately took out a piece of paper from his pouch and wrote in it as fast as he could. Completed, he ran towards a horse and took up the cage tied to its saddle. Inside the cage was none other than the Red Eagle; it was much bigger than a pigeon, and had sharper claws and beaks as it's eagle counterpart. Capable of not only high-speed travel and flight, it was also able to defend itself. It was truly an animal that is perfect for message sending in this continent, Aigen-Daze.

The letter that Berner wrote was tied to the Red Eagle's leg as though it had been done thousands of times before. Knowing that the message was in place, the Eagle immediately launched up into the air without a command and soared towards Stan City. In mere seconds, it's figure vanished from the open sky.

“Stan City's reinforcements will arrive earliest by tomorrow. For the time being, we need to prepare for any danger that we might encounter!” Bedwick turned his attention back to the men in front of him and said: “Damon, you should be familiar with the place. Choose the best location for us to set up a perimeter. Balmain, lead some men with you around the city and look for survivors. If there are any living witnesses, I need you to question them thoroughly.

We need to know what type and number of magical beasts that invaded this land. If you encounter any kind of trouble, whistle for help. This is important. Protect your lives.”

“Yes, Sir!”

“Understood Sir!”

Both Damon and Balmain responded and started to take action.

Skull Town is considered a small city with houses scattered about everywhere. Its infrastructure could be considered crude, and at the very city center was a tall building. It was much larger than any of the houses around it and even had a garden which was under construction. Unlike the worn-out houses around, this place was built with better material: Magic Steel, unlike normal Steel was used as its backbone. This was the place Damon had chosen. “This is the church. It should be the city’s most well-fortified location.”

“Twenty years ago, the church pulled in all manner of people to build this place. Just aiming to do missionary work, they spent a lot of manpower and resources. At that time I was still young, they had a bad reputation for being too willful. But right now, the church has actually done us a favor.” Bedwick said as he took out the short sword by his waist and pushed open the front door of the place.

As Bedwick opened the door, he was immediately greeted with a stench of bloodiness and mouldiness. Furthermore, since night



had already fallen upon the town, the interior of the church was pitch-black. Nevertheless, he inched forward into the darkness with his brows knitted.

Someone lit a fire torch – since the group had no choice but to spend the night in the dark wilderness, a fire torch was definitely on their list of necessities.

All of a sudden, an orchestra of flapping sounds could be heard echoing through the interior of the church, as though they were some creatures flying around within the compound.

“They’re Blood Bats! Blood Bats are merely level one magic beasts that have low battling capabilities when they appear individually. However, they tend to live in groups and have a strong thirst for blood. Dealing with all of them will be not be a simple task...” One man behind said.

However, before that man could take another breath, Bedwick had already rushed into the church. A cold but bright light enveloped his body, as many sizzling sounds started to play out. Everyone who heard this sound felt their bodies go numb and finally, ‘Zii’. The army of bright lights flew out and crashed into the flying beast. It was an advance swordsman’s sword skill called ‘Star Dance’. With this one sword skill, hundreds of attacks were shot off in mere moments, killing off everything. The horde of blood bats stood no chance against it and was eliminated.

Bedwick, a Level 7 Swordsman, was able to show results for half the effort. He alone managed to clear up the blood bats around them, leaving only corpses; such powerful capabilities caused

everyone's backs to shiver.

“It seems that coming over here can be considered to be safe.” With the gloomy atmosphere surrounding the room, Bedwick.

After the area was secured, the guards brought light set-ups.

With lighting, the whole church's interior could be seen; a huge space filled with art. It had seven big portraits, each of a god that they prayed to. On the other hand, the ground was different. It was filled with corpses randomly scattered about but they all had one thing in common: they were all heading to the entrance. It was obvious that they tried to escape but unfortunately got caught. Behind them was a lone skeleton that sat cross-legged on a podium. Deducing from his outfit, this should be a priest drained of blood by the blood bats.

Bedwick stood at one side of the church and examined the area further.

This was the first time they managed to find bodies in Skull Town, and to think they were all in such a terrifying shape.

“Alfea, your last patrol mission, was it this exciting?” Debbie entered the church and walked next to Alfea silently to ask.

“No way. In the past, the patrol mission typically would just have us explore the prairie area around Stan City. Skull Town as well, this was the first time such an attack happened.” Alfea replied but

from her tone, she was anxious.

“You don’t need to be afraid.” Ye Chui walked up behind the two of them, trembling and continued: “I will protect...”

Alfea slowly leaked out a gentle smile but it was completely destroyed after Ye Chui continued: “Debbie.”

“Wait. Why don’t you want to protect me?” Alfea, heartbrokenly asked.

“You...” Ye Chui tried to explain a little as he thoughts but Alfea cut in. “I have no need for you then. Mind your own business! I can protect myself!”

“Yeah. You’re right.” Ye Chui now ignores her and got closer to Debbie: “Debbie, you can be assured that no matter what situation you get into I will protect you.”

“Before you speak, make sure you won’t wet your pants and stop trembling.”

“....”

In this atmosphere of dread and silent dark, being inside of a ghost town, Ye Chui could not help but feel anxious. His whole body remained vigilant, unable to calm down. However, when he was beside the two girls, he could feel a little bit relieved. However, the girls were not like him, they were still able to

maintain their cool.

“Stan City’s reinforcements will arrive by tomorrow morning. So, before that time arrives, we must remain alert.” Ever since the group had met A’Tod, even after they had entered the town and the church, Ye Chui’s right hand was locked onto the sword handle.

He, in his heart, was praising Booth with all his might. [These escape methods in my hands, I will definitely need them.]

...

Somewhere over the sky, above the plains, hiding from the stars, a red shadow flashed passed. Directly behind this shadow was another, and then another, and then another; till a stretch of stars disappeared. The shadow directly behind the red shadow was a huge beast, and it leads its horde behind it. When it opened its mouth to give out a cry, the red shadow had disappeared and the horde behind it was in for a landing.

Rather than a cry of despair, it was victorious in nature. In its claw was a red bird. It was none other than the Red Eagle the patrol group had sent out from Skull Town!

The large magic beast gave off another cry and the horde it commanded launched up into the air again. However, with its target gone, its bloodshot eyes were both locked into one direction: towards Skull Town!

# Chapter 98 – Don't You Dare Speak Another Word, You Darn Gangster

---

Magic beasts tended to be more active in dark nights, hence, even though the patrol team knew that they had met with a tricky situation, they could only find shelter to temporarily hide from the coldness of the night in Skull Town before leaving the horrifying place the next morning. Everyone in the team knew that roaming around in the night would pose a great danger to them, as the bloodthirsty magic beasts could once again return to this town and cause great devastation.

The patrol team, led by Balmain, conducted a simple search in Skull Town. During the search, they managed to discover some human corpses lying in some inconspicuous locations, as well as a variety of magical beasts. The patrol team quickly exterminated those magic beasts that were not higher than level three and found out that these magic beasts seemed to have broken off from the original group of magical beasts that attacked Skull town.

Under the arrangement of Bedwick, the 18-men team split up into four different groups, which took turns to standby for any sudden attacks by magic beasts while the other team members took a rest.

[Of those magic beasts which Balmain and the rest encountered, there were two species of magical beasts that were born enemies, however, they managed to form an alliance... There's only one reason that these two magic beasts can co-exist harmoniously with each other – there must be an even more powerful force that controls them!] Ye Chui made his own analysis, as he was in standby mode.

Through the Aigen-Dazs Continent encyclopedia, Ye Chui had a certain understanding about magic beasts. The reason why magic beasts were named ‘magic beasts’ is that of the magic crystals formed within their bodies. Although the magic crystals gave them a certain level of intelligence, only level seven magic beasts possessed intelligence comparable to that of a human. Those magic beasts, level six and lower, were similar to infants.

An example of such intelligence was the display of teamwork: under extreme pressure from an external source, the worst of enemies can form an alliance to fight the battle together.

In all recorded history, the peripheral of the Dark Forest to Stan City had only been inhabited by magic beasts of level six and below. It was recognized that the region of the Dark Forest was land claimed by the magic beasts. Therefore, splitting the zone apart, respecting each territory, there were no major battles fought. It could be recognized as a peaceful period between the two kinds. But, if that was the case, why was there a huge raid such as this? What could have caused such a catastrophe to suddenly occur?

Ye Chui sat down beside Debbie, suddenly ruining her train of thoughts. The boy, unaware of what he has done, opened his mouth to ask: “What were you thinking of?”

“Nothing.” Debbie, who took up both the Gatling and the Great Sword – at Hammer’s behest – replied.

Ye Chui sat next to Debbie to protect her. Unknowingly, after Ye Chui sat next to Debbie, Alfea came along. For reasons unknown, she sat next to Ye Chui. Ultimately, a handsome man with long hair, seemingly thinking that he needs to be next to her, sat next to Alfea. In the end, the group stood on night watch were these four people.

Seeing that Debbie suddenly stood up as though something happened, Ye Chui worriedly got up and ran to her side to question: “What happened?”

“I’m going to sit over there.” Debbie irritatingly replied.

“Why?” Ye Chui asked with care.

“Because. Its. Convenient.” Debbie stared daggers at Ye Chui

“Oh...” Ye Chui did not feel relieved to have Debbie out of his sight and asked: “why don’t I accompany you?”

“Useless bastard! Try if you dare!” Debbie aimed her Gatling at Ye Chui’s head and warned.

Alfea in cold sweat quickly ran over and tried to pacify the loli: “Debbie, how about I join you?”

“There is no need. I can handle myself.” Debbie hastily shook her head in response. Although this small town was dangerous, Debbie was assured that with the Gatling in her hands, she was safe.

Taking the barrel away from Ye Chui's face and placing it back on her small shoulder, she reminded: "Hammer made me a gun to protect me, so there is no need to worry about my safety."

Ye Chui: "..."

[Should I be happy or sad?]

Debbie's eyes vigilantly stuck to the iron suit as she walked away to the corner she had pointed to, disappearing from the sight of the two who stood up.

Ye Chui's stared at the darkness Debbie had disappeared to but noticed his actions were not appropriate for the Iron Swordsman. Quickly, he looked away to pretend that nothing had happened. However, unbeknownst to him, likewise to anyone in the group, an unknown figure had passed by their notice at this exact moment; towards Debbie.

---

In Stan City, where no one was aware of the crisis that had befallen onto Skull Town – a place merely kilometers away; there was a group of magic beasts closing up on them. Obviously, their visit was due to the attraction of a huge meal that consists of 200,000 humans.

Inside the huge mansion, which was on par with the City Lord's Manor and the Mercenary Guild, owned by none other than the Magician Guild Master Oupu, was Oberth. These days, he had



resorted to sneaking into his own home late at night. When the moon was at its apex, and the night was silent, only then would his figure be found sourcing a way back home. Every single time he walked through the gate, he had prayed that his father was asleep. Of course, the reason for his actions was the event that had occurred three days ago. After what had happened in the Magician Guild, Oupu continued to wear a nasty expression. Pissed and disappointed at his own son, Oupu ordered Oberth to seek out Booth. The result only ended up with Oberth being denied lesson from Booth, causing the boy to have no face to meet his father. Whatever the case, Oberth now avoided his home like the plague, only returning to rest before leaving again early in the morning.

Just when he entered the front door, Oberth suddenly heard a sound that greeted him from behind: “Master Oberth. Nice to see that you have returned”.

The one who caught him was none other than their family steward, Mattis. He was an old man that seemed frail with the bony physic of his, However, even with that appearance, he has been a loyal servant of their family, working and dedicating his life to his role for more than 20 years. A man who saw Oberth grew up from a baby. This man was currently standing behind the door, and with his words of ambush, he caused Oberth to jump in fright.

“Mattis... You scared me to death.” Oberth pats on his chest as he complains.

“Young Master,” before Oberth could completely relax, a phrase of thunderous words came into his ears: “your father is waiting for you in the study room. Please visit him soon.”

Pacing back and forth outside the study room, Oberth prepared himself to enter. When he opened the door, he saw his father, Oupu, sitting down reading a book under the lamp – <The Mysteries of the Wind Element>. Having taken notice that his son had finally arrived, Oupu jolted down some notes and placed the book down; shifting all his attention to Oberth.

“Dad...” Oberth greeted with hesitation in his voice.

“What have you been doing these past few days? I told you to get Mr. Booth back here and yet? How long is it going to take? Useless.” Oupu indifferently spat out.

“Dad... I-I don’t know what Hammer had done to Master Booth. I went to ask him just today but... he was not willing to come back at all. He even drove me away...” Oberth stuttered at first but gradually spit out all the grievances he had felt these past few day; twisting some truths. “Dad, for Master Booth to accept a trash like Hammer as his student, what can I do?”

“You are calling him trash when you are inferior to a bastard Magician like him?” Oupu coldly shouted.

A Magician’s ability has linkage to their bloodline. Since Oberth is Oupu’s son, he has a higher aptitude for magic compared to other Magicians. The importance of bloodline could be said to be so important that generations of magicians could be bred if they were bored from pureblooded Magicians. Opposite to their expectations was someone like Hammer, who was adopted from

the streets. Since his origins were shady, with his only known parent being George, who had no blood relations to the boy, his ability could be considered abnormal. For such Magicians, they were most likely illegitimate children of some pureblood with a commoner; in short, bastard children or bastard Magicians.

To lose to such offsprings was considered one of the ultimate form of humiliation to a pure blooded Magician.

Oberth, ashamed of himself, lowered his head, unable to meet his father's gaze.

Oupu, originally enraged, could not help but sigh as he watches his son in grief. In the end, he gave out a helping hand: "Alright. Listen. If you wish to gain Mr. Booth's favor, you could always ask me for help you know?"

Oberth's eyes brightened up as he lifted his head up "Father! I think we can..."

"Yes. Hammer must not be allowed to live. I will make the necessary arrangements." Oupu, after hearing Obeth's plan, coldly nods in agreement. The Intermediate Attack Spell <Gale Baptism> had been learned by the boy for free. This was a fact that made Oupu enraged till now, and he judged that payback was necessary. Likewise, if Hammer was removed from the picture, Booth could finally focus all his attention on Oberth; a simple murder that kills two birds with one stone.

"Oberth smiles radiantly but he realized something and asked:

“Erm... Dad, what about Debbie?”

“Relax!” Oupu sneered. “I will pluck out any sprouts before they turn to weed. I had already come to the same conclusion as you, my son, and bribed someone inside their patrol team before they left. With her current strength from the reports, her funeral is already certain.”

---

Back in the gloomy and dreary Skull Town, Debbie was reorganizing her armor. While she held her precious Gatling by her shoulder, she noticed a presence appear behind her.

“Who are you!?” Snapping around, Debbie quickly draws out the Gatling and pointed it towards the presence, ready to fire at any time.

“Debbie, you don’t have to be anxious.” A feminine voice spoke out. It came from someone familiar, another female member of the patrol team: the Level 4 Swordsman, Antano. Appearing from the shadows, she greeted Debbie with a smile: “I’m sorry that I startled you but I mean no harm. I just came here to specifically see you -”

# Chapter 99 – Spectacle of the Gatling!

---

The patrol team had five female members: Debbie, Alfea, Antano and two more. Antano was a Level 4 Swordsman at only 24-year-old. She stood out as she wore a red suit of armor and typically holds a long sword in her left hand while a diamond shield in the right.

She was quite familiar with Debbie as they held conversations before. Likewise, when she came out from the corner of the shadow, she smiled to Debbie and said: “I’m sorry that I startled you but I mean no harm. I just came here to specifically see you. It seems that you are still safe”

“You think of my safety?” Debbie stared back. Although she was airheaded at times, she was by no means stupid. With the Gatling now in her hand, tightly clenched, she looked towards Antano and asked: “why are you so good to me?”

“I have a sister who is as old as you. She would clamor all day to be a City lord’s guard, but she did not have the talent to do so. You, on the other hand, have considerable skill to join.” Antano said with a smile, approaching Debbie with small steps. Under the cloudy and cold moonlight, her expression seemed exceptionally gentle as she continued: “I can introduce you to her when we get back from our duty.”

The expression on Debbie’s face softened: “Alright.”

Suddenly, a miserable and sharp voice suddenly rang out which

came from the church.

“Something’s wrong!” The Antano body suddenly tightened as she turned around, beckoned to Debbie, and rapidly ran towards the church

Debbie hurriedly responded, carrying her greatsword with her.

“What happened?” Debbie rushed into the church and looked around, questioning Alfea.

“A’tod woke up.” Alfea answered, ” in a panic...”

At the corner of the church, A’tod continued to scream. He pounded on the floor with a fierce expression: “Leave... Leave this place... Hurry up and leave this place!!”

Several City Lord’s Guard encircled him and held him down. Bedwick, on the other hand, stood on one side and attempted to calm him down. However, A’tod was in no condition to listen to his words. In his extremely panic-stricken state, he continued to struggle while screaming, to the point where even the several strong guards around find it hard to hold him down.

“How did this happen?” Debbie was surprised.

“He should have finally managed to escape from Skull Town with great difficulty, only to wake up and brought back to us again. If you were him, how would you respond?” Ye Chui replied and stood

by him Debbie, Alfea, Alan, and Antano, look at Ye Chui and nodded in agreement in front of the church entrance, but suddenly came to realize that something wasn't right. "wait... He... was probably warning us?"

"A warning?" Debbie and Alfea asked simultaneously.

All of a sudden, A'tod stopped roaring; his whole body twitched without ceasing as his throat seems to choke. His complexion took a turn for the worst, enough so for Bedwick's complexion to change and roared: "get away from him!"

Soon as it was said, something black started to crawl out of A'tod's mouth. One by one, a swarm of jet black wasp started to expel out of his body. As soon as they took flight, a burst of buzzing rung out. Everyone around him at that time was too slow except for Balmain, who was quick enough to perform a beautiful backward somersault and take cover somewhere else. Unfortunately, the other three were stung by that black winged insect and immediately suffered torture, as they screamed in agony and fell down to never stand again.

"These are Black Wasps!" Bedwick looked in great surprise, "Everyone! Get away from the church! Make sure you avoid getting stung at all cost!"

Short sword rapped rapidly in Bedwick hand during the speeches, the ground was littered with the little Black Wasp, but the horde of Black Wasps were still densely swarming out from A'tod's mouth. This situation was different from the blood bats, Bedwick short sword was simply impossible to guard against so

many of them.

All the City Lord's Guards around took note of Bedwick's order and rushed out of the church. During this period of time, one unlucky soul was taken down by the Black Wasps, as his pitiful scream was acting as confirmation though Bedwick was the last one to leave the church.

Ye Chui quickly ran back to close the gate but a swarm of the Black Wasps was starting to surround him.

“Tony!” Alfea screamed in great panic

However, her fears were superfluous as the sound of static began to sound out from Ye Chui's armor suit, and a layer of bright blue light coated him. The group of Black Wasps that came close got taken down by the electricity, as though phosphate insecticide (Dichlorvos) was spurted, all of them dropped to the ground. Since they were black already, nothing of their appearance had changed except now, they leaked out a burnt stink. This is one of the Iron Swordsman's armor function. The left arm was equipped with<Four times of lightning> array, after the activation, the armor suits whole body would be coated with electricity. By the market standards, any suit of armor that had this capability could be considered as a high-grade armor. However, this was not for sale as it took great pains to make two separate layers: one for the conducting and one for insulating. Initially, Ye Chui already had the ability to coat his armor with electricity but he did not prepare insulation to keep himself safe. However, after the upgrade, he was able to use this devastating attack, with results that left him more than satisfied.



“Ugh!” When he closed the gate of the church, wiped away the burnt Black Wasps corpses on his armor and turned around to see everyone around him staring in surprise. “There is nothing to be surprised about. Quickly block the windows!”

Everyone snapped out of their daze and went into action.

The Black Wasp was an insect type of magical beast, it was so weak that it could not be recognized as a level 1 magic beast. However, in a colony, they were noted to be extremely lethal to the point where anyone would fear them. They were horrendous animals that will hatch their eggs using the corpses of both humans and magical beasts, using the deceased’s magic power to decrease the time it took to hatch the eggs. They were considered to be a terrifying existence, and since insect type magic beasts were rare to find in the Black Forest, no one would have thought that A’tod would have been used as their host. Even after A’tod gave his warning, the team will still too late to react and experienced four fatalities.

However, it was not over yet.

When everyone hurriedly blocked the window of the church, howls from wolves sounded off from all directions. The tied up horses near the church panicked in fright and trembled and for good reason. If they were to look around them, the darkness that shrouded them had an army of red lights.

“Rank 3 Magic Beast, Wind Wolf!” Damon yelled, ” And a pack

with so many!”

The army of red eyes slowly approached them, letting out growls that seemed to come from hell. With this number, there were at least over a hundred of them. A Level 3 Wind Wolf is very tricky to deal with already but a hundred? These magic beasts had a considerable level of intelligence but when they act together, they become deadlier. With the high comprehension level of every wolf, they can move into a formation and gradually move forward as a group. Meanwhile, the patrol team was trapped. The church which was their only form of terrain defense had been taken over by the Black Wasps, and now they were out in the open, an easy target to be hunted down.

The strongest in the team, Bedwick, had a gloomy expression stuck on his face as he ordered: “Stick together and do not push out!”

“No!” Ye Chui suddenly opened his mouth, and quickly arrived at Debbie’s side, “Debbie can handle this.”

When others heard Ye Chui’s words, in this tense time, they displayed a bit of ridicule. They thought to themselves: [Beckwick, the strongest among them, had already considered the situation to be close to hopeless. So, what can this little girl do?] Allen shouted in low voice: “Iron Swordsman, I think the situation has made you a little confused. During these times, we should run away. What can a little girl like her do?”

Just when he had finished his remark, a Wind Wolf rushed ahead, it had the same strength as an ordinary wolf but was much

faster. Its red eye was filled with coldness. which froze the hearts of its prey. From a mere ten meter away, it leaped forward and almost instantly arrived in front of the patrol team.

Everyone hurriedly picked up their weapons, preparing to fight head-on, but it was too late.

“Thump thump thump.....”

Debbie held the Gatling in her hand fired her first shot, and the next caused red fire to break out from the barrel. Due to the darkness of the night, the red fire was especially bright as a rain of gunshots fired out. The Wind Wolf that charged forward was bombarded by the bullets and flew back; the blood and flesh splashed under the moonlight in all directions and fell down meters away.

“Cool!” Debbie held up the Gatling as she smiled with incomprehensible excitement.